















EXTRACTS

FROM THE

LETTERS AND JOURNAL

OF

DANIEL WHEELER,

WHILE ENGAGED IN A RELIGIOUS VISIT

TO THE INHABITANTS OF SOME OF THE

ISLANDS OF THE PACIFIC OCEAN,

VAN DIEMEN'S LAND, NEW SOUTH WALES,  
AND NEW ZEALAND,

ACCOMPANIED BY HIS SON,

CHARLES WHEELER.



PHILADELPHIA:

PRINTED BY JOSEPH RAKESTRAW, AND FOR SALE AT THE OFFICE OF THE  
FRIEND, AND BY KIMBER & SHARPLESS, NO. 50 NORTH FOURTH STREET;  
AND URIAH HUNT, NO. 101 MARKET STREET.

1840.

DEL 21  
W 50

## PREFACE

### TO THE AMERICAN EDITION.

---

THE "Extracts from the Journal of Daniel Wheeler," were originally published under the direction of the Meeting for Sufferings in London, in four parts, at different intervals of time, as they came to hand. In re-printing them here, it has been thought that a division into chapters, for the greater facility of reference, would be convenient to the reader. Two documents, not included in the London edition, furnished by Daniel Wheeler for that purpose, have been added, and some errors of the press, which escaped notice in the English edition, have been corrected.

It is hoped that the example of dedication to the service of his Divine Master, exhibited in the following pages, as well as the remarkable manner in which way was providentially made for the accomplishment of his religious duties, and the support and preservation mercifully granted during his long and exposing journey by sea and land, may prove an incentive to others to dedicate their time and talents to the Lord's work, as he may be pleased to engage and lead them therein; that thus the cause and kingdom of our dear Redeemer may be spread in the earth.

The situation of the injured natives of the South Sea Islands, described in the Extracts, and the evils they suffer from the contaminating examples and wicked conduct of those calling themselves Christians, who visit their shores, are calculated to affect every feeling heart with sensations of compassion, of sorrow and of shame, and are, indeed, a disgrace to the Christian name. May the perusal of the following pages awaken attention to this deeply painful subject, especially among persons concerned in whaling or trading voyages in those seas, and induce the sacrifice of every prospect of pecuniary gain, which contributes to produce such deplorable and demoralizing effects.

Not only captains and other officers of vessels touching at the Islands, are implicated in the guilt of these abominable practices, but the owners of the ships, and those who participate in the profits of the voyages, have their share in the awful responsibility. A more vigilant watch over the crews, and greater care to select religious and moral.



men for every department, and the *total prohibition* of ardent spirits, either as *cargo or stores*, would contribute to a reformation—it being sorrowfully the case, that some styled *temperance ships*, in which the crews are not permitted to partake of the baneful poison, carry it out as an article of trade, to sell to the poor natives.

Can we wonder if the attempts to spread the knowledge of the Christian religion among the natives of those islands prove unsuccessful, while they behold such inconsistent examples in the conduct of professing Christians? Should one of the Islanders acquire a knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, and compare with the benign precepts of our blessed Lord, which are there recorded, the actions of those who profess to make the Sacred Writings the rule of their conduct, would he not justly conclude that the white people themselves had need to be converted, before they attempted to convert others. And would he not be in danger of thinking, that if the Christian precepts and doctrines had done so little toward restraining the evil passions and regulating the demeanour of those who had so long made a profession of them, he had little to hope from a change in his religion? Sad indeed is it to think that the precious and holy doctrines of the Saviour of mankind should thus be scandalized by those who unworthily take upon them the sacred name of Christ. Awful is the responsibility of such; for, instead of showing forth a good conversation with meekness of wisdom, and thus letting their lights shine before men, that others seeing their good works may be induced to come and take the yoke of Christ upon them and submit to his cross, and thus glorify our Father who is in heaven, “the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles,” through their wicked conduct—they neither enter themselves, nor suffer those who would, to enter the kingdom of heaven. May this subject obtain the serious consideration of all who are concerned in it, or who are interested for the spread of the Redeemer’s kingdom; that in his wisdom and by his might, a stop may be put to these crying sins, and the blessed day be hastened, when the knowledge of the glory of the Lord shall cover the earth as the waters cover the sea, and from every heart and in every clime, incense and a pure offering be offered unto the Lord in righteousness.

*Philadelphia, Third month, 1840.*

# CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
Introductory remarks—sails from the Thames—detention at the Isle of Wight—change of Captain—farewell Letter—final departure—passage to Rio de Janeiro—a suspicious sail—arrival at Rio de Janeiro—detention at Quarantine—landing—religious engagements—Slavery,	9

## CHAPTER II.

Sail from Brazil—determine to proceed by the Cape of Good Hope—heavy sea—escape from shipwreck—imminent danger—remarkable preservation—continuance of stormy weather—lightening the vessel—hurricane—lying to—tyfoons—hurricane—tremendous storms—land in sight,	26
--	----

## CHAPTER III.

Van Diemen's Land—blown off—enter Storm Bay—anchor off Hobart Town—meeting with James Backhouse and George W. Walker—the "Henry Freeling"—illness—sail from Hobart Town—Botany Bay—arrival at Sidney—Aborigines—visit from a missionary—interview with the governor—conclude to stop at Norfolk Island—an aged missionary—public meeting at Sidney—a visit to the governor—the ship's company—religious engagements,	39
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

Sail from Sidney—meetings on ship board—arrive off Norfolk Island—parting with James Backhouse and George Washington Walker—sail for the Society Islands—equinoctial gale—enter the Torrid Zone—Maitea—arrive at Tahiti—first interview with the natives—visit from the king—prohibition of ardent spirits—meeting of the missionaries and natives at at Papaoa,	51
--	----

## CHAPTER V.

Tahiti—visit of chiefs—the young king—meeting for sailors—distribution of tracts, Bibles, &c.—temperance ships—introduction of ardent spirits—visit to the schools—attend the native meeting—visitors on board—John Davies—meeting on board—importance of translating and circulating the Scriptures—Tahitian council—native meeting,	62
---	----

## CHAPTER VI.

Visit to Bunaauia—native meeting—kindness of the principal chief—Point Venus—perilous situation—Tiarei—native meeting—meeting at Point Venus—visit to Taiarapu—Papara—beautiful scenery—school at Teahurpoo—meeting of the natives—letter from the native congregation—favoured opportunity—native meeting at Papara—return to the "Henry Freeling"—letter from the queen of Tahiti,	76
--	----

## CHAPTER VII.

Set out for Tautira—a native feeding—meetings at Tautira—visit to Hitea—a solemn opportunity—public meeting—return to the "Henry Freeling"—meeting for the white residents—obstructions to the progress of religion—visit to the queen—meeting for the white residents on board the "Henry Freeling"—letters from home—distribution of books—meeting on board the "Charles Carroll,"	91
--	----

## CHAPTER VIII.

	PAGE
An old acquaintance—visit from missionaries—Baron de Thierry—second meeting on board the "Charles Carroll"—a sick stranger—meeting in the chapel—sail for Eimeo—letters from home—fall of a mast—arrive at Eimeo—native school—native meeting—demoralizing influence of foreigners—iniquitous traffic in spirits,	108

## CHAPTER IX.

Meeting with the native children at Papetoai—visit to Afareaitu—meetings there and at Matea—a Marai—return to the "Henry Freeling"—meeting on board—native meeting—the unity of the brethren—a warning against intemperance—meeting with the mission families—sail for Huahine—prohibition of spirits there—native meeting—an invitation from the pilot—social meeting of the authorities—native meeting—distribution of tracts—sail for Raiatea,	120
---	-----

## CHAPTER X.

Raiatea—arrival at Uturoa—native meeting—a place of human sacrifice—meeting at Tahaa—a native feeding—Bolabola—desolating effects of intemperance—native meeting—meeting with the rebel chief and his idolatrous party—native meeting—wretchedness of the inhabitants—distribution of clothing—sail for the Sandwich Islands—contrary winds—Flint's Island—cross the equator—favourable change—Hawaii in sight—Oahu,	137
--	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

Sandwich Islands—Oahu—anchor in the harbour of Honolulu—native meeting—letter from the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands—visit from the king—meeting at the mariner's chapel—distribution of tracts, &c.—native meeting—meeting at the chapel—visit of the governor of Hawaii—half-caste girls' school—meeting at the chapel—native marriages—native meeting—meeting at the chapel—native girls' school,	158
--	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

Interview with the queen—public meeting—publications of the mission press—half-caste boys' school—address to the rulers of the Sandwich Islands—visit from the mission families—meeting at the chapel—an infidel ship's company—appointed meeting—departure from Honolulu—Hawaii—anchor in Kalakakua bay—native visitors—public meeting—interesting opportunity with the mission family—proceed to Kailua—relics of idolatry—native meetings—visit of the king—leave for Waimea mission station,	178
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Waimea—native meeting—sail for Koala—cascades—letter of introduction—volcano—Byron's Bay—a Tabu—native meetings—cascade of the rainbow—sail with the mission families for Maui—marriage on board—parting interview between the natives and missionaries—Island of Maui—anchor at Lahaina—proceed to Wairuku—school—native meeting—meetings at Lahaina—high school at Lahaina Luna—sail for Oahu—landing of the missionaries,	204
--	-----



## CONTENTS.

vii

### CHAPTER XIV.

PAGE

Oahu—death of Captain Russel—annual meeting of the missionaries—meeting at Eva—meeting with the members of the mission—addressed by the senior missionary—sail for Tauai—native meeting at Koala—sail for Hanareï mission station—native meeting—Waimea—purchasing supplies—oppression of the natives—final departure from the Sandwich Islands—letter from the missionaries—address to the missionaries, 219

### CHAPTER XV.

Re-cross the Equator—Hervey Islands—land upon the Island of Roratogna—friendly reception—school—native meetings—the three mission stations—kindness of the natives—increase of population—remarks on leaving the Hervey Islands—letter from a native scholar—sail for the Friendly Isles, 235

### CHAPTER XVI.

Friendly Islands—Island of Vavau—Wesleyan missionaries—appearance of the natives—native meetings at Neiafu, Feletoa, and Haalaufuli—appointed meeting for seamen—visit to the island of Otea—native meeting—lofty cavern—King George—meeting at Hihifo—earthquake—meetings at Matika—at Neiafu—embarkation of the mission families—sail for Lifuka, 251

### CHAPTER XVII.

Island of Lifuka—native meeting—distribution of Bibles, &c.—visit of the king—meeting with the missionaries—native meeting—sail for Tongataboo—anchor off the settlement at Nukualofa—letter from the Wesleyan missionaries—distribution of clothing and medicines—a Kava party—visit to the heathen settlement at Mua—restraining influence of the missionaries—native meeting at Nukualofa—letter to the missionaries at the Friendly Islands, 269

### CHAPTER XVIII.

Tongataboo—condition of the heathen natives—meeting with the foreigners—visit to a heathen chief—parting interviews with the natives and missionaries—sail from the Friendly Islands—New Zealand—anchor in the Bay of Islands—natives on board—visit the mission family—native meeting at Koua-Koua—an aged missionary—desolating effects of intercourse with the shipping, 289

### CHAPTER XIX.

New Zealand—visit to the mission station at Waimate—wars among the natives—a fatiguing journey—meeting with the mission families—native meeting—meeting with the children—return to the “Henry Freeling”—distribution of tracts—native meetings at Korarareka—meeting with the missionaries at Paihia—cannibals—address to the missionaries—sail from the Bay of Islands—remarks on the character of the New Zealanders—Lord Howe’s Island—anchor off Sidney—religious engagements there—return to England, 305





## EXTRACTS

### FROM THE LETTERS, JOURNAL, &c.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

Introductory remarks—sails from the Thames—detention at the Isle of Wight—change of Captain—farewell Letter—final departure—passage to Rio de Janeiro—a suspicious sail—arrival at Rio de Janeiro—detention at Quarantine—landing—religious engagements—Slavery.

OUR dear friend, Daniel Wheeler, of Shoosharry, near Petersburg, in Russia, having for a considerable time past felt his mind strongly attracted, in the love of the Gospel, towards the inhabitants of some of the islands in the Pacific Ocean, of New South Wales, and Van Diemen's Land; and believing the time had arrived that he must surrender himself to the service, spread his concern before Balby monthly-meeting, in Yorkshire, of which he is a member, the quarterly-meeting of York, and the morning-meeting of ministers and elders in London; in all which meetings much unity and sympathy were felt and expressed with our dear friend, as appears by the certificates granted to him by the said meetings, bearing date respectively the 20th of ninth month, the 26th of ninth month, and the 14th of eleventh month, 1832.

The Committee of the Meeting for Sufferings appointed to forward the object, devoted much time and attention to the subject, frequently met, consulted several persons likely to give accurate information as to the best mode of conveyance, and after very mature deliberation, came at length to the conclusion, as recommended by those whose local knowledge enabled them to form a correct judgment, to purchase a small vessel for the purpose, not only as the most suitable, but probably, in the end, the least expensive; particularly as the prospect of Daniel Wheeler was, to proceed from island to island.

About this time an opportunity occurred of purchasing, on reasonable terms, the "Henry Freeling," lately a Post-Office packet, of 101 tons register. A number of Friends generously came forward, not only to pay for the vessel, but at a considerable expense, to prepare her for the voyage. This offer the Committee gratefully accepted.

Charles Wheeler, son of Daniel Wheeler, believing it his duty to offer himself as a companion to his father, provided the Committee should approve thereof, wrote a letter to that effect, dated Shoosharry Farm, 2nd of sixth month, 1833, in which he says, "Though by no means unconscious of my incapacity to act in a

concern of such importance, and however inexpedient in the eye of mere reason such a step may be in a temporal point of view, I cannot omit offering my assistance in any way which shall be deemed best to promote the object, allowing that it shall be ultimately deemed proper. Nature, as might be expected, shrinks from a step which involves such important consequences, and which in itself, simply considered, is by no means such as I should have chosen; yet my only wish in the case is, I trust, to act faithfully the part designed for me by that gracious Being who has an undoubted right to dispose of His creatures according to the good pleasure of His will; and keeping my obligation to do so in view, I do not see how I can do other than make the offer which this is intended to convey."

The Committee, after due deliberation thereon, believed it right to accept him in that capacity, to which the Meeting for Sufferings agreed, and Balby monthly-meeting signified its concurrence therein by granting him its certificate.

The necessary arrangements having been completed, they sailed from the River Thames on the 13th of eleventh month, 1833, and were proceeding down the English Channel, when on the 21st they were overtaken by a heavy storm, which induced them to seek for shelter near the Isle of Wight. On the evening of that day Daniel Wheeler writes thus to a friend.

*"Mother-bank, 21st of eleventh mo., 1833, 6 o'clock, A. M.*

"Some ships that sailed with us have already reached the Mother-bank, but it is thought that many will have to return to the Downs, as the weather is now becoming very stormy, and the wind directly opposed to our course down the Channel. It is indeed a great favour to be enabled to find a place of safety, and demands our humble gratitude and thankfulness to Him who presides over every storm, whether of outwardly contending elements, or spiritual conflicts; and though the present dispensation may seem to impede our progress towards Cape Horn, yet it is my belief, and I am comforted in it, that all will be well at last, because ordered by Him, in whose will I desire to rest, and in whose tender mercy I trust."

On the 31st of twelfth month, he writes, "In two days more we shall have been six weeks hereabouts, and I am sometimes ready to think our dear friends will be weary of hearing again and again that we are still buffeted by adverse gales at the Mother-bank; but the will of the Lord must be done; and I endeavour to wait patiently to see what He will be pleased to do for His great name's sake; for He knows my downsitting and my uprising, and understandeth my thoughts afar off; and that the sole cause of my being here, is no other, than that I may be found coming up in the path of obedience to what I believe to be required of me; and there-



fore the consciousness of not being here in my own creaturely will and activity, reconciles me to all the turnings and overturnings of His holy hand; and that He will continue to bear me up, is my humble prayer, until He shall be pleased to say, 'It is enough.'"

During the detention of the vessel, it appeared that advantage would arise from a change being made in the person who had the charge of her; and whilst the Committee were looking out for a more suitable one to supply his place, Daniel Wheeler thus writes, under date of 15th of second month, 1834.

"In treating with a person to take the command of our vessel, there are many stipulations which ought to be made and insisted upon, besides nautical skill and other qualifications. In the first place, it should be understood by the person in treaty for the station, that we are a *temperance vessel*;—secondly, that the crew are regularly assembled *in the cabin* twice on every first-day, for devotional purposes, and also that the Scriptures are read every morning and evening in the cabin on other days, when both the captain and mate are expected to (and now do) attend; thirdly, that as much as practicable, all unnecessary work is dispensed with, as regards the sailors, on the first-day of the week, to afford them a portion of time for themselves: these things ought, I think, to be thoroughly understood in the outset, so that nothing unpleasant may afterwards occur, when perhaps it would be too late to make them obligatory and bring about their establishment. My motive for mentioning these particulars, is not to make the way more difficult for my dear friends, but in order to save both time and trouble, and perhaps prevent much disappointment and uneasiness in future."

Owing to a succession of contrary winds and boisterous weather, which is very unusual for such a length of time, their vessel, with many others, was detained until the 15th of the third month, 1834, when they set sail. On the 14th, Daniel Wheeler writes—"It is more than three months since I had my foot on the shore; but if I had not persisted in remaining on board, I should not have been in possession of the true character of our seamen, nor of every minutia of the state and condition of our vessel. We have put her in the best trim which we are capable of doing, and must rely on One who is almighty to help, and if He is but with us, we shall have nothing to fear." "Good indeed," he adds, "has it been for me to be here, and true it is also, that sufferings and tribulations have only been permitted in boundless mercy to draw me nearer and nearer to the bosom of my Lord, the only, but never-failing source of consolation, in every time of trial and distress; however dark the hour of conflict, the entrance of His word is light and life." He further observes, that "the *present* great object of his life, the service before him, revives at seasons with increasing and encouraging brightness to his view."

The same day, (being that previous to their sailing,) Daniel Wheeler addressed a farewell letter to the Committee, as follows:

*“ Henry Freeling, Mother-bank, 14th of third mo., 1834.*

“ Upon reference I find that it is now considerably more than three months since I began a letter for the information of my dear friends, when at that time anticipating that ere long we should be permitted to direct our course across the trackless ocean to the Southern hemisphere; but I had not completed more than half a sheet of paper, when the progress of my pen was arrested, by circumstances, which have prevented any further addition being made until this day, when the way now seems to open for resuming the subject—our departure being at hand.

“ Among the many multiplied mercies and blessings which unceasingly flow from the bounteous and compassionate hand of Him, who ‘ crowneth the year with his goodness,’ and ‘ satisfieth the desire of every living thing,’ I feel bound to acknowledge with humble thankfulness and admiration, our long detention on these shores. Notwithstanding there have been many gloomy days, and days of darkness, ‘ as the morning spread upon the mountains,’ and many long and dreary winter nights to pass through, when the raging storm has again and again whitened with foam the surface of the agitated deep around us; and not only the strife of elements to witness without, but a conflicting and spiritual strife within, ‘ tossed with tempest and not comforted;’ yet how unspeakably great the faithfulness of our good and gracious Lord God! ‘ His compassions fail not,’ but have been, and still continue to be, ‘ new every morning,’ as the returning day; for in moments of greatest conflict and trial there has been something permitted, like the ‘ bow in the cloud,’ for the poor mind to look at, to animate, and cheer, and strengthen with hardness to endure and stand firm.

“ But, although moon after moon hath waned, and faith and patience have been beset as on the right hand and on the left, and the afflictions of the Gospel have at times been permitted to abound, yet to the glory and honour, and praise of Him, (whose name ever excellent and adorable, shall be great among the nations, from the rising of the sun to the going down of the same,) the consolations of the Gospel have also abounded, in a degree of the fulness of that heavenly blessing which makes truly rich, and whereunto no sorrow is added: when faith hath been mercifully strengthened, and patience renewed under the tribulations of the day. And notwithstanding an untrodden path has been my portion, yet after all, though weakness and fear are my constant companions by the way, safety and peace have been hitherto found. I would therefore encourage all my beloved friends to keep near to their heavenly Teacher and Leader, who,



if faithfully followed, will not only conduct their steppings to a hair's breadth, but will preserve and keep the mind in calmness and serenity, securely, as in a pavilion, 'from the strife of tongues.'

"In addition to the marvellous loving kindness I have thus endeavoured to portray, many other mercies and blessings have been showered upon our heads, during the apparently long and unaccountable detention of our little bark upon our own coasts; these I have often had to number with grateful sensations, when the light has shone brightly, and manifested clearly to my finite understanding how much we should have missed, if our progress had not thus been arrested. So that with myself, instead of this delay having been productive of regret, or the cause of letting in fear or doubt, to stagger or depress my tribulated mind, I do, my dear friends, hail it with gratitude and thankfulness, as the gracious and compassionate dealing of my Lord and Master, not only as a time of Divine favour and condescension, but as an earnest of his love and mercy for our encouragement, instruction, and future benefit, graciously vouchsafed—a time of preparation for the important work before us, and of weaning, from every dependence and guidance which are not of Him, to strengthen our confidence, and put our whole trust in his power, to help and deliver out of every distress, who not only commands the storm, but at whose rebuke the mountain billows cease to undulate, and lo! 'there is a great calm.'

"Within the last two or three days the prospect of liberation has begun to dawn with clearness; but I trust, that if even a further detention should be meted out to us, either here or in some other port, the same resignation to the Divine will, will be vouchsafed: for although I have for more than two years past, felt anxious to move forward in a work, which has yet to begin when the decay of nature is visible, and the shadows of the evening proclaim, as they lengthen around me, the steady decline of life's setting sun, yet I have been frequently comforted by a renewed evidence that we have not yet been here *one day* too long.

"It will, I feel assured, afford my dear friends much satisfaction to know that the crew of the vessel, notwithstanding the frequent though unavoidable communication with the neighbouring shore for so great a length of time, have given no cause for uneasiness by improper conduct, and have at all times behaved, with scarcely an exception, in an orderly and agreeable manner, and the captain now provided for us seems to be judiciously selected, and the man who, beyond all expectation, is admirably adapted to aid and assist by example and experience in the accomplishment of the important object before us; so that I hope what has passed, and what may yet be in store for us to come, will be found and acknowledged to be among the 'all things that work together for good.' I must not omit adding, that the solemn covering frequently witnessed mercifully



to prevail and preside over us, when sitting together before the Lord, is worthy, with humble gratitude to be commemorated, as the strongest and most indubitable evidence for our encouragement, that at seasons 'He is with us of a truth.'

"As it is now a period of the year when ships seldom sail to those parts to which we are destined, whether we proceed by the Cape of Good Hope, which is most probable, or by Cape Horn, in either case a wintry season awaits us; but my trust is in the Lord, not doubting but that we shall have the privilege of the prayers of the faithful for our preservation; and though conscious of our own weakness and utter unworthiness, and often under a feeling of being less than the least of all my dear brethren and sisters that are alive in the unchangeable Truth, yet I think I can say that these things trouble me not, nor move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus to testify the Gospel of that grace, 'which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men,' teaching all, that so from the uttermost parts of the earth songs of praise may be heard, and the grateful tribute of 'thanks be to God for his unspeakable gift,' may resound to his glory; for it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy; 'it is not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts.'

"And now, whilst my heart is bearing towards the 'Isles afar off,' the same constraining love, which wrought the willingness to leave all for my gracious Lord's sake and His Gospel's, extends its binding influence to all my dear brethren and sisters, of every age and of every class, wherever situated, and however circumstanced; desiring in tender and affectionate solicitude, that they may be found steadfastly following the footsteps of those honourable and worthy predecessors in the same religious profession with ourselves, who have long since rested from their labours, and whose memorial is on high,—who bore the burden and heat of a day of deep suffering, in the faithful discharge of their duty for the support of those principles, which have been transmitted in their original purity and brightness to us. If any should feel sensible of having fallen short in this important work, let me in tenderest love encourage such to be willing to humble themselves under the mighty hand of God, even to the state of little children, and turn inward to the pure, unflattering witness which cannot deceive nor be deceived; to be willing to enter into a diligent and heart-felt search, and patiently and impartially examine how far those indispensable conditions are submitted to on their part, without which none can be followers of the meek and lowly Jesus. Where is that self-denial and the daily cross He first enjoined? Are we denying ourselves those gratifications of time and sense which cherish and keep alive in us the evil propensities of fallen nature, which separate man from his Maker, and like 'the little foxes spoil the tender

vines,' designed in richest mercy to bud, blossom, and bring forth fruit, lastingly to remain to the praise and glory of the great Husbandman? but without faithfulness, there will be no fruitfulness. It is not giving up or forsaking this or that little thing, which to part with is little or no sacrifice or privation, that will suffice; a full surrender of the whole will in all things, must be made to Him, whose sovereign right is to rule and reign in our hearts;—and let none plead for disobedience in these little things on the ground of their being such, for if such they really are, they are the more easily dispensed with, and not worth retaining; and a tenacity in wishing to preserve them, assuredly indicates that they have more place in our affections than perhaps we are aware of: 'He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.'

"And now, my dear brethren and sisters, 'May the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, keep all your hearts and minds, make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever.'

"In the love of the everlasting Gospel, accept this expression of farewell, from your affectionate friend and brother,

"DANIEL WHEELER.

"15th of third mo., at Sea, and clear of  
the Needle Rocks, all well."

Some particulars of the passage of our dear friends to Rio de Janeiro will appear in the following extracts from Daniel Wheeler's letters.

In a letter, dated 2nd of fourth month, 1834, he writes: "After despatching our letters by the pilot on the 15th ult., we made sail into the offing at half-past four P. M., and stretching from under the shelter of the Isle of Wight, soon partook of a strong and favourable breeze; great progress was made during the night; next morning brought an increase of wind along with it. From the state of the weather and the harassed situation of the crew, and other circumstances, although it was the first day of the week, we were compelled to give up the idea of assembling together in the cabin, and to content ourselves with reading the Holy Scriptures twice in the course of the day with the captain and mate. At five o'clock, P. M. we were abreast of the Lizard light-houses on the Cornish coast, from whence our *final departure* was taken: as the night approached, the land was lost sight of, and the wind being strong and fair, we launched rapidly away from the mouth of the British Channel. On *second-day* morning, the 17th, the wind



veered more to the southward, and considerably increasing, soon raised a heavy sea, which occasioned one side of the vessel to be frequently buried under water.

“From the 17th to the 20th there was little variation in the weather. The latter being *fifth-day*, my dear Charles and myself sat down together to wait upon the Lord, our usual meeting-day when at home; but although we were scarcely able to retain our seats from the motion of the ship, yet I humbly trust we were favoured, poor outcasts as we seemed to be, to look towards his temple, to fear Him, and think upon his name. Notwithstanding the weather became more and more tempestuous, yet the fair wind never once forsook us, but on the 22nd the sea ran so high, that it was dangerous for any one to be upon deck, and Captain Keen began to fear that we should be under the necessity of turning the head of the vessel towards the sea and wind; accordingly the storm canvass was prepared in readiness to use when it should become no longer safe to run before a sea, which now followed in mountainous succession, rising to an alarming height, and threatening at times to overwhelm us altogether. In the night of the 22nd there was some abatement of the wind and the sea, though still very heavy, but running true in more unbroken swells we yet ventured to run before it. 23rd. From the boisterous state of the weather, although *first-day* had again revolved, we were prevented from collecting the crew for devotional purposes, and could only read some portions of Scripture as before. By this time our little vessel had been pretty roughly handled and tried, and had given full proof of her capability. The captain acknowledged that she had done wonders, and had greatly surpassed the idea he had formed of her, and the crew expressed their satisfaction to a man; and I saw myself no cause to alter the favourable opinion that I had constantly entertained from the first sight of her. We are all aware of the advantage which would have resulted had she been large enough to have carried a greater supply of fresh water and coals, without being so deeply buried in the water, which continually exposes us to the drench of the sea, even in what may be termed favourable weather, but in rough we are frequently debarred from all exercise upon the deck in fresh air, to avoid the risk of being injured from the wash of the sea. I feel, however, grateful and thankful in my present allotment, and for the accommodation thus rendered by my dear friends, humbly trusting that we shall be sustained through all to declare the mighty acts of the Lord, and to show forth his praise in the presence of a people who have not heard his fame, nor seen his glory, neither conceived the majesty of his kingdom within, of ‘righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost,’ which stands mercifully revealed in the hearts of those, who are concerned above all things to seek *first* this ‘heavenly kingdom,’ and to ‘believe therein, to the saving of the soul.’

“On the 24th there was an evident change in the temperature of the atmosphere; the sun shone brightly, and its warmth gladdened our hearts, as we sat on a small space near the stern of the vessel, which had been preserved pretty free from the spray of the sea; the wind, although still favourable, had lessened; the white-topped billows had considerably diminished, and our deck was this day more free from water rushing from side to side, than had been the case for more than a week past; some floating turtle were seen near the ship, and things altogether around us began to wear a brightening aspect; but what tended most to enliven and make all things smile, was the marvellous condescension of my dear Lord and Master, who, in the greatness of his love, was graciously pleased to open my spiritual understanding, and permit me to behold, to a certain extent, the nature of the service upon which I should have to enter in some places, where my lot may be cast.

“Greatly do I desire for myself, and all my dear friends, that we may be brought more and more into such a state as to be fit and able to bear further portions of the many things which our great and heavenly Teacher, in his wondrous and never-erring counsel, has to say to such as fear, and love, and follow Him in the great work of regeneration: ‘I have many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now;’ and if we were but sufficiently willing to hearken to his voice, he would still, I am persuaded, not only have many things to say unto us as individuals, but unto the church also, by that ‘Holy Spirit which searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.’ Then may all our hearts be so cleansed and purified through the efficacy of his grace, as to be prepared to receive the promised and ever abiding Comforter, who ‘will take of the things of Christ, and show them unto us,’ yea, ‘He will show us things to come.’”

Under date of 7th of fourth month, the following remark occurs: “The effect of being transported in about three weeks from the cold winds, which blew at the Mother-bank, to the burning heat of the sun near the equator, can only be estimated by those who have witnessed such a change in a vessel as small as the ‘Henry Freeling:’ the night-air seems to come off the heated deserts of Africa charged with dampness most unwholesome.”

Under date of 21st of fourth month, he observes, “After having been nearly twelve whole days and nights within five degrees of the equator, we were favoured to get to the southward of it at an early hour this morning.”

The following quotation from the Journal, under date of 5th of fifth month, will explain the cause of his visiting Rio de Janerio. “Although hitherto favoured with a passage, such as no person on board had ever before witnessed for favourable winds and weather, yet it now became considerably lengthened out from the unusual prevalence of calms and light airs of wind, not only during our being in the neighbourhood of the equinoctial line, but at a later



period. This circumstance seemed to point out at once the necessity of our abandoning the intention of aiming at the Cape of Good Hope for a supply of water, &c., on account of the advanced state of the winter season, and the probability of not being able to reach that place before those heavy gales set in, that render its approach very difficult: it was also remembered, that if we once made the attempt, and therein failed, there was then no alternative left to us, but that we must continue to hover about until we did accomplish that object, let the weather be ever so tempestuous, as we must undoubtedly perish at sea for want of water before we could possibly reach Van Diemen's Land, a distance from the Cape of Good Hope of more than 6200 miles, and from our present situation to the Cape full 3500 miles. After deliberately weighing these considerations, it seemed expedient (however reluctant to our wishes to visit a place where superstition and slavery appear with open face) to bear down towards the South American continent for Rio de Janeiro, and thence procure the needful supplies, if permitted to reach it in safety."

Fifth month 10th. "This afternoon at sun-set a brig was seen upon our lee quarter, steering the same course as ourselves, perhaps three or four miles distant from us; she was soon covered up by the night, and no more thought of. Being upon the deck, (an usual practice with me the fore-part of the night,) between nine and ten o'clock, the carpenter suddenly exclaimed, 'Why here's the brig!' Upon looking, I saw the vessel at a considerable distance from us, but soon perceived by the stars, that she was approaching with uncommon rapidity in a most suspicious direction, as if intending to cross our fore-foot, and cut us off. We watched her very narrowly, expecting every minute she would open a fire upon us. She continued to haul directly across our head at a very short distance from us, but we steadily kept our course, without the slightest variation, or manifesting any symptoms of hurry or fear, or noticing her in any way. I felt our situation to be at the moment very critical, knowing that these latitudes, and particularly this neighbourhood, are exceedingly infested with piratical vessels, which find shelter in the Brazilian harbours as traders, where they fit out occasionally for Africa with merchandize, and return with whole cargoes of oppressed Africans for sale, landing them on private parts of the Brazil coast; at other times they act as pirates, when it suits their convenience, or are in want of stores. This was indeed a trial of faith of no common kind; but my mind was stayed upon the Lord, feeling a good degree of resignation to his Holy will, whatever might be permitted to befall us. After watching the vessel with anxiety for some time, she passed away, without making the least apparent stop. On considering the matter, we concluded, that when she saw us at sun-set, we were taken for a Dutch galiot, that might fall an easy prey to her; but when she came up to us in the dark, near enough to examine with



telescopes the real shape of our vessel, we were found of such a suspicious build of a non-descript kind, not seen before in these seas, as might lead to the supposition that we were intended as a decoy, and though very tame looking without, yet perhaps fiery hot within, if meddled with. From the position she took, there is no doubt she expected to throw us into confusion by firing into us, and then, in the midst of it, to have boarded us on the weather side. There was not the least glimmer of light to be seen on board of her, whilst the 'Henry Freeling' was well lighted up in both cabins and the binnacle, and the reflection from our sky-lights was well calculated to puzzle and intimidate the crew, as this circumstance would be sufficient at once to show that we were not a common merchant vessel. The captain, cook, steward, Charles and myself, were all additional persons upon the deck, besides the regular watch, which would give an idea of strength to them, unusual in so small a vessel as the 'Henry Freeling.' Every thing was conducted with great quietness, not the least hint given to any one on board to prepare for an attack: the watch below was not even informed of what seemed to await us upon the deck. The Lord only was our deliverer, for she was restrained from laying a hand upon our little bark; and to Him alone our preservation is with gratitude and thankfulness ascribed. The crews of these pirates consist in general of desperadoes of all nations, who frequently commit the most dreadful atrocities on board the ships they seize, in putting to death all those who oppose their boarding them; they are mostly crowded with men amply sufficient in number to take and destroy some of our large armed traders. This vessel was doubtless a selected one for the work: we thought she actually sailed twice as fast as the 'Henry Freeling,' which is far from being a slow vessel. We saw no more of her, but after midnight I partook of some refreshing sleep."

It may be here observed, that Daniel Wheeler mentions in a letter from Rio, dated the 27th of fifth month, that during their stay there, an American captain, who had seen them at a distance at sea, going on board, Daniel Wheeler asked him what he thought of the "Henry Freeling," as to her appearance when he saw her and his own vessel becalmed; [near the equator]: his answer was, that he did not like the look of her, and was glad when he could get farther away from her. Daniel Wheeler adds, "There is little doubt but we were taken for a pirate by all that saw us, which perhaps might be of advantage, except that it deprived us entirely of sending letters by any homeward-bound ships, as none would have liked to come near, to ascertain what we really were."

Fifth month 11th. *First-day.* "The weather being beautifully fine, the crew were collected upon deck twice in the course of the day, for devotional purposes, &c. 12th. Fine weather, with a fair wind all the day, and a prodigious swell of the sea from the south-east. The swell was so immensely large, that we concluded

that the summit of one wave was at least half a mile distant from that of another.

“A little before five o’clock, P. M. land was proclaimed by the man at the mast-head; shortly after we were able to behold from the deck the lofty cliff of Cape Frio on the coast of Brazil, about sixty miles east of Rio de Janerio, just in the position, and about the distance it was calculated to be, from the true time of our chronometers, the lunar observations, and the dead reckoning, all combining to prove the accurate navigation of the vessel, and nautical skill we possess on board of her. Although we seem to be destitute of all interest upon this coast, beyond that of the welfare of mankind the world over, yet, after being fifty-eight days from England, during fifty-seven of which, nothing was to be seen but water and sky; without having spoken another vessel, or even *seen* more than six, the sight of Cape Frio was cheering and animating, and raised in my heart a tribute of thanksgiving and praise to our never-failing Helper, who hath in mercy sustained us in perfect safety, across such a prodigious expanse of mighty waters.”

The next day they entered the Rio de Janerio, as appears by the following extract.

Fifth month 13th. “The wind continuing favourable, although not very brisk, the whole of the night, considerable progress was made to the westward; but when the day broke it was discovered that a strong current had swept us farther off the land several miles than was the case the preceding evening. Every possible exertion was made throughout the day, and the different headlands and rocky islands upon the coast were so far recognized as to enable us to steer with confidence towards the mouth of the river, which we entered about three o’clock, P. M. We had intended to run up the harbour till nearly opposite the town before anchoring; but soon after passing the fort of Santa Cruz, from which several questions were asked, we were compelled immediately to anchor, by an order from the guard-vessel. In a short time after this a bill of health was demanded, and a certificate, signed by the Brazilian Consul in London, but as neither of these could be produced, the vessel was at once declared under quarantine, and as it was in vain to remonstrate, quiet submission was all that was left in our power, which was manifested by our immediately hoisting a yellow flag. Although somewhat prepared for this event, I was a little disappointed, having anticipated that we should be once more enabled to stretch our limbs upon the shore, an exercise from which we had long been debarred. For my own part, I had not landed or been absent from the vessel for upwards of six months, except the short interval of enjoyment in the company of our dear friends of the Committee from the Meeting for Sufferings at the town of Ryde, in the Isle of Wight; but I trust, whether we are permitted to land or not on these shores, that the same Almighty Arm of strength will continue to uphold



us, which has been hitherto so marvellously stretched out for our support. For although we have been fifty-nine days from the Mother-bank, out of that time twenty-one have been expended in calms and light breezes, fifteen of which occurred, while near the equinoctial line, without intermission. But the most remarkable thing is, that we have never made *one tack*, from the time of leaving England to our anchoring here this day, notwithstanding we have passed over more than 50 degrees of north latitude, and 23 degrees of south, at sixty miles to a degree, with upwards of 43 degrees west longitude. Would it then be accounted presumption in any one to hope that He, under whose constraining influence, in love unutterable, this voyage was prompted, will be graciously pleased to prosper it, from the beginning to the end, and cause it ultimately to tend to the advancement of the Redeemer's kingdom, in the hearts of some of the benighted sons and daughters of the human family, although such blessed effects may never be permitted to come to our knowledge or to gladden our hearts." After performing a quarantine of five days, Daniel Wheeler thus writes under date of 24th of fifth month: "To day several hours have been spent on shore by Charles and myself, for the purpose of expediting the shipment of the needful supplies, in the course of which we had much satisfaction in unexpectedly becoming acquainted with two serious persons, both natives of Scotland, at the house of James Thornton, a relation of our kind friend William Tindall, whose family is one of the solitary few in this place who are desiring to do the thing that is right.

"Although we were amply provided with introductory letters, &c., to all the ports of importance throughout the whole voyage, viz. the Cape of Good Hope, the Derwent or Hobart Town, New South Wales, Lima, Valparaiso, Coquimbo, and others, besides letters from the London Missionary Society's Secretary, William Ellis, to that Society's correspondents, upon many islands of the Pacific Ocean, where Missionaries are established; yet at last we were in some measure compelled to enter a port for which, with all our contrivance, we do not possess a single document, and are even unfurnished with a bill of health. After considering the subject, I told my son Charles that I thought our coming here would not be without answering some good end, though at the time there might be nothing in view, nor had any thing occurred to give rise to such a supposition; but on our meeting with the two serious persons above mentioned, an opening for some service presented to my mind, and from the conversation which took place while we were together, it seemed pretty clear to me that we should see each other again. Before we parted, I was invited to attend a meeting, which is held by the well-disposed English of this town every *first-day* evening at seven o'clock, which by them is termed a prayer-meeting. I told them, after acknowledging their kindness, that I could not give an answer at the mo-

ment, that I must wait to see what to-morrow would bring forth, and that if the way opened for me to accept the invitation, I would take care to be in time. Although it was very evident to me that it was no light thing for a member of our religious Society to attend such a meeting, and faithfully support the different peculiar testimonies given us as a people to bear, and which to some might appear like opposition to, or slighting the forms and ceremonies which they have been trained, perhaps from early youth, to the daily practice of, yet it did not seem a time for me to shrink or hold back on that account: leaving the matter altogether unfixed, we returned to our vessel for the night.

Fifth month 25th. "Both forenoon and afternoon the crew were assembled in the usual manner. At both seasons a quiet feeling seemed to prevail. In the course of the day, the prospect of attending the meeting on shore, being as a burden upon my shoulders, increasing as the day wore away, and believing that I should not be clear without giving up to it, accompanied by Charles, I set forward, and reaching the shore just as it became dark, repaired immediately to the house of James Thornton, where the meeting was to be held; and as soon as some of the principal persons arrived, I thought there would be a propriety in speaking to them privately before the meeting commenced. Taking such aside, I told them, that although we might have the same great and important object in view, yet it was probable that we might not all see exactly alike, and therefore I should prefer their going on with their meeting as usual; and if, after it was over, we might be allowed to come in and sit down amongst them, it would perhaps be the most agreeable on both sides: at the same time, I candidly stated, that we could not engage to kneel when they did, neither was it our practice to sing: and that we were desirous to offend neither Jew, nor Gentile, nor the Church."

After relating some further conversation that passed, Daniel Wheeler adds: "At length it was concluded that they should proceed as usual, and that we should sit by and act as was most easy to ourselves. Accordingly, at the time appointed, the company repaired to another room prepared for the occasion, where some others were seated in readiness; and amongst these, several young black people that understood English. It was previously arranged, that when the meeting was quite over, the certificate furnished me by my dear friends of the Morning Meeting in London, should be read, in order to account to all present for the appearance of strangers, and to open the way for any communication on my part that might arise."

It may be here proper to observe, that although we have reason to believe that our dear friend Daniel Wheeler is one of those who would be very cautious how he wrote of his own religious services under other circumstances, yet being so far separated from his friends, he has thought it right to furnish them with the following



minute particulars, which we cannot doubt will be interesting and satisfactory to Friends. After describing the manner of conducting their worship, he continues:

"We retained our seats the whole time, and my mind being under considerable weight of exercise, it was a relief to be left, as it were, in the quiet. The meeting being concluded, James Thornton read the Morning Meeting's certificate, and after commenting awhile on its contents, and the privilege of the company of strangers, we were favoured to drop into solemn silence, which continued until interrupted by my having to state, that it had never been contemplated before leaving England, that we should have to touch at a place where bigotry, superstition and slavery stalk unmasked with open face, particularly as it had not come within the range of the prospect before us. I acknowledged having mentioned to my son some days ago, that I thought our coming here must be for some object unknown to us at that time; but since we had been sitting together, I had found that the Lord had a seed, even in this place, that fear him Him, and think upon his name, and unto these in an especial manner, my heart was enlarged in the love of the everlasting Gospel, that love which would gather all mankind into the heavenly garner of rest and peace. I had not proceeded much farther in the expression of a desire that their 'faith might not stand in the wisdom of man, but in the power of God,' before I had to turn their attention to the solemnity so evidently spreading over us, as the crown and diadem of every rightly gathered religious assembly; a feeling not at our command, nor in the power of man to produce, and which could only be felt, when the Great Head of the Church fulfils his gracious promise, 'where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.' After this the way seemed fully opened, and a door of entrance also for the doctrines of the Gospel in plainness and freedom. I had particularly to speak of the nature of true spiritual worship, and waiting upon the Lord, the necessity of knowing for ourselves the great work of regeneration to be going on—the true faith of the Gospel as it is in Jesus, the Author and Finisher thereof, which worketh by love, purifieth the heart, and giveth victory over death, hell, and the grave—stating that I had nothing new to offer—that 'other foundation can no man lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ'—reviving the terms prescribed by Himself to those who would become his disciples and followers:—the 'poor in spirit,' were reminded, that to them the blessing appertains, and the kingdom belongs:—the woful sentence to the unprofitable servant, was contrasted with that of the faithful occupier of his Lord's talents; the beauty, purity, and spirituality of the true Gospel Church, and the necessity and practicability of becoming members thereof, while here on earth, was held up to view. Considerable brokenness appeared in some individuals, and I believe it may be said, that Truth rose into dominion, and reigned over all.



For my own part, I never recollect being more sensible of such continued weakness and fear from the beginning to the end—the creature was laid low, and I trust only desirous that all praise might be ascribed to Him to whom it belongs for ever. This was indeed a precious opportunity, and although not obtained without ploughing a furrow six or seven thousand miles in length, across the unstable surface of the ocean, yet the love, joy, and peace that remain, are a rich and ample reward. We reached our little bark in perfect safety, with hearts full of comfort, pretty soon after ten o'clock at night, while a torrent of rain was falling: the boat was manned by the natives of Africa, now held in cruel bondage in this place; they are, however, treated by us as fellow-men and brethren, and truly my heart abounds with love towards these poor creatures, not easily to be described."

Fifth month 27th. "At four o'clock, P. M., I went on shore with my son Charles to procure a few needful articles for the hot weather, which in England had been omitted. Soon after reaching the house of James Thornton, we were invited to meet some of the individuals with whom the meeting had been held the preceding first-day evening, for the purpose (as stated) to afford them an opportunity of asking some questions on particular points of Scripture doctrine, at the house of one of them. To this there was no difficulty in complying on my part, feeling more than usual freedom towards these people.

"After having previously taken what exercise on foot the interval would afford, we repaired about the time fixed upon to the place where we found the master of the house busily employed in arranging a number of questions, under different heads, intended to be asked, that nothing might be omitted. After informing us the plan he had thus proposed to himself, he acknowledged that he did not feel satisfied with its adoption, and at once laid it aside." One of these individuals, Daniel Wheeler describes, as of an "ardent and capacious mind, and of a most amiable and benevolent disposition, possessing at the same time all the advantages of a scholar, acquainted with several languages, and well versed in the knowledge of the sacred writings." After relating the particulars of some interesting conversation on religious subjects, Daniel Wheeler adds, "It occurred to me as a suitable opportunity to bring forward the subject of the Scriptures being so frequently termed by professing Christians, 'The word of God,' that although many persons might not be in danger by this practice, of attaching more to the letter than belongs to it, yet it was much to be feared that its tendency was highly injurious, and opposed to the spirituality of the Gospel dispensation. I found there was an openness to receive this remark, which was not confined to this person alone, but extended to another present, and that they had previously felt some doubts on this very important point. At last one of them, as if at once convinced in his understanding, exclaimed in the words

of the apostle Peter, 'And this is the word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.' Several other questions were put to us, which I believe were answered satisfactorily to them. I trust that the time expended was to some edification, and that the noble cause did not suffer, though in the hands of such feeble advocates."

Daniel Wheeler adds, "One copy of Bates' Doctrines, and a pamphlet were thankfully received by an individual of the place, who, I am persuaded, will not be disposed to keep them to himself. I was in hopes whilst here of having an opportunity of distributing part of our stock of Bibles in the Spanish language, but I could not find any person willing to undertake the risk of their being found in his possession. In the course of inquiry on the subject, it appeared that a considerable number of copies of the Scriptures in the Portuguese language were at one time brought into this country, and it is supposed were destroyed, under pretence of their being too imperfect a translation to be circulated." On the subject of slavery our dear friend thus writes: "We were informed by respectable authority, that two-thirds of the population of the neighbourhood round St. Sebastian, consists of coloured people, and that nothing could keep them in such a state of cruel and abject slavery, but their having been taken from different tribes in Africa, amongst whom a most inveterate enmity has constantly existed; and such a care has industriously been taken to keep perpetually alive a spirit of revenge against each other, as cannot be destroyed even by slavery itself; this is spoken of as a politic measure, lest they should unite and set themselves free; dreadful indeed would be the day to the majority of their white masters, should such a thing come to pass, unless controlled by a higher power." He further adds, "although our tarriance in the Rio de Janeiro was little more than a fortnight, yet many of the poor negroes who had been in any manner connected with us by employment or otherwise, in the town or city of St. Sebastian, had become much attached to us; and some hours after having left the coast, it was fully ascertained that only a very slight occurrence had prevented three of these people from being secreted on board our vessel."

Fifth month 28th. "As all our affairs were completely wound up, and the way clear for leaving this port, fatigue and the lateness of the hour were unnoticed, more particularly as the retrospect altogether of our visit to this place, as well as the prospect of quitting it, could be taken with a peaceful review."

## CHAPTER II.

Sail from Brazil—determine to proceed by the Cape of Good Hope—heavy sea—escape from shipwreck—imminent danger—remarkable preservation—continuance of stormy weather—lightening the vessel—hurricane—lying to—tyfoons—hurricane—tremendous storms—land in sight.

AFTER a tempestuous passage from Rio de Janeiro of fifteen weeks, except a few hours, our dear friends were permitted to arrive in safety at Hobart Town, Van Diemen's Land, on the 10th of the ninth month, 1834.

The following extracts from Daniel Wheeler's letters and Journal, will give some idea of the perils they encountered during the passage. In a letter accompanying the extracts from his Journal, dated Hobart Town, 25th of ninth month, 1834, he writes thus:

"In my letter from the Mother-bank, my dear friends may have observed that it was stated, whether we proceeded by the way of the Cape of Good Hope or Cape Horn, a wintry season awaited us; and therefore I was in some degree prepared by anticipation, though resigned to whatever might be permitted to overtake us. It will be seen by the extracts from my journal now transmitted, that we sailed from the coast of Brazil on the 29th of fifth month last, pretty soon after which our rough weather commenced."

Daniel Wheeler ultimately concluded to proceed by the eastern passage, as appears by the following extract from his Journal, dated 29th of fifth month. "As rounding Cape Horn was my first intention, it has at times passed before me, that if, on our leaving Rio de Janeiro, the wind should be strong and favourable for steering towards it, that I should feel a little difficulty in deciding which route to aim at, but believe I have felt desirous to be guided aright in this particular."

Sixth month 2nd. "Since leaving the land, the winds have been so strongly opposed to our going round Cape Horn, as nearly to put that out of sight: to-day we are so far off the coast of South America as to be exposed to the swell of the great South Sea, which is no longer kept from us by a point of land which forms the projecting Cape; this swell is prodigious, and plainly shows the turbulent state of the weather in that quarter, and seems like a final settlement, and removal of any thing like a doubt in my mind as to our being in the right track at present. After midnight the weather became very rough, and the wind inclining more and more southerly, rendered our position in sailing very critical. Before four o'clock, A. M., two heavy seas broke in upon us, one of which stove in a part of the bulwark on the starboard side: happily none of the watch on deck were washed overboard. From this time things got rapidly worse, and the only alternative now left was to bring the vessel to, with her head to the wind and sea,



under suitable storm-cannass to maintain that position. In addition to the great risk attending at all times any circumstance connected with 'lying to,' it was a position in which we had not yet tried the 'Henry Freeling.' It was not indeed an every-day occurrence for a small vessel, which we have had hitherto no opportunity of proving under more gentle circumstances, to be brought round against a sea, which had nothing to control or break the range of its sweeping influence between her and the south pole. Captain Keen manifested great coolness and ability on the occasion, and soon after day-break all things were ready to accomplish our intended purpose, to effect which, an interval was waited for, until the blast should lull a little: and whilst much depended upon a timely re-action of the sails, so as to prevent the vessel from forcing herself with too great violence into the opposing waves, as her head came round towards them, at the same time it was indispensably needful to keep a sufficient quantity of cannass set, to guard against being overtaken and overwhelmed by the mountain waves, which in an awful manner were now threatening us behind. A few minutes relieved us from all suspense and anxiety, and although heavy laden, with our newly recruited and increased stock of water, some of which encumbered the deck, yet we had the comfort to see the vessel rise in a lively manner to the surface of the loftiest billows, before any material quantity of their contents had time to burst over her. As the wind blew directly from an immensity of ice, a change so sudden from the great heat we had so recently witnessed, to such a cold penetrating blast, was sensibly felt by all on board.

Sixth month 10th. "Towards evening it again became stormy with much rain; the sea breaking over us with great violence, scarcely any part, even below deck, could be preserved free from wet, and all our ingenuity was called forth to preserve our beds moderately dry. At times the weight of water seemed too much for our little bark to bear, from which she could scarcely extricate herself before another deluge burst in upon her deck. A state of desertion was my lot throughout the day, and although at seasons I was ready to say, 'Lord, carest thou not that we perish?' Yet I was not permitted in the darkest moment to cast away my confidence, although for many hours it seemed needful for us to stand prepared as with our lives in our hands, not knowing how soon they might be called for. At midnight the scene was truly awful, the wind blew in a furious manner, and the sea raged with increased violence, with heavy falls of rain. The mercury in the marine barometer, which had been falling all the day, became lower, and the little vessel seemed to twist and bend beneath her heavy burden. At this moment of struggle and extremity, behold a shift of wind to the south-west, which instead of taking aback suddenly the little cannass we were scudding under, (which might have produced consequences above all others the most to be

dreaded,) came regularly round; and the captain, availing himself of this moment, directed that the vessel should be 'hove to.' Captain Keen came to me shortly after this circumstance had taken place, to acknowledge how providentially this change had been ordered, as sensible of the favour thus graciously bestowed upon us.

Sixth month 13th. "This date has not failed to awaken feelings of painful reflections in reference to days which have long since passed away, it being thirty-three years since it pleased the God of all my mercies to bestow a crown upon the head of a poor unworthy creature, even the rich blessing of a truly virtuous wife, at the close of a meeting at Doncaster. Full well at this remote period do I remember the solemn and delightful season with which we were remarkably favoured, from the beginning to the end of the meeting. Dear Thomas Colley appeared largely in testimony on the occasion, to the tendering of many present. It was indeed an earnest of the heavenly Master's love, which never ceased to follow us through all the vicissitudes of time, during a life, not a little chequered, for a term of more than thirty-two years and a half, when he was pleased to deprive me of my greatest earthly treasure, and to take back that which he gave; but it was His own, I verily believe, even His, the same who enabled me to say, in the moment of my greatest distress, 'blessed be the name of the Lord.' In looking over the different relatives and friends present on the above occasion, there is at this period scarcely one of those individuals, at that time about our own age, who now survives, and I find that many of them much younger than ourselves, have been summoned from works to rewards: thus, whilst many of my contemporaries have finished their earthly career, I am still spared a little longer, a living monument of the Lord's everlasting mercy, for the purpose, I humbly trust, of declaring unto others what He hath done for my soul, and to show forth the praises of Him, who hath translated me out of darkness into his marvellous light. And although the sacrifice I am making may appear great, and be rendered more formidable by the late hour in the evening in which it has to be offered, yet in my estimation it is small indeed, and light as the dust of the balance, when the love and mercy, long-suffering and compassion of my good and gracious Lord God, are brought into remembrance, who hath redeemed my life from destruction, and crowned me with loving-kindness and tender mercies, to myself incomprehensible; and I am persuaded only known to those, in the same degree, whose sin is blotted out as a cloud, and their transgressions as a thick cloud, by repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, who came into the world to save sinners, of whom each of us, in the depth of self-abasement, can say, 'I am chief.'"

A narrow escape from shipwreck against the island Inaccessible is thus adverted to:—

Sixth month 18th. "As the day advanced, the wind and sea in-



creased, and the fog was so dense close down to the horizon, that there seemed but little prospect of discovering the land, at a sufficient distance to prevent our running directly upon it. As the afternoon wore away, the danger hourly increased: but at this juncture, the Everlasting Arm of strength and power, in wonted mercy and compassion, was signally displayed for our preservation and relief, and in such a manner as wholly to exclude the slightest pretence of mortal man's having the least share in it. The mist cleared suddenly away; and though but for a short interval, yet it was sufficient to discover a lofty, rocky island, about half a mile distant, standing nearly perpendicular out of the sea, far above the mast-head of the 'Henry Freeling.' We soon perceived that this was the island called 'Inaccessible,' and appropriately so, as from its vast height and steep approach, no landing apparently on the side next to us, could possibly have been effected. This seemed at once to relieve our anxiety, and the captain now considered all danger as past, and that we should safely run between this island and another called Nightingale Island, although not able to see it on account of the fog, these islands being ten miles asunder. Thus cheered, we pursued our flying course with great velocity, as the wind had increased in violence soon after the high rocky island was first seen. But in another hour, our prospect was suddenly clouded by the appearance of more rugged rocky land on the same side of us. This circumstance, for a time, staggered all our hopes, as it could not be accounted for; and of course we knew not how soon some unknown lurking reef might wreck our fragile vessel, which was scourged on by a hurricane-blast with greater speed, it is probable, than at any previous time. In the early part of this suspense, Captain Keen said to me, 'Now if your friends in England could look at us, they would have a better idea of the sacrifice you are making than they at present possess.' But this would have conveyed to them only a faint idea of what we have since had to pass through, and was only the beginning of those perils, which, in the end, have been so abundantly crowned with wondrous mercy. In this situation, the night was gathering blackness and darkness in the midst of a heavy tempest.

Sixth month 20th. "It was observed that the mercury in the barometer, which had risen a little last evening, was this morning again on the decline, and by four o'clock, P. M., had fallen to 29.53. The wind freshened throughout the day, and at night blew with such tremendous violence, accompanied with heavy rain and some lightning, as compelled us again to seek safety by 'lying to;' but, however trying to be thus disabled from making use of a fair wind when it blows, yet I believe we are truly thankful in having such a source of relief from the terrors of the storm afforded to us, poor solitary wanderers on the mighty deep. It is

three weeks to-day since we left Rio, and up to this time we have not seen another ship.

Sixth month 21st. "Still 'lying to,' in heavy gales from the south-west, with frequent squalls still more heavy, with rain and forked lightning, at the same time the weather extremely cold and penetrating.

Sixth month 22nd. "'Lying to,' as yesterday, the storm still raging with unabated violence, squalls, heavy rain and lightning through the night. The sea having risen to a fearful height, has frequently inundated the deck of the vessel, and from the continual working of her whole frame, our bed-places have been unfit to sleep in, the water having found its way through numerous chinks. This morning early, a heavy sea broke into us, bringing a larger quantity of water upon the deck than at any time before. To myself a very remarkable and striking event took place this morning. Shortly after the vessel had shipped a heavy body of water, I went up the hatchway to look round for a short interval; at that moment the seas were running in mountainous succession, and I observed that some of the loftiest of the waves were very nearly prevailing against our little vessel; it seemed as if she could not much longer escape being overwhelmed by them altogether. I made no remark to any one; but soon after we tried to get some breakfast: while so occupied, one of the men called down to inform us that there was a sight worth looking at on deck; it was a large collection of a small species of the whale, close by the ship. I thought I should like to see them; there were perhaps more than two hundred of these animals close to us, about twelve feet long each. When I went upon deck after breakfast they were still close to our bows; and the man at the helm said, that they served as a breakwater for us: their being so was afterwards mentioned by some other person. At last my eyes were open to discover the protection they were affording our little struggling vessel; they occupied a considerable portion of the surface of the sea, in the exact direction between the vessel and the wind and waves, reaching so near to us, that some of them might have been struck with a harpoon; they remained constantly swimming in gentle and steady order, as if to maintain the position of a regular phalanx, and I suggested that nothing should be done to frighten them away. It was openly remarked by some, that not one sea had broken on board us while they occupied their useful post; and when they at last retired, it was perceived that the waves did not rage with the same violence as before they came to our relief. I give this wonderful circumstance just as it occurred, and if any should be disposed to view it as a thing of chance, I do not, for I believe it to be one of the great and marvellous works of the Lord God Almighty. These friends in need, and friends indeed, filled up a sufficiently wide space upon two of the large swells of the ocean, completely to obstruct the approach of each succeeding

wave opposed to the vessel, so that if the third wave from us was coming in lofty foam towards us, by the time it had rolled over and become the second wave, its foaming, threatening aspect was destroyed entirely, reaching us at last, in the form of a dead and harmless swell. They are a very oily fish, but seldom larger than to yield about two barrels of oil; they are commonly called black fish.

Sixth month 23d. "Still 'lying to,' sustained through another rough and perilous night, the wintry storm yet howling around us. We remarked, after having just passed the shortest day in this climate, that our friends in England had returned home from the Yearly Meeting, and were enjoying the delightful days of summer at their greatest length.

Sixth month 26th. "The tempestuous and turbulent weather, which our little vessel has had of late to contend with so largely, the great length of voyage still unaccomplished, at the most unfavourable season of the year, have frequently been a subject of serious thought, but more particularly from witnessing, since the last heavy gales, considerable and almost daily increasing leakage from different parts of the deck, owing to the great strain to which her upper works have been subjected, by the enormous weight of lumber, together with part of our stock of fresh water, upon the deck. After looking at the state of things on every side, and taking the different bearings of the whole into deliberate consideration, it seemed the most prudent measure, in the hope of contributing to the future safety of the vessel, and to enable her to perform the service looked forward to, in its fullest extent, to lighten her deck, by launching overboard, on the first favourable opportunity, every weight of spars, &c. that could be dispensed with. As this could not be done in rough weather, without the risk of injury both to the people and the ship; and there being less wind and sea to-day, than for some time back, it was resolved, if possible to accomplish it. Accordingly, four heavy logs, a spare square sail-yard (old,) a heavy spar intended for a top-mast, with many other cumbrous weights, which tended to increase the weakness of the quarters of the vessel, were cast into the sea without accident. It is truly cause of regret thus to sacrifice articles, which at a future day may be much needed; but the necessity of endeavouring to relieve the present difficulty and distress, compelled us to pass over that, which now can be looked at as remote, and may never occur.

"As this step has not been taken suddenly, or hastily determined upon, nor in the moment of impending danger, when fear might have operated, but is the result of patient and deliberate observation, I trust that our dear friends in England will see the propriety of our so doing. Several of the articles thus thrown into the sea, belonged to the vessel when first purchased, and I believe the sum of five pounds sterling would cover the whole amount of such



things as were afterwards bought and intended as extra stores. I was disappointed at finding on inquiry that the name 'Henry Freeling,' which was deeply branded on each of the four logs, had not been previously cut out before they were thrown overboard, lest this omission should give rise to a report of our having been wrecked, gone to pieces, or foundered at sea, if any of them should reach a distant shore, or be picked up by another ship."

Some of the tempestuous weather which succeeded is described in the following extracts from the Journal:—

Seventh month 7th. "Still 'lying to;' the storm has continued all night, and the sea makes very heavy upon us. The mercury in the marine barometer sunk to 29.30, then rose a little, and again sunk lower in the tube. As the night advanced, the storm increased with awful violence. Captain Keen said his last voyage was forty-six months in length, but that he had never witnessed such a night during the whole of it. The strength of the wind was incredible, and the lightning appalling, with a fall of rain and sleet; the sea broke in upon our little ship in an alarming manner. The poor men were lashed upon the deck with ropes, to prevent their being washed away; benumbed with cold, and at times floating with the vast load of water upon the deck—their sufferings are not easily described. The bulwark on the larboard side was damaged, and the spray reached more than two-thirds up the main-mast. In the morning the seamen expressed considerable discouragement, and I observed a disposition rather to make the worst of things. The captain said, 'he hoped he should not see such another night in this vessel.' One person did not expect she would have kept up until morning. When assembled at the breakfast table, I had to tell them, with a degree of firmness, that a murmur ought not to be heard amongst us, but rather the expression of thankfulness that 'we are as we are.' On looking round at the ravages of the storm, I was surprised to find that so little damage was done; and the increase of pumping had been comparatively trifling to what might have been expected from the violent and frequent strokes of the sea, and the floods of water that had rolled over the deck of the vessel.

"In the darkest part of the night of the 6th inst., a distinct luminous appearance or glow of light remained at our mast-head; a phenomenon only seen in dreadful weather, when the atmosphere is highly charged with electric fluid. The sailors call it a corpasant. I think such a thing is mentioned in John Churchman's Journal, or that of some other worthy.\* The countenances of our men were considerably whitened this morning, by the great quantity of salt, which having been deposited by the constant wash of the sea had dried upon their faces. In the course of the storm yesterday evening, unusual darkness gathered round us, when sud-

---

\* See John Woolman's Journal, Dublin edition, 1794, p. 212.



denly the wind, which blew with great violence, increased to a complete hurricane, and roared in a terrific manner, and for a while closely threatened our little vessel. The force of the wind was so great, that the waves for the time almost ceased to undulate, and the surface of the ocean became level and whitened with foam. At this juncture I was comforted in beholding the calmness and resignation with which my dear Charles was favoured. At one time he remarked, 'What a painful situation those people must be in, who have not a good reason for being exposed to similar distress, when they find themselves overtaken by it.' I told him, it was formidable enough even to those who felt themselves in the line of apprehended duty. As the night approached another storm began to threaten, and the waves ran so cross, and broke in such different directions, that the motion of the vessel for a time exceeded all we had before witnessed, and the waters rushed on board of her on every side. At ten o'clock, P. M., it was so tempestuous, that we again hugged the howling blast, by 'heaving to:' as the vessel came round with her head to the wind, one heavy wave broke on board, but happily none of the crew were lost. In the afternoon, when it was thought that the storm had arrived at its greatest strength, this hope was suddenly extinguished by the mercury falling in a short space of time down to 29.50. The captain said, 'We have done all we can, trust in Providence only remains.' "

The following extract proves the state of our dear friend's mind, about this period:—

"Two or three days previous to this tempest, I felt much depressed on account of my Charles, he having drooped more than usual, from the effects of the cold weather; the great length of time we had already been the sport of the winds and waves since leaving the Rio de Janeiro, could not but excite a painful and discouraging fear lest his strength should prove unequal to the remaining part of the voyage, as we had only passed over about one thousand miles in distance, since beginning to traverse the margin of the Indian Ocean, and are still greatly annoyed by the strong currents and heavy gales which prevail from the direction of Madagascar, and are probably attracted down the Mosambique channel, which separates that island from the coast of Natal, on the south-east shore of Africa. But as the late storm approached, I felt, through unmerited favour, increasing peacefulness and tranquillity, which nothing during its whole continuance was permitted to disturb; and in the most awful moment of uncertainty and impending danger, fear had no place to enter; this was utterly banished by the love of the ever-blessed Master that flowed in my heart, and which in the true dignity of its heavenly power cast it out; and the language which at intervals continued to prevail and occupy the inner man, with a soothing and encouraging sweetness, was that of the Psalmist, 'Delight thyself in the Lord,

and he shall give thee the desires of thy heart.' Thus indeed was strength truly administered, according to the glorious working of his power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness, to endure, and give thanks to the Lord Most High. I should shrink from making any remark on the state of my own mind, whilst in the extremity out of which we have been so remarkably delivered, did I not feel called upon by a sense of gratitude to our compassionate Lord; at the same time a hope gleams through my heart, that it will tend to strengthen the faith of some hesitating and doubting fellow-travellers who may eventually peruse these lines, to 'follow on to know the Lord' for themselves, and thus partake of his love, mercy, and life-giving presence, and be encouraged to forsake all and follow him, 'nothing doubting,' wherever he may be pleased to lead: for the declaration, 'Lo I am with you alway,' will assuredly be verified in their experience, and all earthly things will be estimated but as loss and dross, in comparison with the excellence of the knowledge of Christ Jesus.

Seventh month 22nd. "From the 14th inst. to the present date, a succession of stormy weather was our portion, during which we had to 'lie to,' with the head of the vessel to the wind and sea, four times, and this with a fair wind too, but the sea ran too high to make it availing.

"Whilst 'lying to' in heavy weather the fore part of last night, (the last of the above four times,) I felt much exhausted for want of rest, and not a little depressed and discouraged by surrounding circumstances.

"The almost incessant labouring of the vessel, and the heavy strokes of the sea, which have so often assailed her battered sides, could not fail to occasion extra pumping when it blew hard: although upon the whole she had suffered little since her deck had been lightened and freed from dead weights; and yet every returning day seemed to bring a fresh tempest with it, which kept the sea unceasingly agitated. All these circumstances could not fail to occasion renewed thoughtfulness, more especially as we have still more than one hundred degrees of east longitude to run down, before reaching our intended port, and are so frequently compelled to 'lie to,' for our safety, lest the sea should overwhelm us altogether. Thus I was letting in fear and doubts, and listening to the tempter's insinuations, notwithstanding the multitude of mercies which have been showered upon us for our deliverance; yet such is the frailty of human nature, that when we see the waves of adversity boisterous about us, we begin to sink, by letting in fear at the prospect, although fully sanctioned by the Lord himself; but even the brightest gleam of sunshine soon loses its gladdening influence on our minds unless again and again renewed by the ever-blessed Master, who having been touched with a feeling of our manifold infirmities, pities the weakness of poor mortal dust. After passing through considerable mental conflict, in con-



trition I went upon the deck, supposing from the great motion of the vessel, that the storm had continued all the night, and that we were still 'lying to,' when, to my surprise, I found a bright and beautiful morning, the weather apparently entirely changed, the wind fair, and the vessel gradually pursuing her route, but the great and diverse swells of the sea still occasioning her to labour hard, nearly as much as during the storm in the fore part of the night. I could not help feeling ashamed and mortified in abasement of self, in finding I had been thus duped by the grand adversary, who, ever on the alert and unwearied, had found the 'watch' neglected in a darkened gloomy hour of trial and perplexity, and thus improved the opportunity to his own advantage, leaving me covered with self-reproach as in dust and ashes.

Seventh month 28th. "The height of the waves compelled us again to 'lie to,' under storm-canvass, for thirty hours. This gale increased to a violent degree, but different in most respects from all which we had previously been called to witness. In all the preceding cases there had been a change of a favourable nature to cheer us through the dreary tempest, but now every alteration appeared to be against us, serving only to render our situation more and more alarming. It did seem as if we were now cast off and left to the fury of the wind and waves; and notwithstanding we had with our own eyes seen as it were Jordan driven back, and the waters of the Red Sea stand as on heaps, for our deliverance, yet now the glorious presence was withdrawn, and so completely hidden, that no trace could be perceived to administer one glimmering ray of hope in the midst of our complicated distress. On looking at our forlorn and helpless situation, and the overwhelming appearance of the storm, the fury of which had been only aggravated by every change which had so far taken place, it now seemed too late for any thing to occur that could probably operate in our favour, as the sea was running in confused heaps different ways in a frightful manner, caused by the wind having shifted to different points, and from each point blown furiously. About three o'clock in the afternoon the mercury fell lower and lower, when we were overtaken with a squall of wind, truly appalling and terrific, which in a short time afterwards was succeeded by a second still more violent and alarming; but through the medium of these two dreadful blasts, which at first threatened nothing but destruction, our deliverance was marvellously effected. Such was the fury of these two tyfoons, that they actually, in a short space of time, changed the wild and disfigured surface of the troubled ocean from unruly mountains to a rugged level, by their boisterous breath, leaving nothing but a sea white as milk with foam. From this time the storm subsided, and at midnight we were again enabled to bear away for Van Diemen's Land, distant, four thousand seven hundred miles.

Seventh month 31st. "'Lying to,' with an increasing tempest



around us. Charles and myself sat down together, it being fifth-day, though 'troubled on every side, yet not distressed, perplexed, but not in despair, persecuted' again and again, but verily, 'not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed,' however much like two poor outcasts born out of due time, and tossing on the bosom of the restless waters, far from friends and native home, but under a peaceful feeling of resignation and poverty of spirit. We are now in latitude 40 south, longitude 70 east. The barometer had been low yesterday, but had begun to rise a little. In a short time, however, the mercury began again to sink, and dropped down to 28·50., being an inch lower than when we experienced the hurricane in the neighbourhood of the Cape of Good Hope. This circumstance spread a gloom over us; having witnessed such dreadful weather about three weeks before when the mercury was at 29·50, and knowing the correctness of the barometer in former cases, our apprehensions were increasingly awakened, and under a sense that another close trial was not far distant, we endeavoured to wait patiently the event, though in a painful suspense, with, I believe, a full surrender of ourselves to the will of Almighty God; remembering my poor, scattered orphan family and dear relations and friends everywhere, in the midst of our complicated trials and distress, in earnestness and brokenness before Him, who only knows the anguish of a tribulated soul. Towards evening the wind and sea increased in such a dreadful manner, that the horrors of the scene cannot be faithfully described. It blew a perfect hurricane; and although we had only sufficient storm-canvass set to keep the vessel's head to the sea, yet she seemed to be in danger of being torn to pieces with the intense pressure against which she had to struggle through a rugged sea, for some hours together. The captain was much alarmed, and said, 'If she gets through this, she will get through any thing.' The agitated waters broke in upon us on every side, like cascades, frequently loading the deck with their weight. The whole frame of the vessel trembled and shook with the strain in an unusual manner. This hurricane at length became a steady and regular gale of wind, but very heavy.

Eighth month 4th. "The weather very boisterous, although we were permitted to keep before the wind and sea. To-day we were escorted by an unusual number of birds, the albatross, cape hen, stormy petrell, &c. On the fifth we were compelled again to 'lie to,' and this day, the sixth, we are again 'lying to.' At three o'clock, P. M., we were assailed by a most violent tempest, with heavy falls of rain, sleet and hail; the sea curled in an unusual manner, and raging in opposite directions, our little bark seemed as if she could not long sustain the unequal conflict, as the wind kept increasing to a degree almost inconceivable, except to those who may have witnessed the hurricane with all its furious and angry growl. Every thing was done that could be devised for our relief, but all our efforts seemed overpowered and unavailing,

and we could not wholly divest ourselves of an apprehension that she must eventually fill and founder by the lee with us at last, if the fury of the storm were not curbed; of this, however, there seemed no probability, and the approach of night served only to increase its horror, and renew its force. In this situation one would have supposed that no relief could have availed short of an abatement of the storm; but true it is, that an increase of its fury produced a circumstance, which at once enabled our weather-beaten little vessel to rise with comparative ease to every opposing mountain-billow. At eight o'clock, P. M., the wind was so powerfully strong, that it blew our new storm-jib away from the duff or bolt-rope altogether. Every exertion was made to prevent the total loss of the sail, but it flapped with such violence as to shake the whole frame of the vessel, threatening destruction to all that came near it. At length it was lowered down into the water under the lee of the ship, where it was happily secured, but not without one man being hurt by it. For want of this sail, it was now feared that the sea would make a constant breach over our deck; but before another sail could be prepared to replace it, it was truly relieving to find that the vessel bowed to the seas as they met her, in a much more lively manner without it, than she had done with it. Thus, in a very unexpected manner, was a way made for us to ride triumphant through the remainder of the terrific storm, without any material injury to the vessel beyond the loss of her bulwark. 'This poor man cried, and the Lord heard him, and saved him out of all his troubles,' and to Him be the glory and the praise for ever. In the course of every storm which we had witnessed previously to the last, thunder and lightning had more or less accompanied them, sometimes in an awful manner, but more particularly the lightning, when forked; and although we left England without conducting chains; yet thus far, not a flash has been permitted to harm us. By way of precaution, the pumps have at times been stopped up, to prevent their being split. Such favours I desire to record with thankfulness, and to number them among the many blessings which have descended upon us from our heavenly Parent, times innumerable.

Eighth month 8th. "It is now more than ten weeks since we sailed from the Rio de Janeiro; we are still more than three thousand miles from our desired port, and yet the winds have mostly blown from favourable quarters, but often with such violence as to render them unavailing, on account of the tremendous seas they have occasioned.

Eighth month 10th. "The two last days the weather has been very rugged, but more gentle in the course of last night, and some heavy showers of rain have greatly assisted in stilling the swellings of the restless waters; which allowed our ship's company to sit down together in a good degree of comfort, it being first-day.



Eighth month 14th. "To-day we have again ventured before the wind. In the forenoon, it being the fifth-day of the week, Charles and myself were engaged in silent waiting; I sat under a painful feeling of great strippedness and desertion, which have frequently been my portion of late; but my Lord knows best what is best for me; and although his blessed will may not at all times just suit the creaturely desires of a poor finite mortal, yet I think I desire to be patiently resigned, and to be able to say in sincerity of heart, 'I have behaved and quieted myself, as a child that is weaned of his mother; my soul is even as a weaned child,' humbly praying, that at seasons an evidence may be granted that all things will work together for good, although the heavenly, blessed, and only availing Comforter, who alone can relieve my soul, may be so veiled from the view of my mind as to appear far from me. By noon the wind and sea had so much risen that it became needful again to 'lie to,' without delay. Soon after the vessel was brought to the wind, every indication was exhibited of another dreadful tempest being close upon us. The interval of suspense was short before our fears were realized by being again surrounded with all the horrors of a furious storm, which kept increasing as the night drew on with aggravated violence, and continued the whole of it with unabated fury.

Eighth month 15th. "To-day the sea was considered the most lofty and appalling that had yet been permitted to assail our poor fragile bark. The wind shifted several points in the course of the gale, causing the white crested foaming billows to run one against another in fearful heaps, and breaking as they met in every direction, to exhibit one vast ocean of white foam in confused agitation, not to be described. As the principal weight of this mighty tempest came from the southward and westward, there was nothing to break in any degree the sweeping range of the seas between us and the neighbourhood of the Pole; and the wind coming off such vast bodies of ice, brought with it most chilling cold, and heavy falls of hail or sleet, which added much to the already accumulated sufferings of our poor, drenched, and benumbed seamen.

Eighth month 16th. "After midnight the storm became less violent and angry, and only blew a gale of wind, which gradually diminished before day-break this morning, and the mountainous waves having ceased from foaming, though still prodigious, about seven o'clock, P. M., we again put the head of our little battered ark towards the far-distant and long-desired Tasmania, although but small progress could be made, from the lofty swells which were raging around her. During the tempest of yesterday it was very evident that several on board were much discouraged at its awful strength. It was acknowledged by the captain, mate, and others, that they had never beheld such a dreadful sea at any time before, and yet the little 'Freeling' was preserved through it all with com-



paratively slight injury. Such indeed have been the renewed extendings of abounding mercy, as ought to be sufficient to cause even those of little faith to be ashamed, and to cease any longer to doubt; but, alas! the rod once withdrawn, is soon forgotten; as is the loving-kindness of the Lord, when the danger is over and passed away: like Israel of old, who sang his praise, but soon forgot his works.

Eighth month 17th. "The weather being more gentle the crew were assembled twice in the course of the day for devotional purposes. The evening was crowned with sweet peace.

18th. "At noon this day we have completed full  $140^{\circ}$  of longitude, more than 100 of these since leaving the Rio de Janeiro by the way of the South American continent to the Cape of Good Hope; and we have yet about  $46\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$  more to accomplish before entering the Derwent river, besides several degrees of south latitude to fill up.

Ninth month 6th. "Since the 17th ult. to this date, the weather has been more favourable, though often rough and boisterous. To-day strong gales and cloudy, but the sea although high, still admits of our steering a direct course: yesterday at noon we were about 340 miles from the southern promontory of Tasmania. If the weather should be clear to-morrow, and the wind continue in this quarter with the same strength, we expect to see the land once more in the afternoon. This evening there is a rumour of land being in sight."

---

### CHAPTER III.

Van Diemen's Land—blown off—enter Storm Bay—anchor off Hobart Town—meeting with James Backhouse and George W. Walker—the Henry Freeling—illness—sail from Hobart Town—Botany Bay—arrival at Sidney—Aborigines—visit from a missionary—interview with the governor—conclude to stop at Norfolk Island—an aged missionary—public meeting at Sidney—a visit to the governor—the ship's company—religious engagements.

On drawing near to Van Diemen's Land they found themselves in a perilous situation, as appears by the following extract:—

Ninth month 7th. "After sailing rapidly with a strong breeze all night, the land was fairly in sight at day-light this morning, but too distant for it to be determined with certainty what particular part we saw. Towards noon the south-west Cape of Van Diemen's Land, with the south Cape, and the land in the neighbourhood of Tasman's Head were distinguished, but the wind had shifted, almost directly against our vessel, and a considerable swell of the sea had risen, although in the morning these were both in our favour. In the course of the day we had two satisfactory sittings with the crew, it being first-day. About five o'clock, P. M., the atmosphere assumed a very threatening ap-

pearance. The sailors could scarcely get in the sails before it blew in a furious manner. Our hopes, which had previously brightened at the prospect of getting into port, were now unexpectedly and suddenly blighted, and instead of a probability of this being soon realized, we had the mortification to witness a painful reverse; for before midnight, such was the violence of the tempest that we were literally blown off the land altogether, and our situation rendered doubly hazardous by being in the neighbourhood of rocks and shoals. One of these rocks, from its exact position being unknown, caused more thoughtfulness than others. The storm lasted all night, and brought with it the swells of the Pacific, which meeting those from the edge of the Indian Ocean, together with the currents occasioned by New Holland, &c., soon raised a cross and outrageous sea.

"It was thought that our vessel had not sustained more real damage from any storm she had previously encountered during the whole voyage, except one, which exceeded it in violence. The sea ranged over our deck almost the whole night. She was struck several times in different parts by heavy seas, and part of the bulwark on the starboard side was driven on board. Towards morning on the 9th instant, the strength of the wind was so greatly diminished, that by eleven o'clock, A. M., we made sail, and stretched to the northward to endeavour to get sight of the land again. Soon after noon the small islands of Pedrô Blanco and the Eddystone were plainly ascertained, afterwards the main land appeared, and as the wind was favourable, we steered at once for Tasman's Head, and entered Storm Bay just at nightfall. After beating about all the night and next day, without gaining much ground, I determined to endeavour to anchor in Adventure Bay, which was well recommended by the late Captain Cook, but it fell calm before we reached Penguin Island, and from the fear of being driven amongst the rocks, by the currents, this project was abandoned. A light air of wind springing up, we again stretched across Storm Bay, not without some apprehension of being blown off the coast before morning. With great fatigue to the men we got through the night in safety, but a dismal one it proved, and although we were not in a capacity to 'cast four anchors over the stern, yet I believe we all did most earnestly wish for the day.' At length it broke to our relief, when we persisted in beating up the bay, and about noon took a pilot on board. After working through the day in very squally weather, we entered the Derwent before dark, and were at last mercifully favoured safely to anchor off Hobart Town, at eleven o'clock, P. M., on the 10th of Ninth month. Next morning we moved again to a place more convenient, and eventually moored with two anchors, opposite the Government House, close to the garden of the Lieutenant Governor, G. Arthur. Next morning I ascertained that our dear friends,

James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, were still in these parts and well."

In the letter from Hobart Town, dated 25th of Ninth month, 1834, accompanying his Journal, Daniel Wheeler thus writes, "Though many of the storms and tempests have been enumerated, yet not one half of what it has been our portion to witness, has been told to my beloved friends. It may suffice for me to say, that we have been compelled to seek refuge more than twenty times from the fury of the hostile elements by 'lying to,' with the ship's head to the wind and waves: and this has been resorted to only in cases of extreme danger."

It will be seen by the extract from the Journal, under date of 25th of Sixth month, that it appeared necessary to lighten the vessel, by casting into the sea some heavy logs, &c. In the same letter, Daniel Wheeler alludes to one of the sailors, who, it appears, had been remarkably visited, and brought under feelings of deep condemnation, and who opened his mind to him in a letter:—of this man he remarks, "His obdurate heart was never softened, and subdued, and humbled, until after the last dreadful tempest, when the weight of his burden became so heavy as to constrain him to confession. I had perceived in his eye, the anguish of his wounded spirit, but knew not the cause until he wrote to me. He had several times been in danger of being washed overboard; and once nearly fell from one of the yards when aloft, but these dangers were not sufficient wholly to bring down his stubborn heart. I think this one circumstance, independently of our (I trust) timely visit to Rio de Janeiro, cannot fail to animate the hearts of all our dear friends, particularly such as have been instrumental, in any degree, towards promoting the great work in which we are engaged, and cause them to feel a lively participation in that heavenly joy, which welcomes the repenting and returning sinner to his Father's house."

From a previous extract, it will be observed that Daniel Wheeler, suggested that certain stipulations should be made with any person who might be engaged to take the command of the vessel; one of these was, that himself and mate should attend morning and evening, when the Holy Scriptures were read; this appears to have been attended to, and the sailors also have enjoyed the privilege of hearing them read at suitable times; and from a paragraph in one of his letters, it appears that he had been careful to inform them that he did not consider such reading as a part of Divine worship, "but that true worship is an act between man and his great Creator, and can only be performed acceptably in spirit and in truth."

When the state of the weather permitted, meetings were regularly held on first and fifth-days, those on first-days were attended by the ship's company, and were, it appears, often seasons of fa-



vour, comforting and supporting the minds of these dear friends under trials of faith of no common kind.

It will be seen by the perusal of the foregoing extracts, that our dear friends had abundant cause experimentally to adopt the language of the Psalmist, "The floods have lifted up, O Lord! the floods have lifted up their voice, the floods lift up their waves. The Lord on high is mightier than the noise of many waters, yea than the mighty waves of the sea." "Thou rulest the raging of the sea; when the waves thereof arise, thou stillest them."

In Daniel Wheeler's last communication from Hobart Town, bearing date the 21st of tenth month, the following passages occur. "Soon after my last letters, &c., were finally closed, and a few hours before the *Cleopatra* sailed, our dear friends, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker returned to Hobart Town; as we had previous information of the time they were expected to arrive, we were at their lodgings in readiness to receive them. They were not strangers to our being here, as the arrival of the 'Henry Freeling,' had been publicly notified in the newspapers, in connexion with my name, as a member of the Society of Friends. Our joy at meeting, so remote from England, I believe was mutual, and can be more easily conceived than described; but it has been since not a little heightened by our having been favoured and strengthened to labour unitedly together, for the promotion of the same great and glorious cause in the different meetings which have been held at this place since their arrival, as also in opportunities of a more private nature."

Respecting the vessel, he says, "on examination, after reaching this port, it was found that several repairs were necessary, both to the upper works of the vessel, and sails and rigging also, as might be expected from the long and tempestuous passage through which we had been favoured so safely to pass; but these are not of such magnitude as to require more than some blacksmith's work, and timber, in addition to our own strength, and stores, for replacing the bulwarks and rails, which were repeatedly destroyed by the heavy seas: in the partial repairs carried on at sea, all our materials were consumed; our crew are now mending the sails, and the principal part of the damage is nearly repaired, and I hope effectually so, for some time to come." In another letter, after mentioning the vessel, he adds, "I think we are unitedly of the opinion, that she is as good a vessel as can be put together, and that if she had not really been such, she never would have been here."

In reference to the ship's company it is very satisfactory to insert the following extracts: "With a little exception, our sailors have exceeded my most sanguine expectations as to behaviour and conduct in general, but I think no men could have suffered more hardships from the weather than they have endured. For a time we gave them some wine, but whether from its becoming flat and

vapid by washing about in the cask, when a quantity of it had been taken out, or with the change from cold to heat, and then to cold again, some of them declined drinking it, on account of its not suiting them, so that they had nothing but water for months together." Again, "It is a little remarkable, that, although they have been sometimes wet, and in wet clothes not for a day or two, but for a week together, when their teeth have chattered with cold, with no warm food, the sea having put the fires out, even below the deck, and the water filtering through the deck on their beds below, and not a dry garment to change, yet not a single instance of the cramp has occurred amongst them, nor the slightest appearance of the scurvy, even in those who have before-time been afflicted with it, and still bear the marks about them; and with the solitary instance of one man, who was forced to quit the deck for two hours during his watch, from being taken unwell, every man and boy have stood throughout the whole in a remarkable manner. They have been plentifully supplied with fresh provisions and vegetables since we arrived, and with some malt liquor also, but their character for sobriety and temperance, and general good behaviour, has warranted every reasonable indulgence likely to conduce to their health and welfare."

Respecting his future prospects, our friend thus writes: "My dear friends will perhaps remember that the Society Islands have always been the primary object before my mind, and this originally gave rise to the intention of our making the attempt to reach them by the way of Cape Horn as the nearest route. And although Van Diemen's Land and New South Wales are also included in the certificates granted me, yet the Society Isles are still the object bright before me, as the first point of destination to be aimed at." He then observes, "It is expected that we shall be ready to leave this port in about a fortnight, and as it appears that our dear friends, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, are now about closing their engagements in Van Diemen's Land, and will be ready to proceed hence at the same time, we therefore propose conveying them to Port Jackson, where it is my intention to call, for the purpose of recruiting our stock of coals, oil, &c., all of which, are extremely high in price at Hobart Town, and may be purchased in Sydney at a reasonable rate. As our course will be round the northern extremity of New Zealand, we shall have but a trifling distance extra to perform, by hauling in for the coast of New Holland."

Since the foregoing, further letters and extracts from his Journal to the 12th of first month, 1835, have been received, by which it appears, that soon after Daniel Wheeler despatched his letters, &c. of the 21st of tenth month, he became so seriously ill, as to render his recovery doubtful, both to himself and others, respecting which, he says, "for a time it almost seemed as if I had come to Van Diemen's Land to lay down my head there, but in this pros-

pect, peaceful resignation to whatever should be the will of my heavenly Father, was the stay and comfort of my mind, bearing it up above the bondage of fear even to a degree of rejoicing, in humble trust and confidence in the inconceivable love of Him who 'came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance;' permitting them to know and sensibly feel the riches of that universal heavenly grace, which triumphs over all the depravities of human nature, where its operations are submitted to; begetting a faith, that can remove every mountain of sin and opposition, and give the victory over death, hell, and the grave, to all who believe in its powerful and saving efficacy, who 'live not unto themselves, but unto Him who died for them and rose again,' and 'because he lives, they live also,' through the mercy of God, in their crucified and glorified Redeemer, and risen Lord. My Charles was also unwell for some time, but is again, with myself, gaining strength." Daniel Wheeler adds, "The complaint at length settled upon my lungs. The season was particularly late and cold, deep snow was lying upon the mountains in sight; and cold rains almost daily falling in torrents, rendered the streets and roads in the town nearly impassable, excepting a few of the principal thoroughfares that are macadamized. No regularly formed footpaths are yet established in any part of the colony; so that getting about on foot was almost impracticable for invalids, although in an advanced stage of convalescence. But although our intentions have been thus frustrated, yet I am persuaded that all things which have hitherto been permitted, have been mercifully dispensed, and have worked, and will continue to work together for good, and that the lengthened continuance of cold winterly weather has been best for us, and will much more effectually serve to brace us, and prepare our constitutions for the relaxing and constant heat that we shall meet with amongst the Society Islands. Besides the advantages which have been thus derived, I am firm in the belief, that our protracted stay in this neighbourhood will ultimately be found to have been in the ordering of Divine wisdom, however apparently at the moment, impeding the great object before me, which it has been my earnest and anxious solicitude to accomplish while the earthly tabernacle retains a good degree of strength." In a letter dated Second month 2nd, 1835, he adds, "By this detention an opportunity was afforded for a complete and satisfactory arrangement not only of our own affairs, but of those of our dear friends, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker. The arrival of a ship, (the *Auriga* from London,) in this interim, having brought out for them a variety of books, tracts, &c., which were much needed for distribution in Van Diemen's Land, it seemed to crown all their labours, and enable them to depart in peace."

After making several visits to their friends, to take leave, previous to their departure, (respecting which, some interesting par-



ticulars are mentioned,) our friends, in company with James Backhouse and George W. Walker, weighed anchor in the evening of the 11th of Twelfth month, having previously had a parting opportunity in the family of the lieutenant governor, George Arthur, who has uniformly treated them with kindness and hospitality. They had, however, no sooner left the "quiet moorings of the Derwent River," than they had to encounter the buffetings of the stormy main. He adds, "The pilot left us at day-break, and at eleven o'clock in the forenoon we were under our new storm-trysail, and storm-jib, in the midst of strong contrary gales, and rainy weather." This was more or less the case, during the passage from the Derwent to Port Jackson. On the 17th, they discovered "Cape Howe on the coast of New Holland." On the 18th, in sight of Mount Dromedary and Montague Island. In the night of the 19th, they were in considerable danger of being driven amongst the rocks by some unknown current, but were favoured to discover and escape the danger in time, "although the night was dark, and much rain falling." Daniel Wheeler adds, "although the danger which threatened was evident and imminent, yet our little company were preserved in quietness, and divested of fear." At eight o'clock, A. M., next day, the 20th, they "were abreast of Botany Bay; at eleven o'clock, saw the light-house and signal-staff on the South Head, which forms one side of the entrance of Port Jackson. A timely signal having been made, we got a pilot on board on nearing the reef, and immediately worked up the bay towards the harbour. At two o'clock, P. M., we were favoured safely to anchor in Sidney Cove, at a convenient distance from the shore; before anchoring, the mail, with which we had been entrusted from Van Diemen's Land, was duly conveyed to the post-office at Sidney." Our dear friends met with a cordial reception there, not only from persons to whom they had letters of recommendation, but from many others also; marks of respect, kindness, and hospitality were also shown them by the governor and local authorities. Meetings for worship, on first and fifth-days, were regularly held on board the vessel during their stay, which several persons usually attended. Some particulars of their engagements during their stay, will be found in the following extracts. The deplorable situation of some of the aboriginal inhabitants, is thus described:

Twelfth month 23d. "After dinner, we landed on an uninhabited part of the coast, on the north side of the harbour, to obtain sufficient exercise; and accidentally met with an aboriginal family, consisting of two females, one of them far advanced in years, and three children, the offspring of the younger woman. There were two men not far off, who belonged to them, but they kept aloof. These women appeared to be in a poor state of health, and exceedingly shrunk: they could talk a little English, and on our making them some trifling presents, and saying that some of us

would see them again, if they should be there to-morrow, one of them said, 'You welcome, come.' It was affecting to behold the degraded condition of these natives of the soil. The state of these poor creatures has been rendered abundantly more miserable and unhappy, since the English have taken possession of their country, from the introduction of vices to which they were before strangers; particularly the use of spirituous liquors.

Twelfth month 24th. "We sent some biscuit to the native family on the north side of the bay, by the mate and my son Charles, who saw two other families of these people in the course of their excursion. Their debased condition is greater than can well be conceived, and such as to render every attempt to assist them fruitless: if money is handed to them, it is immediately exchanged for rum; or if clothes, they are forthwith sold or exchanged for whatever will procure strong drink; such is the curse entailed upon them since their acquaintance with the British, who are doubtless chargeable, not only on this score, but for much of the demoralization and degradation of these harmless people.

Twelfth month 26th. "This morning we received a visit from William Pascoe Crook, one of the missionaries that first went to Tahiti, in the ship Duff, many years ago. The letters he had very recently received from the Society Islands, enabled him to communicate much interesting intelligence, some of which, was of an encouraging nature, although many mournful facts were at the same time related in them. A young man accompanied William Pascoe Crook on board the 'Henry Freeling,' the son of a missionary, who was contemporary with him in the ship Duff."

Having been on shore in the evening, Daniel Wheeler remarks, "On returning towards the boat, we were abruptly thanked by a negro for what we had done for their colour. At first, we did not understand what he meant, but soon found he was alluding to the exertions of our Society for the 'total abolition of slavery.' He had come from the Mauritius, on his way home to Jamaica, and was waiting for a ship bound for Europe, or America, in order to get thither. Although the abolition of slavery could never have been effected, but through Divine interposition, yet it was pleasant to find that any of the instruments employed in the work were remembered with sensations of gratitude.

Twelfth month 27th. "At ten o'clock, A. M., we called upon the Colonial Secretary, who accompanied us to the Government House. We were kindly received by the governor, Sir Richard Bourke, who being informed that James Backhouse was desirous to visit the penal settlement upon Norfolk Island, readily gave his consent, at the same time saying, that no person was ordinarily allowed to go there; but under present circumstances there would be no objection. He lamented the low state of religion and morality upon that island. The account of the prisoners there, as furnished by Dr. Marshall, of the Alligator sloop of war, is truly

deplorable and affecting. About one thousand persons reside upon the island. When I first understood that it was the intention of our dear friend, James Backhouse, to pay an early visit to the settlement upon that island, I shrunk at the thought of going thither: a feeling which was, I believe, induced principally by the desire of hastening to Tahiti, without any further sacrifice of time. But, as the subject dwelt with weight upon my mind, and as I abode under it, without consulting any one, I had a clear and lively impression, that if I gave up to conveying our dear friends, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker to Norfolk Island, my beloved friends in England would unite in this measure, when all the circumstances of the case were made known and considered. I became willing to inform the governor that I proposed to convey them in the 'Henry Freeling,' but not until he had made the inquiry how they were to get there, as no vessels are allowed to touch at that island, except those belonging to the government, which are but few in number, and seldom go thither, and none of them were about to sail at the present juncture. It is therefore presumed, that ample time will be afforded to our friends, if conveyed there by the 'Henry Freeling,' to perform what service may be called for at their hands, and be ready to return to New South Wales by the first government vessel which may arrive after their landing; or it may be, by the second, as duty may demand, or longer tarriance become needful. Before leaving the governor, we had an assurance that proper documents and private signals should be furnished by the Colonial Office, to enable us to approach Norfolk Island without difficulty. An allowance of the usual rations for the subsistence of our friends during their residence at that settlement, was also mentioned. Since I have given up to convey our friends to Norfolk Island, my mind has been peaceful and easy, and the way has opened with clearness, circumstances at once consoling and confirming. This island is no great distance out of our regular course to Tahiti, and bears from hence about east and by north half-north, distant less than one thousand miles.

Twelfth month 30th. "At noon we received a visit from Samuel C. Marsden, who has been connected with this colony, in and out, more than forty years, as a church missionary. He has been six times in New Zealand, and speaks highly in favour of its enterprising inhabitants, with whom he has so frequently resided in peace and safety, and amongst whom, he would have no fear whatever of dwelling again, if occasion required it. His great experience in these parts, venerable grey hairs—the plainness and simplicity of his manners, and the abundant store of authentic information he possesses, made his company not only edifying but animating."\*

It appears that our friends had, during their stay, several visits

---

\* This devoted servant of Christ is since deceased; he died on the 12th of the fifth month of the present year. (1838.)



from this interesting individual, as also from some other pious characters, several of whom were occupying prominent stations in different religious societies.

First month 7th, 1835. "Having at times for the last two or three days, felt my mind drawn towards holding a public meeting with the inhabitants of Sidney, and dear James Backhouse unexpectedly inquiring whether I had thought any thing of such a meeting, I felt a willingness to unite with him in the freedom of the Gospel, to appoint one, and to take the necessary steps to procure a suitable place to hold it in."

The old court-house was obtained, and the meeting held at six o'clock in the evening of the 11th of First month, which appears to have been a satisfactory and relieving opportunity: respecting which Daniel Wheeler thus writes:—

"Notwithstanding another meeting was to be held under the same roof at seven o'clock, appointed by a Baptist preacher, yet we had the satisfaction to witness a crowded attendance at ours, of nearly five hundred persons; and many that could not be seated, went away altogether, but a large number stood the whole time: perhaps from the novelty of its being the first meeting of Friends for public worship held at Sidney, and we hope, on the part of many, from a desire to be benefitted, the room was presently filled. Several present, were persons who held public stations in the town and neighbourhood. It was upon the whole, from beginning to end, a solid opportunity: James Backhouse and myself were largely opened in testimony amongst them. James Backhouse appeared a second time, and concluded the meeting in prayer. From the quietness and solemnity which reigned throughout the whole time of the meeting, it might have been supposed that the congregation assembled, consisted wholly of persons accustomed to stillness and silence, instead of an audience, of which scarcely an individual had ever before been present at a Friends' meeting, or was even aware of the manner in which they are usually conducted. But the glory was and is the Lord's."

The following third-day, the 13th, James Backhouse and himself, by invitation, paid a visit to the governor at his house at Parramatta, on which he remarks, "However humiliating such visits may be to myself, they may have a tendency to promote the great work, and open the way in the minds of those in power, to contribute to its furtherance, and this brings into a willingness to be held up as a spectacle before men for the Great Name's sake. But on such occasions, great circumspection and watchfulness are increasingly needful, lest any of our testimonies should be let fall or compromised, and the enemy have to exult in the loss we sustain." It appears there were present several public functionaries, military officers, &c., together with the son of the lieutenant governor of Van Diemen's Land. Daniel Wheeler adds: "It was ascertained, whilst on this visit, that it is in contemplation to build a large hospital for

insane persons in the neighbourhood, which afforded an opportunity for James Backhouse to furnish the governor with 'Samuel Tuke's Account of the Retreat,' and with his pamphlet, entitled, 'Practical hints;' both these contain important information, highly needful for those about to establish such an institution."

The following extracts respecting the ship's company, from Daniel Wheeler's later letters, give proof of their continued stability.

First month 21st. "I have found the advantage of placing our sailors upon rather a different, and more respectable footing than those of other ships, and the result has been, so far, that we have had comparatively no trouble with them. It is so common a thing for the shipping to lose their men here, that a few days ago, the question was put to me by General Bourke, the governor, 'Have you lost any of your men?' and it is satisfactory to know, that some of the strangers who have attended our meetings on board, have, in more than one instance, remarked, (as if of rare occurrence,) that our sailors look more like healthy, fresh-faced farmers, than men come off a long voyage: the generality of those we see daily, have a thin and worn-down appearance, particularly when they belong to ships that supply them daily with ardent spirits; while our sailors have each a quart of beer per day, of weak quality, being brewed, as is customary here, with only sugar and hops, both of which are very cheap."

Daniel Wheeler adds: "I found it advisable to keep up a desire in the crew to make themselves acquainted with the art of navigation, and this could not be done without their being furnished with materials for its accomplishment, such as quadrants, slates, pens, paper, &c.; and though the expense of such things ultimately devolves upon themselves, yet, at the moment of purchase, the advance of money has been unavoidable on my part."

It is highly satisfactory and encouraging to find by letters from time to time received, that the seaman who was so powerfully arrested by conviction of the error of his ways, continues to maintain his integrity, conducts himself with propriety, and has recently attended their meetings.

Second month 4th. "The Metcalf, Captain Phillimore, unexpectedly intending to sail to-morrow, I hasten to close this third series of extracts from my Journal, although only transcribed to the 12th ult., as there are several other ships, which will be shortly ready for sea, and it will be better not to risk too much in one vessel."

On the 26th of the Ninth month, letters to the 4th of Third month, and extracts from the Journal of Daniel Wheeler, to the 20th of Second month, 1835, were received, from which it appears, that during their stay at Sidney, they had several opportunities of conversation with a number of persons of different religious persuasions, and were also frequently in the company of

members of the government. On the 27th of First month, they had an interview with the governor, and another on the 12th of Second month, when on the point of sailing, principally on the subject of the visit to Norfolk Island, in which a kind feeling towards our friends was manifested. Whilst they were at Sidney, a Temperance Society was established, as also one for the education of children on the British and Foreign School Society's system. Our friends were detained there longer than they anticipated, the principal cause of which, the following extracts, &c., will explain.

First month 27th, (*third-day*,) Daniel Wheeler writes: "For the last three or four days I have been in a low and stripped situation; and while anxious to be getting on our way towards the islands, could not come to any decision and clearness sufficient to enable me to fix the time for our sailing. This morning, dear James Backhouse asked me if I had felt any thing as to another public meeting with the inhabitants of Sidney." This subject occupied their close and serious consideration, when they unitedly agreed that one should be appointed to be held the following *first-day* evening, as the most suitable time, and that extensive notice should be given thereof. Daniel Wheeler adds: "I felt relieved, and willing to take a share with him in that exercise of mind, which, with me, at all times, precedes a prospect of such magnitude and importance."

The old court-house was again procured, and the meeting held at six o'clock on the evening of the following *first-day*, the 1st of Second month, which was as numerous attended as the former one, and proved a relieving opportunity.

Under date of 4th of Second month, (*fourth-day*,) Daniel Wheeler writes: "As James Backhouse has for a day or two been under no small concern of mind from an apprehension that an attempt must be made to collect the sailors of the fleet now in Sidney, at this time very considerable; and as this is not likely to be accomplished but on a *first-day*; there seems now no probability of our proceeding towards Norfolk Island during the present week. The crews of the ships had not wholly escaped the notice of my mind, for several days previous to James Backhouse mentioning the subject to me, but not in any manner as of pressing obligation towards seeking a religious opportunity with this class of the people exclusively, but yet sufficient to raise a feeling of unity with him in the engagement. Upon inquiry, it seemed to be the general opinion that meetings were mostly best attended by sailors when held on board of ship; application was thereupon made to Captain John Hart, of the ship 'Henry Porcher,' who readily granted the use of that vessel's deck for the intended purpose, in the forenoon of the following *first-day*." The meeting was held accordingly on the 8th of Second month, and was attended by about 130 persons, on which Daniel Wheeler thus writes: "James Backhouse was largely engaged both in testimony and supplication.



It was my lot to keep silence, although I could spiritually unite in the labours of the day, under a sense of the states of some in particular, of those by whom we were surrounded. After the meeting had concluded, a large number of Friends' tracts, and those of the Temperance Society, were distributed, and received with eagerness as the company returned to their boats."

---

## CHAPTER IV.

Sail from Sidney—meetings on ship board—arrive off Norfolk Island—parting with James Backhouse and George Washington Walker—sail for the Society Islands—equinoctial gale—enter the Torrid Zone—Maitea—arrive at Tahiti—first interview with the natives—visit from the king—prohibition of ardent spirits—meeting of the missionaries and natives at Papáoa.

On finally quitting the shore on the 12th of Second month, he writes thus:—

"The day we first landed in New South Wales, we were saluted by a most appalling volley of dreadful oaths and imprecations, from some of the poor intoxicated creatures, in the garb of sailors, that were standing about the stairs; but now, on quitting its shores, I am thankful in believing that we have the prayers and good wishes of many, however weak and feeble those are who offer them; and I think we can say, that under a deep sense of utter unworthiness, on leaving we were 'honoured with many honours,' on the part of some."

They sailed the following morning, and "at noon," he adds, "we stretched off the land into the Southern Pacific, with a strong opposing wind, which increasing, soon raised a troublesome swell of the sea. From the 14th to the 20th, we continued to beat against adverse winds, although the weather remained fine for the most part. The heat below was oppressive, which kept all our passengers but myself in a sickly state for the first four days, since which, they have been far from well, as a considerable swell of the sea from the north-eastward kept up an incessant motion of the vessel."

The following extract from the Journal of our friend, James Backhouse, between Sidney and Norfolk Island, relative to the seamen on board the "Henry Freeling," affords satisfactory information.

"It is pleasing to see the seamen of the 'Henry Freeling' instructing one another in nautical observations and calculations; the carpenter is a good navigator, and since he became a steady man he has taken pleasure in instructing the other sailors, who appear to be improving in knowledge and conduct. They strongly exemplify the benefit of temperance principles on board ship. They are allowed beer when it is to be had, and as much tea, coffee, or

cocoa, as they like. There is no swearing to be heard, and the men have the appearance of comfort, and spend their leisure in improving reading, &c. Happily, neither the captain nor mate makes a foolish mystery about the course of the vessel, such as is common on board many ships, by which the sailors are kept in ignorance, to no purpose, unless it be to enable the captain and officers to puff themselves up with an unworthy conceit, of knowing more than those under them, and keep the sailors in a state of degradation, inimical to good morals and conduct."

Whilst the foregoing was in the press, further extracts from the Journal of our dear friend, Daniel Wheeler, from the 22nd of Second month, 1835, to the 13th of Fifth month, and letters to the 19th of Fifth month, have been received, from which the following particulars are extracted:—

Second month 22nd, 1835. "Yesterday the weather was fine and clear, but the wind contrary. Several flying-fish made their appearance; an albatros and some smaller birds in the course of the day. To-day the weather is still beautifully fine: our invalids pretty much restored from sea-sickness, and being the first day of the week, portions of the Holy Scriptures were read to the ship's company assembled upon the deck. During the time of silence in the morning, James Backhouse contrasted and compared the management of a ship at sea with the spiritual progress of each individual, showing the constant attention at all times necessary, in both cases, in order to be enabled to steer a true and steady course towards the great object of our voyage, both as regards an earthly and a heavenly port. The latter part of the forenoon we sat down together in the cabin; towards the conclusion, I thought I was made sensible of a renewal of strength to wrestle for the blessing.

26th. (*Fifth-day*.) "In the forenoon we sat down together, in the cabin, to wait upon the Lord: much poverty and weakness were sensibly felt. The wind still adverse, with considerable swell of the sea, but fine and pleasant weather.

Second month 27th. "At breakfast-time a sail in sight, the first vessel that had been seen for fourteen days past. Soon after noon she bore down upon us, and came within hail. She proved to be the Elizabeth of Sidney, Captain Foster, on a whaling voyage.

Third month 1st. (*First-day*.) "To-day we assembled the crew, both in the forenoon and afternoon. James Backhouse alluded to a text of Scripture which had been read, 'Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you,' explaining the spiritual intercourse and communion of the Holy Spirit with the soul of man, and that the blessed partaking of the flesh and blood of the Son of Man, 'can be witnessed by those only in whom Christ dwells, and they in him,' &c. After dinner the wind became more favourable, and gradually increased to a fine breeze.

Third month 3d. "The wind having continued fresh and fair since

yesterday, and the sea not heavy, but following the vessel, the distance from Norfolk Island, at noon, was found to be 81 miles.

4th. (*Fourth-day*.) "Soon after day break this morning, we bore up, and made sail to the northward, with a fresh and leading wind. At day-light, we got sight of land, and gliding rapidly towards it, Mount Pitt, on Norfolk Island, and Philip Island, were both plainly in sight soon after breakfast. When near enough to the Penal Settlement station, we made the private signal, as per written instructions, received from the government at Sidney. Soon after this, a boat was discovered coming from the shore, in the direction of our vessel, which at length arrived with a military officer, who brought us a hearty welcome from the commandant, Major Anderson, accompanied by an invitation to his house. On ascertaining that, although the landing was dangerous, it was yet practicable in a suitable boat, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker concluded to make an attempt to return with this officer. When all things were ready, and my letters for England delivered to the care of James Backhouse, we were thus hastily and unexpectedly torn from each other, at a short notice; and although time was only afforded to take an abrupt farewell, yet we all keenly felt the separating moment, but, I trust, with feelings that will lastingly remain, through the frequent renewal of Divine love. As the boat was not adapted for taking more than two or three passengers, it was agreed that upon its reaching the shore, if then practicable, a larger boat should be sent off immediately for the luggage.

Third month 5th. (*Fifth-day*.) "The boat not reaching us yesterday in consequence of rough weather, at an early hour this morning we edged down towards the Penal Settlement, and a boat was shortly afterwards discovered to be making towards the vessel from the shore, which eventually proved to be the conveyance for the luggage of our dear friends; which being safely loaded, and a few lines written to James Backhouse, requesting him to acknowledge the kindness of the commandant on our behalf, the boat put off from the vessel, when we immediately began to beat off the coast in earnest, and passing between the islands of Nepean and Philip, at ten o'clock, A. M., once more launched forth on the capacious bosom of the Southern Pacific. The island called Nepean, is little more than a large barren-looking rock, but said to abound with rabbits. Philip Island exhibits more fertility, and is famous for being overrun with hogs. The officer that came on board informed us, that a party had been sent from the settlement the preceding week over to Philip Island, and had succeeded in shooting and returning with eighty of these animals. Norfolk Island appears from the offing to be about half the size of the Isle of Wight, but richly covered in places with a beautiful pine, peculiar to that island, and which we had seen growing in the neighbourhood of Sidney, having been transported thither by



the governor and other individuals. The valleys abound with lemons, limes, grapes, guavas, &c., as per note from James Backhouse, since landing upon it.

“For some days previous to making Norfolk Island, my mind was at times drawn to consider whether I might not have to land upon it myself, and remain a few days, but I believe I may venture to say, that I did not in the slightest degree perceive that it formed any part of my duty to do so; neither on receiving the commandant’s invitation, nor afterwards on an expression of regret communicated by note from James Backhouse, did any thing arise in my heart as if I flinched from that service. His note says, ‘Much regret is expressed that you did not come on shore, and I hope if you feel inclined to come, you will yet do so, though I do not regret you did not come with us, as we got a surf on our backs, and the boat’s nose upon a rock: but though thus permitted to feel the danger of landing, by the good providence of our merciful heavenly Father, we were preserved from further suffering. If we do not see you again before you proceed to Tahiti, I will once more bid you farewell in the Lord. May He continue in condescending goodness still to be with you, and qualify for every good word and work, to His own glory and your peace; and may his good Spirit still more and more work into subjection to Himself the shipmen of your vessel, that you may have increasing comfort in them.’ Having thus been favoured to accomplish the landing of our beloved friends and brothers, with their luggage, (however much their absence may be felt,) without a detention of more than twenty-two hours, the suspense and anxiety with which my mind had been filled, from a knowledge of the great uncertainty and risk which at all times attends such an undertaking, where there is no shelter from the surf of the wide ocean, were wholly relieved and removed.

“It being our usual meeting-day, dear Charles and myself sat down together in the forenoon, and although stripped indeed as to the outward, yet comforted from a sensible evidence that a most merciful and gracious Lord remains to be ‘God over all blessed for ever.’

Third month 8th. (*First-day.*) “Yesterday the weather continued unsettled and showery, and to-day, the wind contrary, but with fresh gales and clear weather. We read portions of the Holy Scriptures twice in the course of the day, in the cabin, as the state of the weather and a heavy swell of the sea prevented our assembling upon deck. At sun-set we fell in with a shoal of spermaceti whales, one of the largest in sight passed by the side of our vessel, at a distance of ten or twelve yards. This fish would contain about fifty barrels of oil. There were at least twenty of them within a small compass around the ‘Henry Free-ling,’ which it is probable formed but a small part of the shoal.

10th. (*Third-day.*) “Since leaving Norfolk Island, but more

particularly within the last three or four days, it has been to me at times a trying, proving season of much strippedness and poverty every way. The loss of the company of our dear friends, with whom we had been pretty closely and sweetly connected for more than five months, either by sea or land, the steady opposition of the winds since we separated, the great distance we have yet to go, the advanced state of the season, towards the autumn in these regions; and yet above all, the absence of Him in whom my soul delighteth, combined to weigh down and oppress my poor, tossed mind, beyond the usual degree towards nothingness and abasement of self. But in the depths, although unable to draw nigh, I endeavoured to look towards the Holy Temple; I remembered the Lord, and my prayer was, I trust, permitted to come in unto Him; and He remembered a poor unworthy creature, and in his own way and time, was graciously pleased to speak comfort, and to seal instruction. The affecting instance of the dear Son of God himself was brought to my remembrance, 'who was made sin for us, who knew no sin,' and died, 'the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God,' when, in the very act of child-like and lamb-like obedience, and meek submission to his Holy Father's will, from the extreme depth and weight of suffering upon Him for the sins of poor, lost, guilty man, He poured forth the agonizing query, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' and I am renewedly persuaded that these trials, and proving baptisms, are all in unutterable and inconceivable love and mercy dispensed for the preservation of that precious life which is hid with Christ in God.

Third month 15th. "Assembled the crew together twice in the day, for devotional purposes, it being first-day. During the latter part of the interval of silence in the afternoon, petitions were raised in my heart to the Throne of Grace, for the best welfare of our little company. A whole year has now passed away since we sailed from the Mother-bank, and although more than seven months of that time have been spent upon the mighty deep, and with the exception of a few transient intervals, out of sight of land altogether, yet such is the boundless and unmerited mercy of Him with whom we have to do, that if the question were asked, 'Lackest thou any thing?' 'Nothing, Lord,' would immediately be responded.

Third month 16th. "This afternoon we were in the latitude of Cartes Island, Macauley's Rock, and several others of recent discovery, extending from this latitude northward for more than 200 miles, and some of them level with the surface of the sea; therefore at six o'clock, P. M., we tacked, and stood to the southward, rather than risk being driven too near such treacherous neighbours.

Fourth month 1st. "By nine o'clock last night, the wind became quite fair, but in a short time it began to blow strong, and the sea rose so rapidly, that at midnight we again hove to, under

strong storm-sails. As the mercury continued gradually to lower in the tube, and the storm to increase with appalling violence, there now seemed no doubt but an equinoctial gale had overtaken our often-tried little bark. It raged with great fury throughout the night, and returning day seemed only to increase its strength. At noon the sea wrought in an awful manner, and frequently the white crests of the mountain billows were carried off by the sweeping and irresistible tempest, and uniting together flew in one continued mass of drift several yards above the rugged surface, with incredible force. Yet on this, as well as on former occasions, the Divine Arm of everlasting love and strength was not only near for our support, to compass us about as with a shield, but mercifully to overshadow us with a canopy of peaceful resignation. Not a sea was permitted to injure our vessel, and even the weaker part of her upper works remained unbroken through it all. How correct is the animating declaration of the Psalmist, 'The Lord sitteth on the flood; the Lord sitteth King for ever.' And is it not encouragingly verified? 'The Lord will give strength unto his people:' those that fear, love, honour, and obey Him, these are his people, and 'the Lord will bless his people with peace.'

Fourth month 15th. "Fresh and favourable gales, we made great progress, and to all appearance, the wind we had been so long expecting was fairly set in, and we were once more venturing to look forward to a termination for a time, of our 'perils by sea.' But the pleasant anticipation was shortly afterwards disappointed, by its being ascertained that from our present position a dangerous reef lay directly across our path, which at the rate we were sailing we should probably get close upon by the setting sun. As the sea was running pretty heavy it seemed doubtful whether we could pass to the southward of this reef, it was therefore concluded best, as suggested by my Charles, that our course should be forthwith altered sufficiently to insure our passing it in safety to leeward, which was accordingly done. As the exact position of this reef cannot be fully relied on, any more than that of our vessel, owing to the clouded state of the atmosphere of late, we seem to have no outward prop to lean upon through the cheerless gloom of darkness; but we well know there is a Power almighty and all-merciful, whose compassionate eye never slumbers.

Fourth month 23d. (*Fifth-day*.) "At two o'clock, P. M. yesterday we passed the tropic of Capricorn, and entered the torrid zone. The latitude at noon was  $23^{\circ} 38'$  south. By lunar distance, well taken this morning, the longitude was found to be  $142^{\circ} 36'$  west. The latitude of Tahiti  $17^{\circ} 29'$  south, longitude  $149^{\circ} 28'$  west. As the wind now blows, our being so far to the eastward is an advantage, in making it completely fair for us.

27th inst. "Yesterday, though heavy rain fell near us throughout the day, we were not prevented from assembling in the usual manner twice in the course of it, it being first-day. At noon to-day,



the island of Maitea was distant fifty miles. It would have been relieving to have come within sight of this island before dark, but although the horizon was pretty clear at sun-set in that direction, it could not be distinguished from the mast-head. Many birds have been daily with us latterly, a fact which strongly indicates our approach to land; and the course which these take for their evening flight, speaks in plain language where it lies.

Fourth month 28th. "At day-break this morning, Maitea was in sight, but the wind being light and fickle through the day, it was night-fall before we had fairly passed it by. The island is now used as a penal settlement for Tahiti, to which notorious characters are banished by the queen. Last evening a sufficient number of albi-coas and bonitos were caught by the sailors, to furnish the whole of us throughout the day with fresh meals; and as it was more than six weeks since we had had one, they proved very acceptable.

"This morning, 29th of Fourth month, about half-past one o'clock, the mountains of the long-looked-for Tahiti, were discovered through the gloom upon our lee-bow. It will be eleven weeks to-morrow since we left Sidney, and with the exception of the equinoctial gale, we have during the voyage, for the most part, been favoured with fine weather, but with an unheard-of proportion (for these seas) of contrary winds during nearly the whole time, completely setting at naught all former supposed experience. After leaving Norfolk Island we traversed from twenty-nine to forty degrees of south latitude, in the hope of finding the westerly winds, which usually prevail, to waft us to the eastward; but could never meet with them to any purpose, and since we entered the trade latitudes, to this day we have been in constant expectation of meeting with the south-east trade-winds, to enable us to fetch the island of Tahiti, and have in this been equally unsuccessful. We have, however, after traversing various zigzag courses over more than 5000 miles of ocean, by the log, since leaving Sidney, been guided to a hair's breadth, in so remarkable a manner, as to get the first sight of the island when nearly dark, the moon not being twelve hours old at the time. The darkness and the light are both alike to Him, who hath been with us, to bless and preserve us; enabling us in degree to 'glory in tribulation,' and to bear even privation for his name's sake, with peaceful resignation, and not worthy of being recounted, because of the love, and peace, and joy, which at seasons have been our happy portion.

Fourth month 30th. "At noon passed through Matavai bay. A canoe with four of the natives came off to us, bringing oranges, guavas, and other kinds of fruit, which we purchased, after much bargaining, for a hank of thread, and three small needles to each individual, although the price they first asked was a dollar for each basket; there were five baskets of fruit. We were all pleased with the openness and simplicity of these people. At 2 o'clock, P. M., we took Jemmy the pilot on board, and immediately entered the chan-

nel within the reefs, but after getting through the most dangerous part, it fell calm, which obliged us to drop an anchor for the night, directly opposite the house of George Bicknell, so close to the shore that a mooring hawser was made fast to one of his cocoanut-trees. By this time our deck was covered with the natives. Just as we were ready to go on shore to take tea at George Bicknell's, (to whom, as deputy consul, the mail brought from New South Wales had been delivered,) the young king (or perhaps it is more correct to say, the husband of the queen) came on board, with his younger brother and uncle, and several others; they behaved with great openness and cheerfulness, and seemed highly pleased to see us. Our captain was personally known to them already. They soon looked round the vessel, apparently delighted, left us a basket of oranges, and said they would come again to-morrow. To my great rejoicing, the pilot soon after coming on board, informed us (officially) of the disuse of ardent spirits altogether, by saying, 'Rum is no good here.' The total prohibition of spirituous liquors has been so strongly enforced, that they have taken them out of private houses, without exception, and thrown them away; and the natives have carried it to the length of smelling the breath of people, to ascertain whether it had been used, and, if found to be the case, a severe fine was imposed; so that a person well known to lead a thoroughly sober life was not allowed to have such a thing in his possession, but was liable at any time to undergo a search.

Fifth month 1st. (*Sixth-day*.) "At day-break the pilot came on board, and the breeze being favourable, the vessel was got ready, and run gently down to Papeéte Harbour; the water was so clear, that the beautifully spreading branches of coral could be plainly distinguished as we passed over the most shallow parts of the reef. About nine o'clock, A. M., we took up our station in a well-sheltered cove or harbour, surrounded by straggling houses, and plantations of the cocoanut-tree, banana, bread-fruit, orange, and sugar cane, ranging along the edge of the sea, on the level land at the foot of the mountains. In the forenoon, Dr. Vaughan came on board, who had recently arrived in a whaling vessel from London, and George Pritchard, the resident missionary, soon after. For George Pritchard, we were bearers of many letters and parcels, which proved very acceptable. In the afternoon, we visited his habitation, and were kindly received by his wife and family. George Pritchard very kindly inquired whether I wished to be at the worship of the Tahitians, next first-day, but I informed him that I believed it would be best for me to be with my own crew on that day.

"Having endeavoured to keep my mind exercised to ascertain the will of my Lord and Master, it was with me to tell him that the first step which I had to take, was to request a conference with the whole of the missionaries in this district; asking him if they had any stated times for meeting together by themselves; he said they had, but a special meeting could be convened for the occasion.

On considering a little, he found that their next quarterly meeting in regular course was to be held the second week in the present month. As the month was already come in, I thought it would be unreasonable to subject the parties to the inconvenience of meeting on purpose, as their own meeting would still necessarily have to be held on the appointed day, more especially as I had several affairs to regulate, and preparation to make, to enable us to barter for supplies, &c. At present, I see no further than to attend this conference, and there produce the certificates furnished by my dear friends in England, humbly trusting, that the path of my future proceeding will be graciously manifested in due time, and strength and perception mercifully afforded to enable me to walk faithfully in it.

"I had been unwell on the 12th inst., but having passed a more favourable night, on the morning of the 13th inst. I felt no hesitation about proceeding to Papáoa, as the day was fair overhead. George Pritchard called with a boat, to take Charles and myself with him, he finding three natives to row, and myself two.

"Having understood that on the present occasion, the principal chiefs from all parts of the island would be there, and a large muster of the inhabitants, residing in this district, it occurred to my mind that it would be a favourable medium, through which my arrival might be publicly announced to all the distant districts, if at a suitable time my certificates should be read. On mentioning this to George Pritchard, and showing him the translation so kindly made before I left London by William Ellis, he at once saw the propriety, but said, it would be necessary to consult Henry Nott, the senior missionary resident at Papáoa, George Pritchard himself being a junior: this was a matter of course, and had I been aware of the distinction, I should myself have proposed it. From the wind having sprang up a fresh breeze against us, we were rather late in reaching our destination, and Henry Nott had taken his seat in the meeting before we got to it. We followed George Pritchard through a large number of people that were already assembled, until we got up to Henry Nott, who, on being consulted, immediately consented that it should be done, when their service was over. We then took our seats, having kept on our hats until that moment: but the heat of the climate renders it too oppressive to keep them on for any great length of time. We heard of no remark, however, having been made on this head, whatever might have been thought. They commenced by George Pritchard giving out a hymn, then part of the Epistle to the Ephesians was read, after which George Pritchard kneeled down and prayed; another hymn was then sung; after this Charles Wilson preached a long sermon from a text out of the same epistle; when this was finished, another hymn was given out, at his request, and he afterwards finished with prayer. Some business then came on relating to the affairs of the Missionary Society, when the island queen took her seat as its President. We merely sat as silent spectators through the whole



of this, which from beginning to end was conducted in the Tahitian language. As only George Pritchard sat between myself and the queen, I observed that she was employed in reading my certificates, which had been previously laid upon the table. The whole of my certificates were then audibly read in the Tahitian language, by George Pritchard, who took great pains to give ample explanation whenever needful. The marked attention and solidity of countenance manifested by the wondering Tahitians, was both striking and comforting; and the solemnity which spread over this large assembly had previously covered my mind as with a mantle, contriting my spirit under a sense, that the great Master himself was there. After the reading of the certificates was gone through, profound silence reigned. I asked if I might say a few words, which was at once permitted, and George Pritchard agreed to interpret between me and the people. I requested him just to repeat what I said, and I have reason to believe this was faithfully done; and was to the best of my recollection after this manner: 'I have no wish to trespass upon the time of this meeting. I was desirous that these documents or certificates might be read, which would account for a stranger being present, and inform all that I came not here in my own will, but in the will of my Lord and Master, whose I am, and whom I desire to serve to my latest breath; and would also let you know that I came with the full unity and consent of that branch of the Christian Church in England, of which I am a member. And now, Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, be multiplied upon all the inhabitants of this land; and may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, keep our hearts and minds,' &c.

"After I sat down, a solemn silence again prevailed, until one of the natives, a supreme Judge, broke it by addressing me by name, which he had caught from the certificates, and declaring on behalf of himself and the islanders, that the manner of my coming among them was very satisfactory, because what had been read and spoken, was in accordance with the Gospel, which they had been taught, and were acquainted with. He also at considerable length touched upon the great distance I had come over the deep waters to see them, and to do them good: that, in return, their hearts, and arms, and habitations, in effect, were open to receive me; duly appreciating the purity and disinterestedness of the motive that had induced the step: having no trade, nor other object in view. He hoped I should visit all their schools, and stroke the heads of the children; that he should now deliver them all into my hands. I told George Pritchard to say, that the dear children would always have a strong hold, and a strong claim upon my heart. Much more transpired that was truly consoling and comforting; and the missionaries who spoke on the occasion, I truly

believe, most fully and cordially co-operated in endeavouring to explain my views to the people in terms of strong approbation.

“Although the above may not be exactly verbatim, it is the substance of what passed. When it was all over, Henry Nott knelt down and concluded the meeting with prayer in the Tahitian. The natives then generally rose from their seats, and began to flock around us, and to shake hands with Charles and myself in a very hearty manner, and without regard to order, age, or sex, from the humble peasant to the bronze-coloured queen, her two aunts, and the numerous chiefs, who, I think, are the stoutest, most giant-like men I ever saw assembled together. About 800 persons were collected at this meeting; but the house was so extensive, that it seemed impossible to make any accurate estimate; for my own part, I should have supposed the number not less than a thousand. The judge before spoken of, in one of his speeches, (for he spoke three times,) hinted, that they perceived I was not exactly of the same description of Christians that had hitherto come amongst them, or I belonged to a different body. This, however, did not seem to stand in the way. Some days previously to this meeting being held, the young king and several chiefs came on board to breakfast, six in number. After breakfast, our usual reading in the Holy Scriptures was introduced, during which they behaved with great attention and propriety; they sat as still, in the time of silence, both then and at the pause before breakfast, as if accustomed to it. When they were about going away, a telescope, and a piece of handkerchiefs were presented to the King, and a shawl to each of the others, with which they seemed highly pleased. Through the medium of an Englishman, who had been sent for on the occasion, the king was told, that I had something in reserve for Pomáre, the queen, expecting she also would pay us a visit. They behaved with much openness and affability, and told us in plain terms that they liked us, because we were like themselves, and did not make ourselves very high to them.

“I had a conference with the missionaries of the Papáoa district, who, although only four in number, are capable of rendering me much assistance in forwarding my views, and interpreting to the people. I was fully aware the missionaries were under an impression, that I was come out to inspect the state of the missions, and particularly that of the schools; private letters had reached them some months ago to that effect from London; but they were informed that now the missionary meeting was over, I was waiting as at the posts of wisdom’s gate, not knowing to what I might next have to turn my hand: this explanation at once placed me in a fresh point of view. An expression of desire to do all in their power to co-operate in the work in any manner I could point out, was, I think, avowed by each individual, and we parted in brotherly love.”

## CHAPTER V.

Tahiti—visit of chiefs—the young king—meeting for sailors—distribution of tracts, Bibles, &c.  
 —temperance ships—introduction of ardent spirits—visit to the schools—attend the native  
 meeting—visitors on board—John Davies—meeting on board—importance of translating  
 and circulating the Scriptures—Tahitian council—native meeting.

TAHITI, 14th of Fifth month, 1835. "This morning, Taatee and his brother, two of the principal chiefs, and truly great in stature, with a grand-daughter of the former, came on board at breakfast-time, bringing with them another person of note. They partook of our meal, and staid over our usual reading in the Scriptures; during which, and in the time of silence, they behaved in a solid manner. These are the most elderly chiefs that we have seen, and perhaps the oldest upon the island; and they are said to be the principal support of the present government. They had been on board once before, but it being late in the evening, they did not stay long. I put a small cotton dress upon the child, and presented a shawl to each of the great men. They invited us to come with the vessel to Mairi Pêhe, where they reside, and on leaving seemed well satisfied with their visit. It being *fifth-day*, Charles and myself endeavoured to wait upon the Lord, but under feelings oppressively languid from the heat.

15th. "My mind having for some days past been brought into thoughtful solicitude for the best welfare of the crews of the vessels now lying at anchor about us, I mentioned it to my Charles soon after rising this morning; and seeing no way of being clear of the blood of these poor neglected people, but by appointing a public meeting, to be held next *first-day*, it was concluded to make the necessary arrangements for so doing. There was no doubt but the deck of one of the whaling vessels might have been procured for the intended purpose; but on considering the subject, it seemed best to have the deck of the 'Henry Freeling' made use of, lest umbrage should be taken by the English sailors if the meeting was held on board an American vessel; or by the American sailors if held on board an English one, in the same calling; both parties considering our own as employed on very different grounds from any other in the bay, might thus be accommodated. There were six American whalers, and one trading vessel, all large and well manned, in the bay; and only one English whaler, the 'Rover,' of London.

"I stepped on shore to inquire whether the eleventh hour, next *first-day*, would interfere with any arrangements the missionaries might have made; that the work of neither party might be marred, and that nothing on our part might appear as done in a corner. On learning at George Pritchard's, that nothing would clash if our meeting was held at that hour, and having invited him or



any part of his family to attend it, we returned immediately on board, and were soon after visited by a serious and respectable person, who had been sent out in 1825, by the London Missionary Society, to teach the natives the art of spinning, weaving, &c.

"The young king and his brother came on board in a private capacity, their visit was much more agreeable than when attended by several of the principal chiefs. They staid dinner, and remained on board several hours. The simple habits, and gentle, unassuming manner of this young man, do not appear at present to be liable to alter from his having become the husband of the queen. The amiable disposition he possesses, and which cannot be concealed, at once renders him an object of general esteem. He has evidently acquired considerable polish from the intercourse with foreigners, of which he does not fail to avail himself at every opportunity; and although from this circumstance, his manners are much more civilized than those of his countrymen; yet now and then, the wild nature of a South Sea Islander shows itself. They brought us some fine bunches of oranges, the largest of which contained eleven in a cluster, and the smallest seven. A sliding knife and fork were presented to each, also a three-bladed knife and a penknife. Shortly after these guests had left us, a chief, by name Páofai, residing near Point Venus, came on board, and made signs that he wished to read my certificates, which were accordingly furnished for his perusal in the Polynesian language, although he could speak more English than any we have yet met with. He is considered a great man, and he was more modest in behaviour than any we have yet seen of his stamp; having observed, while he read the certificate, that his sight was impaired, I presented him with a pair of spectacles; at the same time a pocket-handkerchief and a small hatchet were given him; upon which he said he had no money to pay for them. Such an honest confession we had not before met with, nor with any person who mentioned payment for what they received. He left us with an acknowledgment of the kindness with which he had been treated, and I believe both parties were satisfied with the interview. In the evening, we were engaged in writing notices of the public meeting, intended to be held next *first-day*.

16th. "After breakfast, my Charles went to distribute the written notices amongst the shipping. In the forenoon a quantity of tracts were selected, and parcelled in readiness for distribution at the close of the meeting to morrow.

17th. (*First-day*.) "In the morning the prospect before us was rather gloomy. There had been rain in the night, and soon after daylight the 'Mariner' whaling vessel put to sea; thus the seamen on board of her were prevented from attending the meeting; but I thought there was no reason why they should be deprived of their share of the tracts, which had been got ready for distribution the day before. As the wind was light, there was no diffi-

culty in overtaking her before she got outside of the reef. Our mate was accordingly despatched in good time, and succeeded in handing them on board. They were received with civility, and the requested application of them promised. By the accommodation of some planks kindly provided by the 'Emerald,' our decks were extensively seated, and the planks were well covered with canvass, spare flags, &c.

"At half-past ten o'clock a bethel-flag, with which we have been furnished, was hoisted, as a thing understood by all sailors, and a little in their own way. This allowed half an hour for the boats to collect from each ship, in order that the time appointed (eleven o'clock,) might be kept to, and the quiet of the meeting preserved from late comers on board. But although the invitation, with the exception of George Pritchard's family, had not been extended by us beyond the shipping in the bay, yet several persons attended from the shore:—Doctor Vaughan, Captain Henry, George Bicknell, and some other white people with children, whose copper-coloured skins indicated that they were the offspring of Tahitian mothers.

"The meeting at length settled down into stillness beyond our expectation. I thought there would scarcely be a single individual then present, except our own crew, that had ever before been at a meeting held exclusively after the manner of Friends. In this, however, I found I had been mistaken, as the mate of the 'Lancaster' came on board the next day, and acknowledged he was a member of our Society, though, as he stated, he had not kept close to it. He told us, that he little expected to see a Friends' meeting held amongst these islands, but seemed glad of having an opportunity to attend one.

"However long the time of silence might be thought, there was no restlessness sufficient to disturb the quiet of the meeting. Unexpectedly to myself, I felt an engagement of mind to state to the meeting, that the religious Society of which I was a member, had, from its earliest rise, been called upon to bear a faithful testimony to the excellency of silent worship and waiting upon God: that it was a noble testimony to the all-sufficiency and teaching of that grace, which had appeared unto all men, teaching all, and bringing salvation to all, 'for the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men, &c., looking for that blessed hope and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour, Jesus Christ,' &c., to the end of the text. 'For God is a Spirit: and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth:' and that we are told in holy writ, (by the Son,) that 'the Father seeketh such to worship him.' I was then carried forth on the nature of true, silent, and spiritual worship, to a considerable length; and then had to state, that my head would not have laid easy upon the pillow at a future day, if the attempt had not been made to collect the seamen of the fleet. That sailors were a class of men

more than most others, separated from their homes and regular places of worship, particularly on these long voyages upon the mighty deep for months and months together; but that the ample provision made by the glorious Gospel for the restoration and redemption of mankind, boundless as its love, extended unto all: for He that said, 'Let there be light, and there was light;' even 'God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.' I had largely to proclaim some of the principal doctrines of the Gospel, and was helped through, to my humble and thankful admiration. It was indeed a glorious, and I trust to some a blessed meeting. I had, I think, more than once to call their attention to the heavenly power that reigned over us, with precious solemnity, as a crown and diadem: and before the meeting closed, I had to acknowledge the same with prayer and thanksgiving, to the glory and the praise of my God. After the meeting was broken up, I requested an individual out of each ship to step forward, when two hundred and twenty-nine tracts, principally those of Friends, were disposed of, including those sent on board the 'Mariner' in the morning. The above is the substance of what I had to deliver in the meeting; which as it arose fresh in my memory, when describing this meeting in my Journal, I felt an inducement to transmit thus far, for the satisfaction of my dear friends at home, that they may know what is going on in this remote part of the globe; and to which, but for brevity sake, much more might be added. The masters of the 'Cambria' and 'Kingston' remained on board, and dined with us. Captain Crocker of the 'Cambria' has proposed to take letters for us to New Bedford, for which place he is about to sail, and forward them from thence to England.

19th. "The 'Nassau,' Captain Sampson, sailed early this morning for the coast of California, to prosecute the whale fishing. The captain was furnished with six Bibles and six Testaments, in the Spanish language. He said there would be no difficulty in putting them into suitable hands, he being well acquainted in those parts.

20th. "The American ship 'Emerald,' being about to sail for Manilla and the Philippine Islands, and Captain Eaglestone having kindly offered, on application being made, to forward our views, in circulating the Scriptures in the Spanish language, he being on a trading voyage, and of extensive acquaintance, this morning eighteen Bibles, eighteen Testaments, eighteen letters by J. J. Gurney on Christianity, with five copies of a 'Practical View,' &c. by the late William Wilberforce, were got ready and delivered to that ship. We have met with great civility and willingness to lend a helping hand in many of the American captains: at the same time we are frequently sensible of a mixture which cannot be reconciled. The foregoing remark has no allusion to the in-



consistent conduct of the crews of many of the American vessels, which we have fallen in with here, that are called 'temperance ships.' I could not but view these with satisfaction, and with a degree of thankfulness, as likely to contribute by their example to the welfare of the islanders. But, alas! I now find, with horror and surprise, that the word temperance applies only to the ships, and not to their crews, none probably of which are members of a Temperance Society, but are merely bound by articles that the voyage shall be performed without any spirits being on board, except as medicine, if needed, and that their sobriety only exists because they cannot get the liquor; when on shore, and unbound by these articles, they are lamentably, in many instances, notorious for drinking to excess; and their immoral conduct, at this place, makes me shudder for the awful and woful consequences, both as regards themselves, and the daughters of Tahiti. Although great exertion is made and promoted by the missionaries here to stop this overwhelming torrent of iniquity, yet all their measures are abortive, and can never be successful, unless co-operated with on the part of the masters of the shipping. Notwithstanding the disuse of spirituous liquors is rigidly enforced at Tahiti, and no person is allowed to have the article in his house, or if the breath of any of the natives smell of it, a severe fine is imposed; yet this bane of the human race is still to be purchased on shore, and the supply is kept up by the American ships; it is clandestinely landed at times, amongst the supposed empty casks which are sent on shore for water, (an instance of this kind took place a few days ago,) and by other methods. A considerable quantity was brought in last week by an American schooner from Valparaiso, and safely landed; but has since been discovered, the casks destroyed and their contents totally lost. By what is said, I do not mean to infer that this shocking and gross immorality is confined solely to the crews of the American vessels, because those of the English are perhaps equally implicated; but with this difference, they do not assume the character of being 'temperance ships.'

"How dreadful and appalling the consideration, that the intercourse of distant nations should have entailed upon these poor, untutored islanders, a curse unprecedented and unheard of in the annals of history; it is said that one-fourth of the whole population is miserably affected with a disease brought amongst them, and kept up by the licentious crews of the shipping. Will not, shall not the Lord visit for these things?

22nd. "Early this morning the 'Emerald' sailed for Manilla, and the Philippine Islands. The American schooner, 'Peruvian,' came in before noon from Valparaiso, with horses. In the afternoon, went on shore upon the queen's island. On this small spot of ground much is concentrated. A small chapel, with sides of upright bamboos, (wicker-work,) is standing, with seats and a pulpit, at one time probably in use. Several pieces of cannon in a

useless state, one placed on a platform, formed of loose stones and coral, and others lying about in a condition equally harmless. These have been left as presents by the ships of different nations, which have visited these seas, and stand as memorials against them, by showing that their dependence is upon the arm of flesh for protection. England, France, and Russia seem to have been the donors of them. Part of one building is fitted up as an armoury, with an inscription to this import over the arms, which consist of three worthless muskets without locks. We cannot wonder at young and barbarous nations being eager to possess weapons of a destructive nature, when they see in what high estimation they are held by those who are called Christians; but, alas! their conduct proclaims aloud that such are not the followers of the Prince of Peace, nor living under the blessed influence of the Gospel.

23d. "The king came on board to breakfast this morning by himself, but departed as soon as our reading was over. As attending the Tahitian worship has been frequently the companion of my thoughts for several days past, it seemed best for me to be in readiness by having the way opened for the ensuing *first-day* (to-morrow) should this be my portion. After communicating this to my son Charles, we concluded to go on shore, and mention the subject to George Pritchard. On seeing the latter, I told him that my mind had been drawn to attend the Tahitian worship to-morrow morning. He asked, if I meant to perform service there, or to sit as a spectator. 'To sit as a spectator,' I replied, 'but if required to speak, to have permission to do so.' He just said, 'You must not expect to find things in the same order as if you were at home;' and added, 'If you could come on shore about half-past eight o'clock in the morning, there would be time to look at the schools before the meeting begins: the meeting for worship begins at nine o'clock, but a prayer-meeting commences at sun-rise.' I cannot but admire, with reverential gratitude and thankfulness, how in every instance of this kind that has yet occurred, mountains have become mole-hills in comparison, as a willingness has been wrought to approach them: and if it were not fixing a very high stamp upon ourselves, I should say, surely the blessed Master, in like manner as when He sent forth His disciples two and two formerly to every place where he intended to come, is already not only come, but has condescended to go before, and prepare the way for us poor creatures in a remarkable manner, in the hearts of others with whom we have to do. In returning we walked at the edge of the bay, and were accosted by a respectable, clean-looking white man, who has resided here about fifteen years. He had been a sailor: but a severe hurt in his right hand and wrist was the cause of his being left at this place.- It seemed from what he said, that he had been told we were much at a loss for an interpreter: he wished to render us every assistance he could, and was

willing to go with us to any part whither we might have to go; wanting nothing in return, as he was comfortably off, and was not one that stood opposed to the work in which we were engaged; as he had but a small piece of land, he was at liberty at any time to attend us. We acknowledged the kindness and disinterestedness of this offer, and told him, if occasion required it, we should make application to him. We think him a suitable person to have the care of some tracts for lending out to others, and one with whom some of the writings of Friends may with safety be left. On first-day morning, the 24th of Fifth month, my son Charles and myself proceeded to George Pritchard's house about the appointed time. We were much too early for the school, owing to there being no regular time kept amongst the people; and some having to come from considerable distances, are the more likely to be out of season when they arrive. The principal teacher, who is a deacon in the church, made his appearance, soon after which we followed to the school-house. A considerable number of children were collected; the boys sitting at one end of a long building, and the girls at the other; the teacher standing on one side in the empty space, about midway between them. He gave out questions to the boys and girls alternately, which were answered in the same way by a few of the elder children in a singing tone, simultaneously, the rest seeming to take but little interest in what was going on. We were told, that when the queen resided here, the number of children was much greater than at present; but as she now lives at Papáoa, such children as formerly attended here, now go to the school at that place.

"It was considerably more than half an hour after the fixed time before we entered (what is called) the church, where a large number of persons were collected and collecting. The whole congregation were squatted on the floor, the building being in an unfinished state, and no seats as yet provided: they appeared to occupy the whole of the floor, which is very extensive. While they were proceeding in their usual manner, I endeavoured to draw near to the Fountain of Israel, whose God is, and ever will be, He that giveth strength and power to his people. My heart was softened in an unusual manner, and the creature was brought down into a state of nothingness; tears flowed beyond a capability of restraint, my mind was as a calm, and I was prepared to stand up when the proper moment arrived. A universal stillness now prevailed over the meeting, probably increased by expectation, which had for some time been stamped upon the countenances of the whole assembly.

"'God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints,' were the first words uttered by me; which when interpreted, were followed by—It is not an every-day circumstance for a stranger thus to speak amongst you, probably what you never before witnessed; but it is according to the true



order of the Gospel that the prophets should speak two or three, that all might learn and all might be comforted—with some more of the text, repeating again, for ‘God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints;’ proceeding with, “I have nothing new to offer: the way to the kingdom is the same now as in the beginning; there is no variableness or shadow of turning with that God with whom we have to do: the things of time may vacillate and change, but the Rock of ages unimpaired remains: it changeth not, ‘the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his.’ This foundation is Christ Jesus: and no other foundation can any man lay than is laid. Every man’s work will be made manifest, the day shall declare it, the fire of the Lord will try it: that only will stand which is built on Christ Jesus the righteous, that tried cornerstone, elect of God, and precious indeed to them that believe, though to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks foolishness. For this cause, ‘God gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life,’—with more on this important point. In looking over this large assembly, the love of God has filled my heart as I have sat amongst you. May the Lord in heaven bless you, is the language that has arisen therein. It is this love that induced me to come amongst you; it is this love that would gather all into the heavenly garner of rest and peace; endless in duration is the mercy of the Lord; free and unbounded is his love. His love has been long extended to these islands, and covered them as with a mantle. This island has had advantages beyond many others.” I reminded them that many years had now elapsed since the sound of the Gospel was first heard in their land: they had long had many parts of the Holy Scriptures in circulation, which from their earliest pages point to the Saviour. It was promised soon after the fall of man, that the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent’s head. Moses declared to the people in his day, ‘A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things;’ and the soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. Which led to the query of what return had been made for all this, and wherein had they been benefitted by these great privileges, &c. They had run well for a season: What had hindered them? What had prevented them that they should have turned again as unto the weak and beggarly elements? If they had obeyed the Gospel this would not have been the case; they would by this time have been a pure people for their God. That unless there was a thorough alteration and change, the blessing intended for them would be withdrawn, and the rod would be administered for their iniquity. Continuing, ‘Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die;’ for your works are not perfect in the sight of God. ‘Remember, therefore, how thou hast received and heard, and hold

fast, and repent;' there is a great work to be done; for where is your hope when the present generation are summoned from works to rewards, if the younger children are not trained in succession?

"I then had to call upon the parents to step forward before it was too late; they had all a part to take in it. Tahitian mothers had a large share devolving upon them; much depended upon their influence and example in endeavouring to train up their children with habits of civilized life, by letting them learn to read, (which at present is much neglected, and much disliked both by parents and children,) that so they might partake in the advantages which are to be derived from the Holy Scriptures; reminding them that 'they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever;' exhorting them not to be overcome with evil, but to overcome evil with (or by) that which is good; that the promises are many, great, and precious, recorded in Holy Writ, to them that overcome, &c. Though, perhaps, more might be expressed than above noted, and with some variation as to the words, yet I believe that what is here inserted is the substance and principal part of what was uttered.

"Having finished, I took my seat. Soon after this, George Pritchard concluded the meeting. When the whole congregation rose, the elderly people came forward to shake hands; but being pretty near one of the doors, (of which there are four,) we were soon carried outside by the current of people turning that way. There were upwards of a thousand people inside of the building, and a considerable number outside also. The doors and windows being all open, those without could hear about as well as those within.

28th. (*Fifth-day*.) "Soon after breakfast, Charles and myself endeavoured to draw near in silence before the Most High; and although under feelings of great weakness and inability of ourselves to maintain the watch against our subtle enemy, yet we must not shrink or be discouraged from using our humble endeavours to maintain the unequal conflict, seeing that He with whom we have to do, knows that we are but dust, pities our frailties and weakness, and regardeth with an eye of merciful compassion his poorest creatures; yea, even the lone sparrow from the house-top cannot fall to the ground without his knowledge.

30th. "Yesterday, C. Wilson and son, from Point Venus, dined with us. They came to inquire for some articles for the latter, who is about to join the mission likely to proceed to the Navigator islands. In the evening, went on shore for exercise. Heavy rain during the night. William Henry having purchased supplies for our vessel, came on board this morning to procure sundry articles of barter goods. In the forenoon, had an opportunity of furnishing a respectable woman with a Testament, Selection of Advices, John Woolman's Serious Considerations, and nine tracts on reli-

gious subjects. This female was taken when a child of four years old into William Henry's family. She is well acquainted with the English language, and has a numerous family, which she is endeavouring to bring up in a praiseworthy manner. Her example of industry and notability may be traced in the different appearance of the family from that of others; and the result is strikingly obvious in the behaviour and habits of the children. She is, doubtless, the offspring of one white parent. Her husband is a native, but we have not yet seen him: they reside in the neighbourhood of Mairi Pèhe.

"Yesterday morning, a native of Dundalk, in Ireland, by name Murphy, lately arrived in the 'Peruvian,' from Valparaiso, came on board. He stated, that his coming here is solely for the purpose of procuring a passage to the Sandwich Islands, but that he is not suffered to remain here, for want of proper credentials, which are required of such as come to reside on shore. It is one of those cases in which I could not render any assistance, there being a decided law in this country that prevents strangers under such circumstances from coming amongst the people, and which applies to all foreigners. At the same time, it is pretty evident, that a fear of his introducing the Roman Catholic religion greatly operates against him; for which it is probable, there may be some ground. Murphy acknowledges to have been six years at a college in Ireland, training for a priest; but that he never was ordained. He is now come from the Gambier Islands, where, he says, there are six French Roman Catholic priests, and one English; whatever may be the real cause of his coming here, his present situation renders him an object of pity, which we cannot relieve.

Sixth month 3d. "For the last three days our time was much occupied by persons coming on board, and in attending to the exchange of some of our articles for barter, to obtain the needful supplies, for the vessel, of fresh provisions, fruit and vegetables.

"While on shore yesterday for exercise, we met with an aged native, who remembered the first coming to these islands of Captain James Cook. It was clear that he was no stranger to the circumstances of his death at Hawahii, as he himself alluded to the place. Although we had the advantage of an interpreter being with us, yet the age of this man could not be ascertained, as no record or register of births is instituted amongst them.

"In the forenoon, a judge, with whom we were previously acquainted, came on board, bringing with him the queen's mother, and a third person, to us a stranger; it evidently appeared to be one of those visits made only with a view to extort something from us in the way of present: signs were made by the female of chopping with an axe; but as I could only talk to her in English, she found there was nothing to be got, and I did not consider it at all necessary to satisfy demands which were altogether unreasonable; and especially as I knew, that if her wishes had been complied



with, numerous applications would be made by her colleagues, which it would have been more difficult to refuse.

4th. (*Fifth-day*.) "The king and his brother came on board to dinner, but did not remain long after it was over. Their coming now is in a plain way: they come and go as they please; we treat them with civility, but no longer as strangers, or they us. This seems to suit their habits and inclination, which, like their bodies, are not accustomed to restraint. They paddle themselves off in a canoe, with no other clothing than check shirts, and a loose piece of blue cotton tied round the waist, with low crowned straw hats, with a broad blue ribbon round them, upon their head.

5th. "This morning a respectable Spaniard came on board, whom I had seen several times when on shore. He was presented with J. J. Gurney's 'Essays' in his own language, with which he seemed highly gratified. He had been an officer in the Spanish army, and was banished from his country by the last revolution in South America: he has resided here about three years, and bears a good character. He is promised a copy of the Holy Scriptures, and other books in his native language: I never saw any person so much pleased and thankful at the prospect of having these books furnished him in this country. On inquiry, we found that there are three Manilla men here, one of whom was in the canoe at the time. This man read very intelligibly in J. J. Gurney's 'Essays;' and his willingness to receive any books we were disposed to give, for himself and comrades, made us glad that we are in possession of such a variety in their language.

6th. "At George Pritchard's we met with John Davies, the missionary from Pápapa, who has been engaged here about thirty-five years, an intelligent elderly man. From his long residence he has acquired the greatest fund of satisfactory information respecting these islands, and their inhabitants, of any person we have yet met with, and which he imparted in a manner to us highly interesting, and more valuable than what is generally collected, because its authenticity may be relied on. In speaking of the idols formerly in great repute here and in the neighbouring isles, he said, 'that when expostulating with the people, and endeavouring to convince them of the worthlessness of these wooden deities, which can neither see, nor speak, nor stand, nor go, &c.; the most sensible amongst the natives in answer, would say, that they did not worship them as God; but that they served only to remind them of God, who is invisible, and in some manner connected with those images; but how they knew not.' He considered that the received opinion of these islands having been originally peopled from South America, was altogether fallacious, and without foundation, because their having been peopled from Asia can be proved by striking facts: when traversing to the westward, the same language is invariably to be found on the islands, though, perhaps, in a variety of dialects; and this may be traced to Sumatra, Borneo,

Malacca, &c. And the same tradition as regards a deity may also be traced throughout them, more or less in degree and varying in some particulars; but on going to the eastward, the language is less and less to be recognized, and eventually disappears altogether. The intelligent natives seem to be awakened to a confused idea of a general deluge having taken place at some time or other, from their having discovered, that upon the tops of the highest mountains in this island and others, the same marine substances are met with as they are accustomed to find at the bottom of the sea. It has been the opinion of some that the whole of these islands formed at one time a vast continent, but that by an unaccountable convulsion of the earth, this continent became water, except the tops of the loftiest mountains, which constitute the islands as they stand at this day.

7th. (*First-day*.) "From the appearance of George Pritchard on the *seventh-day* evening, it did not seem probable that he would be equal to the fatigue of accompanying us to Papáoa; and as the morning proved rough, and the wind contrary, it was not looked for on my part. Notwithstanding some information had spread that I should be gone to Papáoa, yet the state of the weather perhaps induced some to come on board about the time that we usually assemble the crew together. We had not sat long before some others arrived. The forepart of the time the children were a little restless, owing to the great heat of the place below, the deck being too wet to allow us to sit in the open air with safety; but a solemn feeling spread over our little company, and remained with us. My mind was gradually drawn into exercise, and at last I had to break through the silence with the expression of,—True is that 'God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth him and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him.' 'It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.' And 'If the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?' Also, true it is, that no man can save his brother, nor give to God a ransom for his soul: the work is our own, &c. It was one of those favoured times of which it may be said, that the latter end surpassed the beginning, 'because of the truth.' It was afterwards ascertained, that George Pritchard was too unwell to venture on the journey to Papáoa."

The following reflections occur in Daniel Wheeler's Journal, under date of 8th of Sixth month.—"The organization of the language, so as to admit the translation of the Holy Scriptures into the native tongue, is a work, the importance of which cannot be duly estimated nor conceived, as to the happy result, under the Divine blessing, that is in store for generations yet unborn, any more than the boundary of extent can be defined to which they may be permitted to circulate and diffuse revealed truth in the language of Holy Inspiration. This work now considered to be near its completion, has been the labour of many years, in a climate

wasting to the constitution of every European, as oppressively relaxing from the heat. Henry Nott has been a very laborious servant in this cause; without any regard to the many hardships and privations which the earliest settlers had particularly to encounter, and in which he deeply shared; his constitution is now sinking from long residence, and the effects of close sedentary application: who can doubt for a moment the devotedness of such a man? Great and important are the advantages which such a work is calculated to bestow on mankind, beyond every other, or in comparison with any other outward means of help and comfort, for where can the excellency of the Holy Scriptures be equalled, or to what can they be compared, seeing the writers were divinely inspired? And being thus of heavenly origin and descent, they ever stand unrivalled as profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect and thoroughly furnished to every good word and work, and above all they are able to make wise even to salvation; but it is only through faith which is in Christ Jesus our Lord, to whom their inspired pages point from the earliest age of recorded time.

10th. "This morning received information that a public meeting of the principal chiefs and people of the island was about to take place, to consider the case of the supposed Roman Catholic. Although I had not been invited to a missionary conference which had taken place on this subject, yet I felt my way more than usually opened to attend the council of the Tahitians, then about to meet. Accordingly myself and Charles hastened to the shore, and landed opposite to the building where the people were assembling.

"The queen, with her mother and attendants were seated, or squatted upon the floor, surrounded by the chiefs of seven districts. The sister of the principal chief, or king of Rarotogna, was one of the party. The business commenced with the examination of the Irish Roman Catholic; the place was now crowded with people, but the examination proceeded very slowly and unsatisfactorily; which I could not help perceiving, was entirely for want of an able interpreter, who thoroughly understood the English language as well as the Tahitian. The people were restless and unsettled from this circumstance, the most part, not seeming to know for what they had come together. None of the missionaries appeared willing (for sufficient reasons) to have any hand in the business; and seeing the real cause of the dilemma they had got into was still undiscovered, it seemed best for me to step forward, at a suitable moment, and state plainly to the heads of the meeting, that it was impossible for the business to proceed satisfactorily without a competent interpreter was appointed; and turning to Captain Henry, who stood near me, I requested him to inform the chiefs what I had said. This being done, the council agreed that Captain Henry should be chosen; and he having consented, things began to move



more readily forward, until the Catholic made some assertions highly injurious to the missionary cause, and offensive to the queen and all her chiefs, who felt very indignant on the occasion; and which I knew to be incorrect. There did not seem any other part for me to act, however unpleasant, but publicly to contradict what he had said, and to declare that some of the language he had used had never been expressed by the person whom he was charging with having spoken it. This for a time caused considerable altercation; but having three witnesses on my side, this difficulty was soon got over, and order again restored. The examination continued, until the Catholic, unable to prove the statements he had made on first coming to Tahiti, and finding himself foiled on every side, made a hasty retreat, to all appearance not a little offended. One of the chiefs then expatiated on the case, and stated to the assembly as follows:—‘This man (meaning the Catholic) held out that he should not come to this meeting; and it is seen that he did come to the meeting. He declared that he had a letter sealed with King William’s seal, (of England,) and he had no such thing. That he had a letter from the British Ambassador at Paris, and he had no such thing; and now, by his running away, he has shown himself to be a deceiver.’ Then turning the attention of the assembly to my Charles and myself, he said, ‘On their coming amongst us, we had no occasion to ask for letters; they gave them themselves into our hands. It is known to every chief in the island there was no trouble with them, because they are not deceivers.’ He then finished his speech, by proposing that such a man should never be allowed to come amongst them. After this the queen’s speech was delivered by a clear-headed middle-aged chief, which concluded with a call upon all her faithful subjects to unite in never permitting this man (the Catholic) or any other of the same profession to come to disturb the peace and tranquillity of Tahiti.

“Another chief made a very animated oration, which we were informed contained a proposition, not only to banish this man for ever from their shores, but to follow him on the sea, and not allow either him or his comrades to remain so near them as the Gambier Islands, but to banish them from thence, lest the plague should come amongst them: throwing his long stick upon the floor, to describe them as trampled under foot, never again to rise.

11th. “Yesterday we went to George Pritchard’s to become acquainted with Alexander Simpson, the missionary from the island of Eimeo. He had come over to attend the meeting that had been appointed for the missionaries of all the districts, to take into consideration the arrival of the Irish Roman Catholic, above-mentioned. Alexander Simpson’s wife and daughter were with him. He seems kindly disposed to forward our views, when visiting the island upon which he resides.

14th. (*First-day*.) “In the forenoon a few strangers assembled with our own crew. In the course of the time we were together,

I had a short testimony to bear to the indispensable duty of loving one another. How can we expect to be forgiven our trespasses, if we from our hearts do not forgive every man his brother his trespasses. Soon after one o'clock, P. M., George Pritchard called, accompanied by Alexander Simpson's wife, in a whale boat, to convey Charles and myself to Papáoa. We reached in time for the meeting of the Tahitians, which consisted of a large body of the people. Throughout much of the day, and much of the time also that their religious engagements were going forward, my mind was under no small weight of exercise, and it seemed doubtful to myself whether I should have any thing to communicate or not; but towards the latter part, I only waited for a proper interval of silence to stand upon my feet. George Pritchard observing this, asked whether I wished to say any thing then, or after the next singing was over; but the present moment seemed the right one; which being signified, he then exhorted the people to stillness and attention, and waited by my side for me to begin." Daniel Wheeler then communicated what was upon his mind. "Shortly after this," he observes, "the meeting broke up: when the people drew towards us, and commenced the usual ceremony of shaking hands. The queen was present, but I did not know it until afterwards. We called at her house on our way to the boat, but she was gone off on foot to Papeete.

Half past eleven o'clock, P. M. "My mind is peaceful and easy, and relieved; and the God of glory has the praise, who thus continues to bear up a poor tribulated way-worn traveller, renewing my youth as the eagle's, and as the day is, so causing my strength to be. I observed, while at the meeting of Papáoa, that the countenances of some of the Tahitians who sat opposite to me manifested undeviating attention; others appeared more indifferent and careless; and the protracted length of the meeting, together with the tropical heat, made the younger children unsettled."

---

## CHAPTER VI.

Visit to Bunáauia—native meeting—kindness of the principal chief—Point Venus—perilous situation—Tiarei—native meeting—meeting at Point Venus—visit to Taiarapu—Papara—beautiful scenery—school at Teahurpoo—meeting of the natives—letter from the native congregation—favoured opportunity—native meeting at Papara—return to the "Henry Freeling"—letter from the queen of Tahiti.

16th. "Yesterday employed nearly all the day on board. Last night had some conversation with George Pritchard about accompanying me to Bunáauia this afternoon. It was proposed that we should lodge at David Darling's, the missionary at that station, in order to attend the Tahitian worship at sun-rise to-morrow morning. We set out in a whale-boat about three o'clock, P. M. Our

company consisted of Alexander Simpson, wife and little daughter, Mary Darling, a daughter of David's, Louisa Barf of Huahine Island, George Pritchard, my son Charles, and myself, with four Tahitians at the oars. We had a fine passage while within the reef, but on reaching the opening which leads out into the main ocean, the rollers broke with so much violence, that some of our company were discouraged from making the attempt to force a passage through it. To myself there appeared no difficulty, but what might have been with ease and safety surmounted, as at one view might be seen the whole danger that threatened. This opening consisted of a narrow channel, (but amply wide enough,) with the crags of the coral on each side of it, upon which the sea broke more than usual, from the wind having been rather brisk for several hours. But that which weighed most in the scale to deter from attempting to pass through this place, was the probability of our being unable to get through the next opening to pass within the reef again, nearly opposite David Darling's house, which is in a situation still more exposed to the constant invasion of the breaking surf, and rendered much more hazardous by the great strength of current that usually prevails there when the present wind is blowing. If on reaching this place the pass should have been found impracticable, we must then have had to go over the same ground a second time, to get back again, if no accident had happened to the boat, and the danger would be increased manifold by being then thrown into the dark. At length it was concluded to run the boat on shore upon a sandy beach, nigh unto some of the huts of the natives, who sallied forth in a body, and soon hauled her up beyond the reach of the surf. Our party being all landed, we proceeded on foot, and should soon have reached the mission-house, and in good day-light, but having a considerable river to encounter, the night overtook us before we had all passed over it. This river is rapid, and of uncertain depth; and notwithstanding the bed of it is covered with loose round stones, the natives are so dexterous, that an accident but rarely occurs. A number of these people soon came to our assistance, and the company were all landed on the other side before my turn arrived. Soon after dark we reached the hospitable mansion of David Darling, and were received with great kindness by his wife and family; himself being from home among the Marquesan Islands, whither he had gone to assist in establishing a missionary, by name, Rogerson, whom I had seen at the Missionary Society's House, in Austin Friars. At this place we found the wife and three children of T. M. Orsmond, the missionary at the Tairabu station. They had been tossing about for a considerable time in a clumsy boat of their own, not at all likely soon to reach their abode, unless the wind should blow from a direction seldom witnessed at this season of the year. Being rather unwell in the evening, and having passed an almost sleepless night, I felt in poor condition when it was time to get



ready to attend the sun-rise meeting of the Tahitians on the morning of the 17th instant. There was a large number of the people collected together, and when the usual service of their own was gone through, I stood up, and George Pritchard interpreted for me, as at other times.

“The principal burden that rested upon my mind, was to turn the attention of the people to the light of Christ Jesus in their own hearts, that their conversation might be such as becometh his Gospel. I had to tell them, that although I did not understand their language, yet I was fearful for them, seeing that for every idle word a man shall speak, he must give an account in the day of judgment, for by our words we shall be justified, and by our words we shall be condemned; believing, and declaring this belief, that a very loose and wanton conversation was a besetting sin amongst them. I had to remind them of the superior advantages bestowed upon these islands, over many others of this part of the habitable globe, by the introduction of Christianity amongst them. Had they obeyed the Gospel, the effect of the contaminating example of evil introduced amongst them by distant nations, would have been prevented: that the Lord is looking for fruit, and the earth that drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for the use of him by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: but that which bringeth forth briars and thorns is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned: that the desire of my soul was, that the lamentation once taken up by the Saviour of the world, might never be applicable to them as a people: ‘O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, &c. how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!’ That the love of God had overshadowed these islands in an eminent degree; and I never heard of an instance where the Lord in matchless mercy, was pleased to send any of his servants amongst a people, but that his love was still towards that people. That Christ Jesus had been often preached to them, but they had not obeyed his Gospel: they must repent and obey, and the way to repent and obey is to fear God, and give glory to Him. That it is the same Gospel now as was proclaimed by the angel, which John saw flying through the midst of heaven, having the everlasting Gospel to preach unto every nation and kindred, and tongue and people; saying with a loud voice, ‘fear God and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come; and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.’ Desiring that they might be sensible of that day, when the Lord’s judgment is come upon all that is of a sinful and transgressing nature, that so they might indeed fear him, and in thought, word, and deed, give glory unto Him, and thus be prepared to worship Him in spirit and in truth; for it is such the Father seeketh to worship Him. That ‘God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, had

shined in our hearts,' and to this saving light I wished to turn them, &c. &c. The people were generally very attentive, and a solemn covering was permitted to prevail over us. On rising from our seats, they gathered around us in the usual way. Being previously acquainted with Utami, a principal chief in that neighbourhood, we met like old friends, who knew and loved each other, if his love for me was the same as I felt for him. We got out into the air as soon as we well could, in order to escape some of the usual greetings, not feeling in a condition, from weakness and exhaustion, to accept of all the kindness intended by these people.

"It is indeed worthy of humble gratitude and thankfulness, to witness how my gracious Lord, from time to time, has opened the way for me amongst the missionaries. The printing-office is established at this place: we looked into it, but as the principal conductor of that work, David Darling, was absent, the press was standing still. Whilst here, we were waited upon by Utami, in the capacity of chief, to request permission to feed us, as they term furnishing strangers with a supply of food, which with them is considered the greatest respect that can be shown to a stranger: but we were compelled to decline their kind attention, as the materials could not be procured from the different parts of the district before the morrow, and we were bound to return to the 'Henry Freeling' that night, if practicable, the chronometers from being locked up in our cabin, could not be wound up until we returned on board again. The quantity of food usually furnished at such times, is quite preposterous; consisting of a hog, fowls, fish, plantains, bananas, &c., with a quantity of cocoa-nuts, and if hinted at, there is little doubt but a dog would be prepared, according to the ancient custom of the island. As the chief Utami has undertaken to repair a building for a school, I agreed to furnish a few pounds of nails, and a lock for the door, for his encouragement to proceed in this useful work. In the course of the day our boat was brought from the place where we landed the preceding evening; and after taking leave of this family, we again re-embarked, and in a short time got safely through the most dangerous pass in the reef into smooth water, and reached the Bay of Papeete before dark, not a little fatigued, and in much poverty of spirit, and unable to write for want of sleep.

19th. "Principally employed on board. Consulted in the forenoon with Samuel Wilson on the best mode of visiting the district of Point Venus, where his father resides, and that of Tiarei, (Tear'ay) the residence of William Henry. In the afternoon we went on shore for exercise until dark. Samuel Wilson, who has kindly offered to accompany us to the distant districts as interpreter, came on board to tea, with whose plainness and simplicity we were much gratified.

20th. "George Pritchard came on board in the forenoon, and assisted in arranging a plan for accomplishing our visit to the re-

maining, and most distant districts upon the island of Tahiti. It was concluded best for us to set off this afternoon towards Tiarei. As the wind blew fresh, about sun-set was considered the proper time to proceed as far as Point Venus, presuming the strength of the wind would lessen as the evening approached. It was proposed that we should remain at Point Venus until two o'clock in the morning, and then push forward so as to reach Tiarei about day-break, before the trade-wind set in, which is mostly pretty strong, and generally from the quarter to which we were bending our course. All things being ready, we left the 'Henry Freeling' soon after four o'clock, the wind having materially lessened by the fall of some rain, and it still continued to get lighter as we proceeded. As there was every indication of clear and serene weather long before reaching the first place of intended destination, it was suggested by our native boat's crew, that we should not make much stay there, but push forward while the wind and sea were gentle. The principal motive for wishing to stop by the way at all, was to lessen the fatigue of these men by dividing the journey into two parts, so that they might rest between them: but they were well aware that the whole distance could be performed at once in calm weather, with much more ease than if divided, and time given for rest, if the wind and sea should rise against them, although but in a moderate degree. Just before dark, we landed upon the shore of Point Venus, the place from whence the celebrated navigator, Captain James Cook, observed the transit of the planet Venus on the disk of the sun. Opposite this part of the coast of Tahiti, which we had next to traverse, there is no sheltering coral-reef for its protection; so that the remainder of our journey was now exposed to the whole beat of the Pacific ocean, and can only be performed when the weather is moderate.

"Having with us Samuel Wilson, we were readily conducted to the habitation of his father, Charles Wilson, the resident missionary at this station, and were kindly entertained by the family. As the passage round Point Venus is very intricate, and the water particularly shoal, the boat was taken round to the other side, while we were partaking of some refreshment. We lost no time in preparing again to embark. The crew met us with a native torch, made of the dry branching leaves of the cocoa-nut tree, which with our own lantern, lighted the intricate narrow path among the bushes, and was particularly useful at the sea-side, the night being now very dark. As the night advanced, we were helped by a gentle land breeze, so that the labour of the oars was a little diminished by the addition of a sail being set to catch it. There was an experienced elderly native employed at the stern-oar of our whale-boat, whose course seemed to be principally directed by the white tops of the rolling surf, as it broke upon the coast near to which he mostly kept. Off one rocky point of land it became needful to turn off with a wide sweep towards the offing, to escape



a projecting ridge of rocks, the outermost extremity of which was defined by the termination of breakers. By ten o'clock, P. M. it was declared that we were abreast of Tiarei; but the night was so dark, that the narrow entrance through the reef to it could not be distinguished even by the eagle-eyed Tahitians. The boat's mast was struck, and one of the natives stationed in the front with Samuel Wilson, to look out; and her head being turned shorewards, we edged gently down towards the foaming breakers, which were bursting on the rocky strand with thundering noise. As the rowing had now altogether ceased, the boat drifted only at the rate at which the swell of the sea hove her along; a measure highly prudent until the dangerous pass we had to go through was clearly ascertained, as was quickly afterwards sufficiently demonstrated, though at the moment such tardy proceeding might seem to protract the term of suspense. Having silently proceeded for some time in this way, and from the increasing roar of the restless waters, evidently drawing nearer and nearer to the margin of the crags, on a sudden there were symptoms of alarm, which could not be mistaken, on the part of the boat's crew, who now perceived that we had missed the only entrance that afforded a passage to the shore; and from our present position, a large lump of rock was in the way to the mouth of the channel, which the boat could not possibly escape. Our poor Tahitians immediately jumped into the sea, and did all they could to save the boat from being dashed to pieces, but they could not prevent her from striking. She however only struck once, and lay quiet, the wave having so far receded, that she did not float enough to beat, and the next roller that came in, instead of filling her with water, carried her completely over this obstruction. But it was difficult for some time to ascertain whether the worst was now over or not, for our men began to howl and shout, the meaning of which we could not comprehend. It afterwards appeared, that this was done to rouse the sleeping natives on the shore, who, well understanding this yell, shortly came running with lighted torches to our assistance, and a few minutes placed us once more upon *terra firma*. As the boat could not get close in, one of these men very soon had me upon his back, to prevent my getting wet. Samuel Wilson and my son Charles, were landed in the same way. The journey altogether had been more speedy, and in many respects more favourable than is often witnessed, until we came to the last pinch, when the never-failing arm of Almighty power was again displayed in the needful time for our relief. As we were strangers to the language of the people, and could render them no assistance whatever, and as any attempt to direct their efforts must only have increased the general confusion, we therefore sat silent beholders of what was going forward; committing ourselves to Him, who saw our perilous situation through the darkened gloom, and did not suffer the briny waters to prevail against us, but in love and mercy,

and compassion, stretched forth his hand to save. As to myself, I may say, my heart was fixed, trusting in the Lord, whose loving-kindness is better than life. He was with us of a truth, in fulfilment of his gracious promise, and we were not confounded. I desire to record this signal favour with humble thankfulness and reverence, to His praise and to His glory. We soon reached the mission-house, where William Henry resides, to whom we were all personally known, and by whom and his wife we were kindly accommodated for the night, although from their secluded situation, but little in the way of receiving strangers, and in so abrupt a manner, at an hour so unseasonable, as they could not have had the least idea of our coming. Much sleep could not be obtained, yet we passed the night in quietness, and I felt refreshed at rising.

“*Tiarei*, 21st.—Previously to the commencement of the Tahitian worship at nine o’clock in the morning, the time was pretty fully occupied with the family devotion and taking breakfast; after which we repaired to the meeting-house, it being agreed if I should have any thing to speak to the people, that Samuel Wilson was to stand as interpreter. This was a relief to William Henry, (and also to myself,) as he had quite as much to go through as his strength was equal to, he being far advanced in years. After William Henry had shown us to a seat, he went into the pulpit, Samuel Wilson remaining not far from us. At this distance, although not very remote from the contaminating effects of the shipping, the difference in appearance, and in the general deportment of the people was discernible throughout the greater part of the congregation, which was large. Being comforted by the sensible presence of the great Master, my mind was strengthened in an unusual manner, but not until after a season of humiliating conflict had been passed through in order and preparatory, I believe, that the excellency of the power may be felt and known, and acknowledged to be of God, and not of us, nor of any thing that we can command or call our own.”—When the usual engagements of the meeting were gone through, Daniel Wheeler observes, “I stood up, and beckoned to Samuel Wilson to draw nearer to me. We went into a position a little more central, near the table, and under a solemn covering, after a short interval of silence, I said—‘I am fully persuaded in my own mind, that you, my beloved people, will suffer a few words from a stranger, who is with you in the fear, and in the love, and I may add, in the will of God, and not in my own; and therefore I stand amongst you with innocent boldness, because I seek not yours, but you, that immortal part in you which must sooner or later have a being in endless felicity, or in endless misery. Declaring unto them, that there is no alteration in the Christian course, the warfare is continual, and can only be maintained and accomplished with burning and fuel of fire—by the cleansing operation of that burning, which the spirit of judgment produces, and that unquenchable fire of the Lord, which

consumeth the chaffy and transgressing nature in our hearts; and if submitted to, would prepare and purify us, even as He is pure, for a kingdom, consisting not in meats and drinks, but in righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost; a kingdom, where nothing that is unclean, nothing that is impure, nothing that worketh an abomination, or that maketh a lie, must ever enter. Whilst I have been sitting with you, my heart has been filled with the love of God towards you; raising in it a fervent desire that every individual, from the least to the greatest, might be numbered among the ransomed and redeemed of the Lord, who shall return and come to Sion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads, from whom sorrow and sighing shall flee away.' But I had to tell them that a great and individual work must be accomplished before these gracious and prophetic promises are realized. The indignation of the Lord must be patiently borne for sin, and for transgression, until he should arise and plead their cause, and execute judgment for them, and in his own time say, it is enough; and bring them forth to the light, even the light of Christ Jesus, in whom they will then behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world. This light shineth in every heart, and is the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world, in which only the righteousness of Christ Jesus is witnessed to be brought forth and be held. That when the precious blood of Christ was shed for the sins of all mankind, he ascended up on high; he led captivity captive, and received gifts for men, even for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them, even among sinners, such as themselves and me. That a measure or manifestation of the gift of the Holy Spirit is given to every man to profit withal; and well will it be for those who are profiting thereby, and faithfully occupying therewith. I then had to remind them of the great things which the Lord had done for them; that the Gospel sound had long been heard in their land; that many parts of the Holy Scriptures had been translated into their native tongue, which directed them to the Saviour—to the Word which was in the beginning, that was with God, and was God. And after enlarging much further, (although I think what I have stated are the principal heads that were touched upon,) I sat down poor and empty, yet satisfied with favour, and full with the blessing of the Lord. Instead of the congregation beginning to separate immediately in a hasty manner, as we have sometimes witnessed, even the dear children kept their seats, with the whole of the company; a delightful pause ensued, (short, but crowned with that solemnity not at our command,) during which I humbly trust the thanksgiving of many redounded to the glory of God. Silence was at last broken by one of the chiefs, expressing, on behalf of the assembly and himself, their thankfulness and satisfaction, and how welcome my visit had been to them, and received; because, he said, 'You have preached to us the everlasting Gospel, and



have shown to us the propitiatory sacrifice for the sins of mankind, Christ Jesus;’ with something further, which when interpreted, I was fearful attached too much to the creature; and I requested Samuel Wilson to tell them not to look to the creature, but to their Creator. The whole of the people still continued together, (about eight hundred persons,) and seemed as if they knew not how to begin to separate, until some person, I think, proposed their shaking hands with us, which immediately commenced, and exceeded all we had before met with.

“On our return the difficulty of passing through the reef was trifling and insignificant; the light of day had dispelled all our fears and its terrors: we could now see what we were about to encounter. In a few minutes we were clear of the breakers, and forthwith spreading our sail, directed our course towards Point Venus, where we arrived in something less than two hours, the wind having kept on the increase the whole of the way; and having a fine lively whale-boat that could run from the swell, there was no danger to apprehend so long as it continued to follow her. We were soon ready to go to meeting, but a very different scene awaited us, for instead of another feast of heavenly dainties, the Bridegroom was taken away, and a fast was proclaimed; ‘Then shall they fast in those days.’ It was a time altogether the most discouraging that had yet befallen us. The continual talking, and light behaviour of a large portion of the people were truly affecting and painful; although several attempts were made to restore order amongst them, and the sound of some sharp strokes of the long sticks distinctly heard amongst the younger people, inflicted by the agents employed to keep order. I requested Samuel Wilson to say, That although I had brought nothing with me, a little matter had arisen which I did not wish to take away. The attention of the people being somewhat arrested, I proceeded with—‘Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.’ ‘The Lord is good unto them who wait for Him—to the soul that seeketh Him;’ and eternal life is the reward of all those, ‘who, by patient continuance in well doing, seek for glory, honour, and immortality; but those who are contentious, and obey not the truth, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil; of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; but glory, honour, and peace, to him that worketh good.’ ‘God is no respecter of persons, for in every nation all that fear Him, and work righteousness, are accepted of him.’ I then had to turn their attention to the sure and only foundation, Christ Jesus; and to the necessity of their believing in his inward and spiritual appearance in their hearts. That without faith it is impossible to please God, pointing to the Holy Author and blessed Finisher thereof, from

whom alone it is to be derived. Without they live by this faith of the Son of God, who loved them, and gave himself for them, all their profession of religion is vain. With some further additions, I sat down. The meeting soon after closed.

"We called at the house to bid the family farewell, and immediately put off for the Bay of Papeete. We should have reached the 'Henry Freeling' by dark, but having lost our pilot and interpreter, Samuel Wilson, who remained at home at Point Venus, we were twice entangled in the mazy reef, and forced to row back again each time to get clear of it.

23d. "To-day employed in arranging matters to enable us to set out again for the Taiarapu journey, to visit the district where T. M. Orsmond resides.

24th. "A whale-boat having been procured last evening, we proceeded, after an early breakfast, to George Pritchard's, and from thence accompanied by our kind friend, Samuel Wilson, set forwards towards Pápara. We reached Bunáauia in good time, and were again hospitably received by David Darling's family at the mission-house, he himself being still from home. After resting our crew more than an hour, we were again seated in the boat, fearful of wasting time, as the difficulty in some parts of the passage, going out and in between the reefs, on account of the alarming currents which prevail, renders daylight indispensable in passing through them. We landed at a place where a large English barque had been broken up by Captain Ebril. Here we met with three Englishmen, employed in preparing to build a new vessel, with part of the materials selected from the old one. These poor men seemed to be left in a very destitute and neglected situation; and it is to be feared, strangers to the great work yet to be accomplished for the salvation of their immortal souls, if not altogether unconcerned about it. A parcel of tracts were left for their perusal, which was promised by one of them. We reached Pápara before sun-set, and on landing were met by (Tati,) with whom I was previously acquainted. This man is considered to be the greatest orator upon the islands, and one of the two who stand as champions for the general welfare of their country. After little more had passed than the usual salutations customary among the islanders, the natives began to flock round us as we stood upon the beach, when an interesting conversation took place in their hearing.

"After this, Tahtee invited us to his house, and refreshed us with the milk of the cocoa-nut. He said, that although many improvements had been introduced by foreigners coming amongst them, yet we might perceive they still retained many of their old habits and customs, alluding to their domestic arrangements, squatting upon the floor, &c. The house exhibited more of an air of comfort and industry than any we had before seen:—native cloth, fishing-nets, &c., were lying about of their own manufacture. The

approach of night occasioned us to hasten to the house of John Davies, a Welchman, from Montgomeryshire, one of the oldest missionaries upon the island, where we were kindly received and entertained.

25th. "Rising by the break of day, and partaking of an early breakfast, we departed, as soon as the family devotion was over, for Tairapu, (Tyra-boo) the south-eastern extremity of the island. We landed at Mairi Péhe and visited Samuel Henry and family, who is commonly styled Captain Henry, from having been several years the commander of a vessel. He is son to William Henry, the missionary at Tiarei. Here the whole process of making sugar was going forward, from pressing the juice out of the cane by rollers, and all the different stages that it passes through, until reduced to the granulated state fit for use. The wind being pretty fresh against us, the journey became tedious, until reaching the narrow isthmus connecting the two peninsulas which form the island of Tahiti, when our sail became available, and helped us more speedily forward to the furthest part of the island, then in sight. The sun was nigh setting when we reached the missionary station to which we were destined; but the beauty and various scenery of this part of the island served to enliven the last hour of a long day's exposure to the sun, and to quiet in some degree the sensations of hunger and weariness, by which we had long been assailed. The stupendous mountains, however steep and rugged, were clothed in the richest and fullest manner, with every kind of fruit and forest-tree, which flourish in these tropical climates, where perpetual summer reigns, their luxuriance only now and then interrupted by falls of water hurrying down the steep declivities in beautiful cascades to the vales beneath: but the noise of these numerous cataracts is at once overpowered and lost in the roar of the mighty Pacific, whose waves incessantly thunder in endless succession upon the shores and reefs of Tahiti. The rattle of our oars on the ocean's glassy surface as we approached near the shore, soon drew forth the natives, with the missionary, John Muggeridge Orsmond, who were ready to welcome and assist the strangers at their landing. We had before become acquainted with the wife of J. M. Orsmond at Bunáauia; this, together with the hearty reception now given us by her husband, produced feelings somewhat like those experienced on reaching a home: we were favoured to feel refreshed and well the next morning.

26th. "We went to look at the children who had assembled for school at sun-rising, with a considerable number of adults of both sexes. Every thing here looked clean and comfortable, as if under diligent care and superintendence, as did the different buildings, the whole being in a respectable state of repair. Being aware that the children would be gratified by notice being taken of them, I shook hands with every individual, both young and old, that was



collected. Whilst here, the people present exceedingly urged our staying with them over the next 'sabbath'-day: but as my engagements were such as could not be altered, and would prevent my consistently complying with their request, I asked J. M. Orsmond to interpret my answer, and also to tell them, that as the whole congregation was to meet me in the afternoon, I trusted, that the Divine presence would be with us, and if so, we should be satisfied with favour, and filled with the heavenly blessing of the Lord. In returning from the school, we had to pass through a long train of provisions, which the natives had procured or provided in readiness to present to us, and which, through the medium of J. M. Orsmond, we were informed were intended for our food and refreshment. Although this provision was as unnecessary as it was undesired, I felt sensible of the kindness and good-will of the people towards us, with which, at my request, they were made acquainted. The quantity of food thus furnished was enormous, sufficient it seems, probably, to have sunk our boat, if it could have been taken into her. Besides large quantities of the mountain plantain, and a variety of other vegetables and fruits, there were several fowls; and I observed among the crowd, a black pig tethered. The native boat's crew, who had brought us from Papeete, fared sumptuously for two days on the occasion; and I believe the major part was consumed, or carried off by them, as is customary, and expected at such times.

"At four o'clock, P. M., the people assembled in the meeting-house, where I had full opportunity to clear my mind towards them. The district on this peninsula being quite distinct from those on the other, it was needful that my certificates should be read, as none of the people could have previously heard them. They were read accordingly, with ample explanation, by J. M. Orsmond, before I stood on my feet. The people were turned to the light of Christ Jesus in their own hearts. They were told that their being members of an outward and visible church would not avail them in the great and awful day of account: that they must be members of the true Gospel church, the church triumphant, whose names are written in heaven; and unless this was attained whilst here, it would be too late, for it cannot be done hereafter: there is no work nor device in the grave, &c. Showing them how the primitive believers, through the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel, attained to it in their day, and that it is equally as attainable at this day, through the purifying operations of the Holy Spirit. I urged and encouraged them to persevere in this great and important work, earnestly desiring that they might not rest satisfied with an empty profession, but that they might come into the possession of the inestimable pearl, the pearl of great price, the truth, as it is in Jesus.

"It was indeed a solid and solemn opportunity, and one of those which I afterwards learned left the people hungering, I trust, for

heavenly bread; whilst to myself it was productive of that soul-enriching peace, which can only be purchased by sharing in the blessed Master's cup of sufferings, of which I had drank, and under which I had been heavily bowed down during the afternoon, before going to the meeting, and there also. And now how can I sufficiently acknowledge and declare the condescending mercy and loving-kindness of my gracious Lord God, who in a particular manner was pleased to warm the hearts of those dear people with his life-giving presence, making it an occasion truly memorable, and causing many of them to rejoice and abound with thanksgiving to his praise and to his glory. The same evening the deacons of the church, (two,) Tetohi and Puna by name, came to J. M. Orsmond's house, and being seated with us, one of them produced a letter, written on behalf of the congregation at Tea-hu-poo; which being directed to Daniel Wheeler, was opened by myself, and when literally translated by Samuel Wilson, and examined by J. M. Orsmond, and by him approved, was found to contain the address that followeth:—

Translated Copy, dated at

*"Tea-hu-poo, 26th of June, 1835.*

"Dear Friends.—The ministers with the Brethren and Sisters in London.

"Peace be unto you, in the true God Jehovah, and in Jesus Christ his Son, who came into the world to save sinful men:—we indeed are sinful men. Here is Daniel Wheeler amongst us; and he has made known unto us all the good words of Jesus Christ. And comfort has grown in our hearts; and great pleasure has been to us from his words, concerning the words of Jesus the Messiah.

"It was indeed very great pleasure in his saying to us, Jesus is the pearl of great price. It is a pearl good within, and good without. And many have been the good words that he has spoken to us. Now indeed we know assuredly he has true love to the brethren and sisters in all places where the things of Jesus are held. In that love he has come amongst us: and indeed our love is grown towards him and his son, in their making known on their way the things of Jesus, and in their visit of love to all the brethren, and in inviting all to enter in to Jesus the Messiah.

"Signed on behalf of the Church,

*"PUNA."*

"At the breaking up of the meeting in the afternoon, I told J. M. Orsmond, that I felt so much love to these people, I thought I should see them again:—when he proposed to meet me at the out-station on the other side of the peninsula next first-day but one, where he said he would collect the whole of the people from this place, and from the two other stations. I could not speak decisively at the moment, though expectation was given that it might probably be so. Since this conversation I have recollected, that

on leaving Tiarei last first-day, we were told that the people from an out-station of that district had just arrived, in expectation that we should be again at the meeting in the afternoon. It seems right for me to go to the out-station on the other side of the peninsula, called Tautira; and I find, on inquiry, that the Tiarei out-station can be visited at the same time, but that it will require fine weather and a smooth sea to effect it. It must, however, be left for the present with Him who knows the thoughts of all our hearts, before whom I desire to stand in humble resignation and willingness to go or to stay, as seemeth him good. The two men who came with the letter before mentioned, (Tetohi and Puna) remained with us until near midnight; and I think it may be said, that by the breaking of bread our spiritual eyes were opened to perceive, that the great Master was there in marvellous condescension and mercy to bless the opportunity. It was indeed a heavenly banquet: and some of us, who had lain many days in the grave, were now, like Lazarus, permitted to sit at the table with their Lord. I was reminded of the passover, and was constrained to declare amongst them,—This is the true supper—this is the sacrament indeed, as you call it. It could not be denied, for the Lord's power was over all. One of those present observed more than once, "This is what is so much wanting amongst us—spiritual religion: this is what is so much wanting." Daniel Wheeler then proceeds—"Hearken to the invitation of the Bridegroom of souls, held forth in the language of holy inspiration: 'Eat, O friends; drink, yea, drink abundantly, O beloved!' Sweet is his voice, and his countenance comely. Let us hearken that so we may be favoured to hear it. Let us wait for it with our lamps trimmed, and our lights burning, with girded loins, like men that are waiting indeed for the coming of their Lord, for sweet is his voice, even the voice of Him, the same, and no other, who said, 'Behold I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.' Then let us hearken, so that we may hear, and be ready to open the doors of our hearts, that the King of Glory may come in. Blessed and happy are they that hear and obey; they share in the highest, greatest, and richest heavenly favour bestowed on earth by the quickening Spirit of the Lord from heaven, upon poor, frail, mortal dust. These 'behold the King in his beauty,' and cannot refrain from declaring to others, that sweet is His voice, and his countenance comely.

27th. "Rose early, and after breakfast took leave of the family, and embarked forthwith for Pápara. We reached Mairi Péhe, (about forty miles,) before two o'clock, P. M.; Samuel Henry rode on horseback to the Marai, whilst we pushed on in the boat, intending to meet together on the spot. This Marai was, during the days of idolatry, considered the most sacred place upon the island. It is spoken of by Captain James Cook, who visited it when in its fullest splendour. At present it appears to be nothing more than



a stupendous heap of stones, almost hidden, with bushes and trees that have grown over it and the neighbourhood of it, where formerly human sacrifices were plentifully offered. Parting with Samuel Henry, we continued our course to Pápára, and passed through the opening of the reef with a strong current, before the sun went down. At this place the boys were amusing themselves in the surf, by lying at full length on their backs upon boards, and letting the rolling, curling breakers whirl them precipitately down the liquid precipice to the gulf below. Some of the boys best acquainted with this slippery sport, by watching the proper moment to launch forth, were hurled with great velocity to considerable distances, without being dislodged from their slippery board, while the unskilful would be impetuously rolled over by the curling wave, and for a time altogether hidden in the foam below. We were received with kindness by the ancient missionary, John Davies, at whose house we passed the night.

28th. (*First-day.*) "At nine o'clock, A. M., the Tahitian worship commenced. John Davies had previously told me, that if I should have any thing to speak to the people, he himself would interpret for me. When the customary service was gone through, and John Davies came down from his pulpit, I rose and stood near him." When the attention of the people was attracted, and stillness prevailed, Daniel Wheeler communicated what was upon his mind, and he adds,—“notwithstanding there was reason to apprehend that many would be able to collect but a small part of what was said, on account of the feeble state of the interpreter, yet it was so evident that the Divine presence and power reigned over all, that I had to appeal to the people as witnesses to the solemnizing influence with which we were favoured. I trust the Lord alone was exalted this day and magnified; and the people turned to their true teacher, Christ Jesus, whose name shall be great in every nation, from the rising of the sun to the going down of the same. Whatever might be the feelings of others on this occasion, I am not aware; it was to myself a highly favoured, precious season, the sense and remembrance of which is relieving, and still abiding: and although some days have now passed away since this event took place, it yet raises in my heart a tribute of thanksgiving, and a song of praise to my great, and bountiful, and ever merciful Creator and Preserver.

“One part of this journey from Pápára to this place, was attended with considerable risk, by a violent current, (occasioned by some alteration which had occurred in the wind, driving immense bodies of water from the ocean, through the open parts of the reef,) causing broken water in every direction, through the midst of which we were compelled to pass, surrounded by innumerable spires and stones of coral rock that presented themselves in every direction; and through the narrow winding intricacies of which we were sometimes whirled in a frightful manner, but safely con-

ducted through them all without any disaster; although the Tahitians were thrown into confusion, which added materially to the risk we were encountering, by their hastily rising from their seats.

"We staid a short time at the house of David Darling, and then proceeded with a fresh and favourable wind towards Papeete. Soon after passing through the opening from the ocean, to get within the next range of reef, the wind which had been fair, died away, and then sprung up directly opposite to the course of the boat. We were favoured to reach the 'Henry Freeling,' about an hour after dark, and to find all well on board.

30th. "Yesterday employed on board most of the day. In the evening wrote late to bring up my Journal, which had fallen behind for want of opportunity suitable to write it, while absent from the ship. To-day still looking forward towards the Tautira journey, and shall be thankful to feel clearness and strength from my heavenly Father, whether by staying or going." On this day Daniel Wheeler received the following letter from the queen of Tahiti.

A literal translation of the letter, by Samuel Wilson, of Point Venus.

*"Tahiti, 30th of June, 1835."*

"I do away with the money for the anchoring of the vessel. This is the reason why I do away with it, because thine is a visit of love, and not a trading voyage. If it was a trading voyage, it would not be done away with: I would still demand the money for the anchoring: but because thine is a visit of love, I have not therefore demanded the money.

*(Signed,) "POMARE V."*

"Health to thee and thy son in your (two) voyaging."

"Na Daniella Wira."

## CHAPTER VII.

Set out for Tautira—a native "feeding"—meetings at Tautira—visit to Hitea—a solemn opportunity—public meeting—return to the Henry Freeling—meeting for the white residents—obstructions to the progress of religion—visit to the queen—meeting for the white residents on board the Henry Freeling—letters from home—distribution of books—meeting on board the "Charles Carrol."

1st of Seventh month. "In the forenoon busily employed in preparing packages to send to the stations of Pápára and Taiarapu, to make some amends for the trouble our late journey had occasioned. The eldest son of Tati, the principal chief at Pápára, came on board to dinner. His behaviour throughout would have

done credit to a people much farther advanced in civilization than the Tahitians. Before going away he was furnished with a razor, a pair of strong scissors, a pocket-knife, and a pen-knife for his father; and also with articles of the same description for himself, and a work-bag for the wives of both parties. Before he left us, George Pritchard came on board to bid us farewell, as the vessel in which he was about to sail was getting under weigh. He was going to visit the missions at the Leeward Islands, forming the Society group, and afterwards intending to proceed to the Marquesas to see the state of things there, and to bring back David Darling, who went thither several months ago to establish the missionaries, Stalworthy and Rogerson, on those islands. Got on shore for exercise towards the cool of the day. In the evening, Samuel Wilson and Dr. Vaughan came on board.

2nd. "Prepared ourselves, expecting that we should have to be in readiness to proceed on our way towards Tautira, either late this evening, or at a very early hour to-morrow morning, so that we might have a few hours to spare to contend with the wind, if it should prove too strongly opposed to us. A whale-boat and a crew of Tahitians were accordingly provided for our journey. After our interpreter, Samuel Wilson, came on board, we were soon convinced of the propriety of moving forward this afternoon, in order to make sure of the object before us, as much as laid in our power.

"With exertion we got off at half-past four o'clock, and were scarcely seated in the boat, when it was discovered, that the wind which had blown favourably all the day, was now changed against us. The men had a heavy pull up to Point Venus, (of late years called Matarai,) where we landed, and drank tea at Charles Wilson's: There was a little delay at the sea-side, while our men finished their vegetable meal, and then set forward again; but the wind continuing fresh against us, it was eleven o'clock at night before it was reported that we were abreast of the narrow entrance to Tiarei; and the moon which had shone beautifully all the evening, was now sunk behind the island, just at a moment when most needed to light us through the difficult opening in the reef. But having witnessed beforetime the danger of missing the passage in the dark, and seeing the great utility of timely rousing the sleeping natives, I did not fail to urge this precaution being adopted, as soon as we began to steer shorewards. As we drew near the breakers, the crew shouted and yelled in true native character, until answered by one of the people on the shore, who was presently seen running with a lighted torch in his hand, and soon took up his station directly opposite the narrow pass through the reef. On nearing the coast, it was found that we were only a few yards to the eastward of it, and sufficiently distant to allow of the boat's head being turned in a fair direction, without touching the rock. A few surges hove us through this little gulf into smooth



water; and the crew taking us upon their backs, soon placed their burden upon the sandy beach, beyond the reach of the agitated waters.

“Upon arriving at the ancient missionary’s dwelling, it was ascertained that the family were all asleep; but, however undesirable, there was no alternative but that of disturbing them, to afford us shelter for a few hours, as the boat’s crew were too much exhausted by having had so long to contend against both the wind and the swell of the sea, to proceed further without rest. I believe, as regarded ourselves, we should have preferred spending the remainder of the night in the boat, as the wind is most gentle in the night season, when it has been strong during the day. William Henry himself soon gave us a hearty welcome, and allowed us to set out in the morning as early as we thought proper, without waiting for breakfast.

3d. “Rising before day, we departed without seeing any of the inmates belonging to the house, and continued our course towards Tautira. As the morning advanced, the wind freshened against us, and before noon, was so much increased, that it was concluded best to run in the boat at the first aperture that the coral-clad shore should present for our relief: and just at the moment when the united strength of the men was scarcely able to impel her forward, we found ourselves opposite to a narrow passage, but sufficiently wide, with skilful management, to admit of our entering it with safety; and a native from the nearest hut placed himself as a beacon for our guide. On landing, the boat was immediately hauled up to rescue her from the invasion of the breaking surf. The hut, not far distant, proved to be the residence of a chief, who, we were informed, was gone forward to Tautira with our friend J. M. Orsmond, who had arrived that morning at Pahua, the place we had now reached, on his way from Tea-hu-poo to Tautira. From hence it seemed best to despatch a letter by a messenger to him, to say that we had arrived at this point, and were only waiting for the force of the wind to lessen, when it was our intention to proceed, so as to reach the place of destination as early as might be, that evening, which would allow the whole of next day (*seventh*,) for the information to spread, in the hope that the meeting-house would be filled with people the next morning.

“Having had but little to refresh us since leaving Point Venus the preceding evening, two o’clock the next afternoon was rather a late breakfast hour; the resident natives had, however, lost no time in preparing some food for us. After our arrival, they killed and roasted whole a good sized pig upon hot stones, covered over with leaves and then with wood ashes, with bread-fruit, tarro, and the mountain plantain. When this ‘feeding,’ as they term it, was ready, and the floor covered over to a considerable extent with the large leaves of the purau-tree, it was presented to us in a formal

manner, with a bundle of the island cloth, (made from the beaten bark of the bread-fruit-tree,) according to the custom of the country. The company then sat down upon the floor, consisting of Samuel Wilson, Charles and myself, with the boat's crew close to us, but according to usage, forming a distinct party. One of our men, who had acted the part of cook, cut up the pig, using a knife with one hand, and holding the victim with the other. We had a solemn pause before beginning to dine, and all remained still until this was over. When the carver had well separated the pig into a variety of shapeless lumps, he threw some of them to us, and the rest to his comrades, and the whole was pretty soon out of sight. The milk of fresh-pulled young cocoa-nuts furnished our drink, and salt water, in calabashes, fresh from the Pacific to-dip the food in, was used instead of salt: this we found to be an excellent substitute. When nearly ready to depart, about six yards off a piece of pocket handkerchiefs was given to the man that had charge of the premises during the absence of the owner. It may be said that we dined in public, as the place was pretty well crowded with lookers on, principally women and children.

"We got nicely out of the creek, and the wind, now much lower, although still opposing, allowed us to proceed with less difficulty. The day was nearly closing when we reached Tautira, situate at almost the easternmost end of the island; it is a straggling village, and is only about ten miles distant from Tea-hu-poo, where we had been the preceding week; the whole belonging to the district under J. M. Orsmond's care. On approaching the mouth of the river, this active missionary was discovered in waiting to welcome our arrival. He conducted us to the residence (when here) of the queen, at which place we remained during our stay in the neighbourhood. In a short time after reaching these premises our attention was awakened by the voice of a person speaking aloud, in as high a tone as could be well imagined. This man, we were told, was the queen's speaker, who was come in *her* name, that of the *church*, and of the whole of the *inhabitants*, to welcome us to Tautira. On going to him at the door, he delivered a sort of congratulatory address, which happily was soon over; as the man spoke so loud as to be quite fearful to our ears. After partaking of some refreshment, in true Tahitian style, the deacons and some others of the congregation assembled in the room, and one of them read a portion of Scripture, and prayed at considerable length. When this was finished, a general conversation followed, principally on our coming to visit them, and of a serious nature. We retired to rest about nine o'clock; J. M. Orsmond stretched himself upon a strong bench with a back to it, something like a sofa, Samuel Wilson upon a mat on the floor, and Charles and myself upon a mat spread over a raised frame, and supported by open work, made from the bark of a tree, which I thought an excellent bed. At this place I found my gimlets particularly useful in keep-

ing my clothing a considerable height above the floor, by which they were not only out of the damp, but avoided the vermin, which were very annoying, and of various kinds. A house-lizard was caught upon the wall in the course of the evening; and although the house had been built several years, it had never had doors; so that dogs, rats, &c., had free access to any part of it. It was however to myself a peaceful and comfortable asylum.

"Next morning, the 4th of Seventh month, we visited the principal part of the town or village, after having been presented with an ample feeding in due form by its inhabitants, accompanied, as usual, by a bundle of island-made cloth, and many assurances of welcome. This feeding fell into the hands of our boat's crew. A quantity of vegetables were unconsumed when the place was left, and they took away with them at least seven fowls alive. In the afternoon the body of the congregation assembled to receive us, where my certificates were read, and three persons spoke in strong terms of approbation and thankfulness at our coming amongst them, and of the satisfaction that had been conveyed to their minds by the language contained in the certificates. I had to speak a few sentences to them in reference to the certificates, declaring that I had no other motive for visiting them, than that the fulness of the blessing of the Gospel might be theirs; that some of them then present must have witnessed what the effect had been, as far as it had already been faithfully embraced; what then must be the result, when all the dreadful passions which pervade the human breast are brought under its benign and heavenly influence? nothing less than peace on earth, good will towards men: at which none of them could refrain from rejoicing in the prospect, and uniting together in giving God the glory. On their being informed that my intention was to stay with them over the forenoon meeting to-morrow, and then endeavour to proceed to Hitea, they came forward, and in a pressing manner, desired us to stay over the sabbath, and spend the whole day with them. This, however, I could not decide upon at the moment; but a reason being given, which made its probability doubtful, they were in measure prepared not to expect it. Some of the people seemed much disappointed at my not being willing to accept of small presents of shells, &c. I requested J. M. Orsmond to inform them, that I sought not theirs, but them; their souls to God.

5th. (*First-day.*) "It is a little remarkable, that to-day should be the opening of a newly erected meeting-house, (only finished yesterday) of large dimensions. This building is erected upon the site of an ancient Marai, a place where preposterous scenes of idolatry and superstition had for ages been exhibited. At half-past eight o'clock the children of the school assembled to be catechized, and at nine o'clock the regular congregation gathered. The meeting was well attended; and Samuel Wilson performed the duties, which at other times devolve upon the resident missionary at each



station. Towards the close of their meeting, I was strengthened to stand up, and to recite the query of our blessed Lord, 'Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?' which led on to the gracious answer given by himself, after looking round upon his disciples; 'Behold my mother and my brethren! for whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.'

"The people were very attentive in the neighbourhood of the place where I stood, and full opportunity was afforded for me to clear my mind, and the everlasting blessed truth was set over all. It had been previously fixed for us to set off towards Hitea as soon as this meeting was ended, in order to reach that place in time for the afternoon gathering there, yet it did not seem as if I had fully done with them at Tautira. The morning had been rainy, with thunder, and the general appearance of the weather now became more than ever threatening. The wind had shifted, and it was blowing strong from the point to which we wanted to go. Upon inquiry of those best acquainted with the distance from place to place, and the effect which the present strong wind and swell of the sea would have in retarding our progress, with the probability of our not being able to make much headway in the heavy gusts which frequently broke forth, it appeared to be the general opinion that it was not practicable for us to arrive in time for the afternoon meeting at Hitea. This, with the information that the natives never travel themselves in rainy weather, nor expect strangers to do so, determined me without hesitation to remain with the people of Tautira, and I had satisfaction in believing, that I should be in the right place; the tempestuous state of the weather, as the afternoon advanced, served to confirm the propriety of the measure adopted.

"In the afternoon meeting, I had to tell the people, on standing up, that however contrary to my expectation, I was fully persuaded that my sitting amongst them again was not only in the will of the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, but in his everlasting love to their immortal souls, in which my heart was greatly enlarged. Many solemn and incontrovertible truths were brought to my remembrance to speak before them, under a fresh and renewed influence of heavenly strength, graciously vouchsafed, enabling me to sound an alarm, and to point out the repenting sinner's sure and never-failing friend and refuge, Christ Jesus, the Lord of life and glory; I humbly hope to the exaltation of the great and adorable name of the just and merciful, and only true God, and our Saviour.

"Just as the meeting was about to break up, the attention of the people was arrested by an individual asking me in English, whether I could speak encouragingly, and with confidence, that the day was not far distant when the reign of the Messiah would be universal in the earth. I told him that I could speak with the full-

est confidence of all the great and precious promises recorded in Holy Writ, connected with this important and interesting subject. As to the day being not far distant which he spoke of, I was one of those who believed that it was already come into the hearts of those who believed in the inward and spiritual appearance of the Lord Jesus by his Holy Spirit—who loved him, and obeyed his voice. The substance of what had passed was then imparted to the people at large. We then separated, under a solemn feeling, better and more easily to be conceived than described. The weather cleared up in the evening; and a feeling pervaded, as if nothing had been lost by the delay, which it had apparently occasioned.

“On the 6th of Seventh month, after a break-of-day breakfast, of baked pork, the mountain plantain, and cocoa-nut milk, we took leave, and departed, with a favourable prospect, for Hitea. We had not rowed much more than an hour, when the trade-wind sprung up in our favour, and drove us along the coast so quickly, that by ten o’clock, A. M., we were abreast of the out-station about to be visited. On landing, we met with Etoti and Paofai, two brothers, and principals amongst the inland chiefs, then on travel towards Pápara. With both these men I had been acquainted from almost the first of our setting foot on Tahitian ground. We were informed that the people had been collected, in expectation of our arrival the preceding day to the afternoon meeting, but that the weather had accounted for our absence. At first I thought, that having made two attempts to see these people, viz., when first at Tiarei, they arrived too late, and now again on returning from Tautira, on each occasion, prevented by the weather from seeing them assembled as proposed, that I might venture to move forward towards the Bay of Papeete, where we left our vessel lying: but on being informed and assured that if I would stay till next morning, a meeting would be held in due course at sun-rise, and that many people would attend, I found that I could do no less than make the sacrifice of another day, by remaining on the spot, however inconveniently circumstanced. The idea that I might venture to move on, and pass by these people, had been none other than a plausible suggestion of the grand enemy; but I was delivered out of his hand. This being agreed upon, and made known, we were shown to an empty house, similar to a large bird-cage in appearance, perhaps occasionally occupied, though having but little trace of that to be seen.

“This house was built with open lattice-walls, and screens of cocoa-nut branches to keep out the wind. The floors were covered with withered grass, from long use, in very dirty condition, because laid upon loose earth, in a low and damp situation. There were latticed divisions which made four apartments, but not a door either within or without. The people soon brought us a supply of food, according to their custom of treating strangers; and in due

time beds were prepared upon posts driven into the earth, which consisted of clean mats spread upon frames for us to lie on. We paid a visit to the resident chief, to whom I was no stranger, having seen him more than once on board the vessel. At his house a large feeding was preparing, to which we were invited, but declined to partake of it. In the course of the afternoon we looked round the neighbourhood; and after the evening's refreshment of ourselves and boat's crew, the governor, and the elders, or deacons of the church, with a native teacher, came to visit us. These were soon followed by a number of men, women, and children, and when the room in which we sat was pretty well filled with guests, squatted on the floor, the adjoining room was occupied by others as they came in, which were only separated from the rest by open lattice-work; through this they could distinctly see and hear, and be heard, almost as well as if we had been together in the same place. The result of what followed was truly comforting and consoling. On inquiring of the native teacher, through the medium of Samuel Wilson, our interested and highly interesting companion and interpreter, whether there was any indication that would encourage and justify a hope that some few among the people were desirous to improve in those things that accompany life and salvation; he said that there were instances where this was, he thought, discernible, and that he himself was very desirous and anxious that this should be the case; that he laboured hard for it, greatly desiring to work, while it is day. I said, where there is such a desire in the teacher, and a correspondent one in the object of his care, a happy result, under the Divine blessing, could scarcely fail to be produced, (or to this import.) I told him, however, that although the text he had mentioned might in some degree be applicable to the work in which he was engaged, yet I did conceive it was more so, as regarded the great work of regeneration in the heart of man. That this great and important, and indispensable work, could be done only while the light of the day of merciful visitation was extended, and if this unhappily be overlooked and neglected, a night of darkness will assuredly follow, in which no man can work. 'If, therefore, the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness.' That there was a day of visitation extended to every son and daughter of Adam, sufficiently long for them all to work out their own soul's salvation, with fear and trembling; and it was also as certain, that this day might, from one cause or other, be overlooked and withstood, or suffered to pass away unimproved and neglected. That this was evident from the language of the compassionate Saviour, when he lamented and wept over the city of Jerusalem: 'If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace, but now they are hid from thine eyes.' 'How often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would



not.' Which plainly shows that her children might have been gathered; but, alas! they would not, because they knew not the day of their visitation; their destruction was of themselves. As we proceeded with this kind of conversation, the company more and more settled down into serious thoughtfulness. One person, however, seemed very desirous to understand what was my real object in coming to their island; several reasons were alleged, but they were evidently not comprehended or not satisfactory. The spirituality of the Gospel dispensation was gradually brought before the view of their minds, and it was strikingly evident, that there was a fertile soil, or good ground prepared by the ever-blessed husbandman, in the hearts of some present, for the reception of the sacred truths that were afterwards disclosed to their view.

"At the close of this opportunity such a solemnity spread over us, as could not be mistaken, even had the doors been shut, for peace be unto you, although not outwardly proclaimed, was known and felt to be amongst us by some present. Some of them could not forbear expressing their inward state, and their fear, from the uncertainty they were in, as to the future well-being of their immortal souls. It was indeed a season never to be forgotten, for it seemed as if some of their hearts were laid open by the Almighty Searcher, and a willingness wrought to confess their sins, and to call on the name of the Lord, through the powerful efficacy of redeeming love shed abroad therein, and working in them to will and to do of the Lord's good pleasure. To the praise of the riches of his grace be it faithfully recorded, in characters which can never be defaced whilst memory holds her place. At a late hour we adjourned until sunrise next morning, the 7th of the Seventh month, when the people generally assembled in a commodious meeting-house.

"As this was a meeting held in regular course of their own, the accustomed duties were performed by Samuel Wilson, who acted instead of their native teacher. My certificates were then read, which seemed to prepare the minds of the people for the solemn season with which we were afterwards favoured. I had a fine open time amongst them, during which the path to the kingdom was pointed out, and set before them; wherein a wayfaring man, though a fool, cannot err: the state of mind which must be attained to by all, before true spiritual worship can be performed, and accepted by him, who only is worshipped in spirit and in truth, was, I trust, declared in plainness. I had largely to treat on the all-sufficiency of the 'light,' the 'grace,' which hath appeared to all men, bringing salvation to all men; teaching all men that by denying ungodliness and the world's lusts, they should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world; and commending them unto God and the word of his grace, which is able to build us up, and to give us an inheritance amongst those that are already sanctified by faith that is in Christ Jesus. I sat down with a

thankful and peaceful mind. Before we separated, one of the people stood up, and thanked me, in the name of the queen and of the church. I requested Samuel Wilson to say, that no thanks were due to me. I had done no more than that which was my duty to do, and was only an unprofitable servant. After taking some refreshment, we proceeded to the boat, and the wind being fresh and fair, we sailed briskly along the coast to Tiarei. Our stay here was limited, for fear of losing the wind, yet we did not like to pass by the mission-house altogether, whose inhabitants we might never see again. We had from hence a rapid passage to Point Venus, and were favoured to reach the 'Henry Freeling' the same afternoon, though late, and to find all well and comfortable on board.

9th. "Since returning from Hitea, my attention has been turned towards the white residents in this neighbourhood, and I have endeavoured to dwell under the prospect of collecting them together, with those from the different vessels, (now here) at eleven o'clock next *first-day*.

11th. "After breakfast, went by boat to inquire of Eliza Pritchard, (her husband having sailed for the Marquesas Islands,) whether there would be any meeting for the English to-morrow; as in the morning matters so far opened, that I found it best to tell my Charles, I did not see that I could do less than endeavour to meet the English residents to-morrow forenoon. But little information could, however, be obtained on the subject, until late in the evening, when a missionary from a distant station came on board to tell me that he had given notice of a meeting to be held on his own account, but that he should be glad to turn it over to me. As he had appointed it himself, it seemed best to tell him that he must go on with it, but that I intended to be there; and if I should have anything to offer, it would be only according to Gospel order. Our captain took considerable pains, late in the evening, to spread the information, that all persons inclining to attend might have an opportunity of knowing there would be such a meeting held.

12th. (*First-day*.) "Called at George Pritchard's house a little before the time appointed, to be in readiness, it being near the meeting-house. I met there with the missionary that had given notice last evening, who wished me (as he expressed it) to begin the service of the meeting. I was best satisfied to decline the offer, as he had personally given notice of it, and by those unto whom he had spoken, it was certainly understood to be for himself: if it had been appointed for me, it could only begin in silent waiting upon God. It afterwards occurred to me, however, that at a proper time it would be safest for me, if found needful, to spread the subject before the meeting when collected together, and believing that I should have to speak to the people, I availed myself of an interval, (when the missionary had read the fourteenth chapter of Luke, and said a prayer,) to step upon the base of the pulpit, which was

raised more than a foot above the floor, and state that,—As this meeting was not specifically appointed on my account, it might be considered out of order to open my mouth in it; but as we might never have the opportunity of meeting together again, I had been made willing to attend it, and in the ability which might be given me, to minister in it if called upon: that such a mode of procedure would still be only in accordance with the true order of the Gospel: but, if any should consider it an intrusion, I hoped they would speak and object, and I believed I should be satisfied with having made this offer. No one spoke, until the missionary said, ‘he believed there was not the least objection in the minds of any present.’” In the course of the meeting Daniel Wheeler expressed what was upon his mind at considerable length. The people behaved in a solid manner, and a solemn covering prevailed.

13th. “Employed on board most of the day. Omitted mentioning that last week a canoe from Tea-hu-poo, and another from Tautira, reached the ship. In both these canoes were persons with whom we had social and religious intercourse at the places where they reside. Their coming afforded an opportunity to send clothing and slates for some of the most diligent children at the district schools in those parts; and nails suitable for general purposes, to the different congregations. As the dear people composing them had abundantly more than administered to my wants when amongst them, it was a relief to be enabled to return their kindness.

“There are so many aggravated circumstances which contribute to lessen the desire of the people for religion, that the present prospect of things here is truly discouraging; added to which, the landing of spirituous liquors is permitted or winked at, from the English whalers and traders from the colonies of New South Wales, and those from America, which are much more numerous than the British. Hopeless indeed will be every attempt to Christianize the natives of those islands, that are labouring under and exposed to these disadvantages, which must ever obstruct the free course of the Gospel.

15th. “This afternoon went up to Papaoa in one of our own boats. On our return we called to take leave of the queen. We found her sitting on the step at the back-door, with several of her chiefs squatted round about her, one of whom had been reading to the others, until interrupted by our approach. The king was sitting on a wall, eating part of a cocoa-nut. For want of an interpreter, I had no opportunity to acknowledge the indulgence of the queen, Pomare, for remitting the port-charges upon our vessel. Reached the ‘Henry Freeling’ before dark. Soon after our return, the carpenter of the vessel was seized with violent inflammatory symptoms, which had increased so rapidly by eleven o’clock P. M., that a boat was despatched for Doctor Vaughan. John Norris, one of our strongest seamen, has for some days been rendered totally



unfit for duty, by a similar attack, and the apprentice is nearly useless with an inflamed leg. Many persons on shore, both natives and foreigners, are in a weak state, occasioned, it is thought, by the coolness of the night air, while the sun by day emits a scorching heat. We have great cause to be thankful for the blessing of health so graciously bestowed upon us, whilst visiting the different stations on every part of the island, notwithstanding the great dampness of the lodging-places which fell to our lot, and the variety of food, to which we were for the most part wholly unaccustomed; at the same time exposed to every sort of weather in an open boat, in heavy dews, at times for hours together. The distance travelled on these occasions exceeded three hundred miles; but, for the most part, under the reefs of shelving coral, which skirt the island in many places in a wonderfully providential manner: where these do not extend, the swellings of the Pacific had to be encountered. The rapid boiling currents, in some places, rendered our situation perilous at times; but the Lord was nigh, sustaining us through all, and making our way prosperous in a remarkable manner, as already described and recorded in some of the most favourable interviews with the people, and I humbly trust, to the exaltation of His own great and ever excellent name. Who would not fear Him? Who would not serve Him?

16th. (*Fifth-day*.) "The fore part of the morning much unsettled by the natives being more numerous on board than usual; but a large ship appearing in the offing, served to attract most of them away, as she approached nearer to the reefs. This ship proved to be the 'Charles Carroll,' Reuben Weeks, master; out twenty months from Rhode Island, in America. It was quite a relief to be permitted to sit down in quiet silence this morning, although much was found still remaining to cause a painful struggle between flesh and spirit.

18th. "Yesterday, (with the exception of taking our usual exercise on shore about sun-down,) busily employed on board, amongst other things, in selecting copies of the Scriptures in the English, French, Spanish and Portuguese languages; a large number of religious tracts, and some standard works and writings of Friends for Samuel Wilson. This morning, called on board the American ship 'Charles Carroll,' for a short time. My mind has at times, both yesterday and to-day, been occupied with the prospect of holding another meeting with the white inhabitants residing in this neighbourhood, together with the crews of the vessels in the bay, and any other persons that understand English. On considering this subject, it seemed best to hold this meeting on board the 'Henry Freeling.' It was late in the afternoon, before I ventured to disclose my prospect to my son Charles and captain Keen, lest instead of being found following my heavenly Guide, I should be detected in having, through mistaken zeal, got before him, and missed the way.

19th. (*First-day.*) "In the morning early, the deck of the 'Henry Freeling' (with the assistance of some planks furnished from the 'Charles Carroll,' and our own resources) was prepared with seats in readiness for the intended meeting. At half-past ten o'clock, our own boats, and one from the American ship, were employed to convey the people on board from the different parts of the shore, and soon after eleven, the meeting was comfortably settled. As there were a number of persons present who had never before attended a Friends' meeting, and were wholly unacquainted with the manner in which they are conducted, it seemed best, after we had sat for some time, to suggest the necessity of our endeavouring to restrain all wandering thoughts and imaginations, that we might be sensible of the Lord's life-giving presence, if peradventure we should be favoured therewith; and also be the better prepared to receive any thing He might please to give for expression, for our edification and refreshment, or words to this import. A covering of solemnity now drew over the assembly, and continued in a precious manner, under which, I was strengthened and raised up to speak of the ways of the Lord amongst them; repeating the expressions to his disciples, which so beautifully illustrate the immediate connexion between himself and the church, under the similitude of the vine and its branches. 'I am the vine, ye are the branches; he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.' And if we stand in need of help to wade through the common occurrences of human life, how much more needful then the assistance of his Holy Spirit, when thus assembled together for the professed purpose of worshipping that God, who 'is a Spirit,' and must be worshipped 'in Spirit and in truth.' After this, I had to speak of the excellency and efficacy of silent waiting upon Almighty God, in order to be qualified for the right performance of this spiritual worship, to which we as a Society have always borne a faithful testimony, that mankind might be turned to the only true teacher of His people, Christ Jesus, without whom we can do nothing, but all things by and through the strengthening influence of his Holy Spirit. Contrasting the worship under the law, with that under the present glorious Gospel dispensation, unlimited in its extent as to time and place, but which can never be acceptably performed, while we continue in sin and transgression, because it must be done in the beauty of holiness, and in newness of life, through the blessed aid of the Holy Spirit, in Spirit and in truth. I had strongly to press the necessity of every individual's turning inward, and of diligently seeking an acquaintance with this manifestation of the Holy Spirit, a measure of which is mercifully bestowed upon every son and daughter of the human race; and which, if sought unto, would set their sins in order before them, in love and mercy, that they might repent and be saved from them. Appealing to them, whether they had not been sensible of the strivings of this blessed

Spirit, when sin had been committed: at the same time declaring that it might be withstood and rebelled against, until it ceased to strive, and themselves be suffered to go on, adding sin to sin, without feeling its reproofs and checks. If this light (of Christ) in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! thus would the day of their visitation be passed over, and they know it not; and this light, if once withdrawn and extinguished in Divine displeasure, could never be rekindled, although before they might often have been gathered, like Jerusalem of old. The heads above quoted may suffice to show the substance of what I had to express amongst them, though but a small part of the whole. The Lord has been pleased to favour us with many blessed meetings; but this for solemnity and stillness, exceeded all. 'Blessed be the Lord God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things; and blessed be his glorious name for ever: and let the whole earth be filled with his glory. Amen, and Amen.'

"Our two sick men continue in a precarious state, and their absence from duty seems to protract our stay here, but I believe it is in the Divine will; and though sensible of almost daily increasing infirmities, arising from the decay of nature, yet I am mercifully supported in humble resignation to whatever may yet be in reserve for me to accomplish, being fully persuaded and taught to confide in the all-sufficiency of that Almighty power, that can, at His pleasure, help me to run through a troop of difficulties and besetments, and to leap over a wall of opposition and unbelief. And as I believe it to be so, why should I not say, in the language of the apostle, 'I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.'

"On *second-day* morning, the 20th inst., began to prepare the vessel for sea, in the hope that our two invalids will soon be restored to health, though at present much reduced and extremely weak.

"On *third-day*, the 21st., Elijah Armitage arrived from the island of Moorea, or Eimeo, charged with a packet of letters for us, from London, which had been left there by the 'Ulitea,' Captain Hunter, from Sidney, New South Wales, on her way to Raiatea. Our joy may be more easily conceived than described, more especially on finding an uninterrupted series of favourable accounts from home, as well as, in the general, from others whom we also dearly love. They did not fail to raise in my heart a tribute of thankfulness and gratitude to the great Preserver of men, our Almighty and merciful Benefactor.

23d. "By the mission, which is nearly ready to proceed to the Navigator's Islands, or Samoas, an eligible opportunity is afforded, through the medium of Samuel Wilson, for an extensive circulation of the Sacred Writings, and other books of a religious nature. We have accordingly furnished a supply of the Scriptures in the English, French, Spanish, and Portuguese languages. As many white people and Europeans are known to be mingled amongst the inha-



bitants of this extensive group of islands; a large quantity of Friends' tracts, and of those from the Tract Society, were also selected for distribution through this channel.

24th. "This forenoon the 'Harmony' sailed for the Sandwich Islands. In this vessel, the mail brought from Sidney by the 'Henry Freeling,' was duly forwarded. It would have been better for the people of Tahiti, if she had never entered the Bay of Papeete, having been a fruitful source of wickedness, from having landed a considerable quantity of rum, although all spirits are strictly prohibited by the present laws of that island. If all persons who contribute to the destruction of their fellow-creatures, by this or any other evil practice, were publicly stigmatized as the agents of Satan, and at all times shunned by virtuous characters, as unworthy of being noticed while persisting therein, it might, I think, be a means of compelling some of them to desist and to be ashamed of their conduct, and perhaps deter them from further adding sin to sin, in causing others to sin by their means. The 'Raiatea,' a vessel engaged to convey the mission to the Samoas, sailed soon after noon for Eimeo.

"In the departure of Samuel Wilson for the Samoas, we have lost a most willing, competent, and faithful interpreter: but as he was provided for us in a manner altogether unexpected and unlooked-for, we may safely trust that we shall yet be cared for in this respect while amongst the islands which we have to visit of the Society group.

25th. "At the close of the public meeting on board the 'Henry Freeling,' last first-day morning, Reuben Weeks, the master of the 'Charles Carroll,' expressed a desire that a meeting might be held on board his own vessel, when all the crew would be collected together: of this I was afterwards informed. This did not escape my recollection, and my attention was frequently turned to it in the course of the past week, though until this morning I did not mention it; when I did not see how I should stand acquitted, without availing myself of the offered opportunity, and embracing it. Having mentioned the subject, after breakfast, to our captain and my Charles, I wished to ascertain whether if the meeting should be held on board the American ship to-morrow forenoon, it would be attended by the whole of the crew. There appearing no doubt on this head, I felt willing that Captain Keen should inform Reuben Weeks, that I had no objection to the meeting being held on board the 'Charles Carroll,' provided the whole crew, without any compulsory measures being adopted, should be found willing to attend it, but that they should be left at their liberty to choose for themselves in this matter. It is a regular custom, on board whaling-ships, when lying here, to allow one half of the seamen to be daily on shore for exercise; and therefore I am desirous that all who may attend our meeting should do it of their own accord, as it was known that only one half of the ship's company attended our

meeting last *first-day*, the other half having claimed the privilege of their liberty. As this doubt was removed to my satisfaction, the meeting was appointed to be held, as proposed, at eleven o'clock to-morrow morning. Care was taken that this intention should be spread to all the vessels in the bay, and on the shore also. At noon, Reuben Weeks came on board to say, that William Henry, the missionary from Tiarei, (now here on account of sickness in his family,) had given notice that *Service for the English* would be performed by him to-morrow, at their chapel, on shore, at eleven o'clock. I did not see it my place to flinch from the arrangement which had been made as to our meeting, more especially as no invitation had been extended from the shore to the crews of the shipping. In the evening, I called upon William Henry, who having heard of our intended meeting, at once said that he should countermand the notice he had given, and would come himself to our meeting, not doubting but his hearers would be very willing to join him in so doing. Our sick men are still very weak and unfit for duty.

27th. "Yesterday morning, we repaired on board the 'Charles Carroll,' in time to attend the meeting appointed. About fifty persons were assembled on the occasion, and the Lord was graciously pleased to give us a precious season together, and to magnify his ever great and adorable name. With those that attended from the shore, were the missionary and his wife from Roratogna, Eliza, the wife of George Pritchard, and William Henry, of Tiarei.

"After the meeting had sat a considerable time in silence, it was with me to make a few remarks, to wean the expectation of the people from words, and to prepare them for a longer time of silence, (if that should be permitted.) I had to tell them, that if I was to read to them, or to speak to them in my own strength, it would only be an act between one man and others; but that worship, for which very solemn purpose we were met together, could only be performed between man and his Almighty Creator, who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth, with our spirits, through the Spirit of his dear Son, the Truth. A precious covering of solemnity now spread over us, under the feeling of which we continued until the time was fully come for clearing my mind amongst them, and declaring the mercy, loving-kindness, compassion and faithfulness of my God, who willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all should return, repent, and live for ever. The means were amply provided by His sending his only-begotten Son into the world, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have everlasting life; who came not to kill or destroy—He came, that we might have life, and that we might have it more abundantly, declaring himself to be 'the Way, and the Truth, and the Life;' and he continues to be so to all such as not only believe in His outward appearance upon earth, and in His sufferings, death, and resurrection, but in his inward and spi-

ritual appearance also in their hearts, and in the operation of his Holy Spirit there, even that of burning and fuel of fire, to the consuming of the chaffy and transgressing nature therein; and if waited for, submitted unto, and abode under, this would prepare us for an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, in the kingdom of Christ Jesus, that shall never have an end. I had largely to treat on the subject of Divine worship, and to point out the difference between that under the Mosaic dispensation, and that under the Gospel. That, with the Jews under the former, it was outward, ceremonial, and superficial, but under the latter, altogether inward, in the inner temple of the heart; simple, but spiritual and substantial, because in spirit and in truth; declaring the beauty, purity, and spirituality of the true Gospel church, of which none are members, but the ransomed and redeemed of the Lord; that have passed through the great work of regeneration and been ransomed by the blood of Jesus; with much more, with a voice of warning, and exhortation, and encouragement, as ability and utterance were graciously afforded.

"After I sat down, my heart was filled with humble gratitude, and a tribute of thanksgiving and praise was raised to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who had thus graciously condescended to make himself known amongst us, (what if I say,) by the breaking of bread. Under a sense of which, I had publicly to acknowledge the same, that the Lord should have the glory due unto his holy name. The meeting held longer than usual; but the weight and solemnity so strikingly apparent, (as afterwards openly acknowledged,) remained to the last undissipated and undiminished.—What, indeed, is man, or the son of man, that the Lord Most High is thus mindful of him, that he thus visiteth him.

28th. "I may mention, for the encouragement of others, who at a future day may have to follow in a track similar to this, in which it is my highly-favoured and happy lot to tread, that previously to attending the meeting just alluded to, I had felt very poor, and empty, and disqualified: and yet was not depressed with any particular feeling of discouragement as to the result. When the time came for me to stand up, although weakness and fear were my wholesome companions; yet the further I proceeded, the more I was strengthened and furnished for the work before me, and even to the end unexhausted. The remainder of the day, and through the night-watches, my peace flowed undisturbed and uninterrupted, as the stream of a mighty river: and a song of praise filled my heart, for I was indeed made joyful in the house of prayer, as on the mountain of the Lord: to the glory of the riches of his grace be it spoken.

"Our two invalids still unfit for duty, though reported to be in a convalescent state. A ship in the offing under the American flag.



## CHAPTER VIII.

An old acquaintance—visit from missionaries—Baron de Thierry—second meeting on board the “Charles Carroll”—a sick stranger—meeting in the chapel—sail for Eimeo—letters from home—fall of a mast—arrive at Eimeo—native school—native meeting—demoralizing influence of foreigners—iniquitous traffic in spirits.

29th. “The ship seen yesterday, got safely into the bay this morning, and anchored near to our vessel. She proved to be the ‘Frances’ of New Bedford, John Briggs, master, whose vessel rode by our side, fourteen months ago, when at Rio de Janeiro. It is like meeting with an old acquaintance, as we were known to each other at that time. The chief, Paofai, came on board this morning, staid breakfast, and over our reading. He was desirous to buy cloth, and to possess one of our iron boxes; neither of which could be spared to him. In the afternoon, Charles Pittman, the missionary from Roratogna came on board. John Norris, seaman, seems slowly recovering, but the carpenter, William Bush, is no better, and the doctor is fearful of an attack of dysentery coming on.

30th. (*Fifth-day.*) “In the forenoon, Charles and myself sat down in the usual way, but under a renewed sense of dryness and barrenness, perhaps the food most convenient for us, to keep the creaturely part in subjection. Charles and Sarah Pittman, Eliza, the wife of George Pritchard, and Mary Darling, paid us a visit. The impaired state of the health of Charles Pittman has compelled him to quit his station at Roratogna for the present, being no longer able to attend to the duties devolving upon him. His wife is also far from well. They have resided about ten years upon the island, where their united labour has been eminently crowned with success, amongst the natives. The circumstance of there being no harbour for shipping, except for vessels of very small tonnage, and that insecure, although the cause of subjecting them to many privations, is a great blessing to the people, because they are thereby preserved from the contaminating example and effects which the sailors invariably introduce wherever they go; and to this may, in great measure, be attributed the success of Charles and Sarah Pittman’s endeavours: at the same time, it is only just to say, they are a truly devoted couple, and well qualified by example as well as precept to fill the station they have occupied. They hope to return to the island in a few months: and being desirous that the natives might be furnished with cotton dresses, for want of which they evidently suffer much in their winter seasons, it seemed a good opportunity afforded for me to furnish them with a stock of knitting-needles, as cotton grows spontaneously and plentifully upon the island: this was accordingly done, together with a knitted worsted vest, as a pattern to begin the work with. They need only to commence the work, and their wants will soon be supplied, and industry promoted, of a kind not too fatiguing, and which they are

capable of sustaining : hard labour cannot be borne in this climate, and I think the ample supply of food provided for them by a bounteous Creator, plainly indicates it was never intended or required.

31st. "This morning arrived the bark 'Active' from Panama, after a passage of nine weeks, touching at Valparaiso by the way. Wishing to ascertain whether she had picked up any letters for us accidentally on the road, and other particulars respecting her, Captain Keen went on board to make these inquiries, and soon returned, bringing with him Charles, Baron de Thierry, as he styled himself, who with his wife and five children, and servants, had arrived in this vessel, which had been chartered by him at Panama. The baron's object in coming with our captain, was to inform me, that he was going out to New Zealand, exactly on the same plan as our predecessor, William Penn, went to establish the government of Pennsylvania ; but I found, on investigating a little into his views, that he was a perfect stranger to the principles which actuated William Penn in his government of that colony : as he was taking with him a military force, with arms, ammunition, &c., and a Polish major, (Edward Fergus, formerly employed in the staff of Russia, and at Petersburg, with whom we soon became acquainted,) to organize these troops in New Zealand, and direct their operations as needful. I told the baron that I could enter into his plans, just as far as they went upon Gospel principles, and no further ; informing him that no weapon more formidable than that of a constable's staff, was made use of or known for more than sixty years, for the support of the government of Pennsylvania, or while the peaceable principles of William Penn and his friends were suffered to prevail.

Eighth month 1st. "To-day, I did not feel as if I dared omit endeavouring to hold another meeting on board the 'Charles Carroll' to-morrow, if that ship's deck could be again procured : I did not mention this until the afternoon, wishing to try the fleece both wet and dry. On a request being made to Reuben Weeks, the master of the said ship, for the use of her deck, it was immediately granted, and the crews of the different ships in the bay invited to attend the meeting. In the evening the invitation was extended to the shore.

2nd. (*First-day.*) "At half-past ten o'clock A. M., a warning-flag was hoisted on board the 'Charles Carroll : ' and about eleven o'clock the meeting was completely gathered. The number of sailors who attended was considerably increased from the newly-arrived vessels. Charles Pittman, Mary Darling and Eliza Pritchard, attended from the shore, with Charles de Thierry, his wife, and the Pole, Edward Fergus. After the attention of the people had been arrested by the object of our meeting together being explained, a general silence prevailed. At length, I stood up with the words ; 'The wolf shall dwell with the lamb, the leopard shall lie down with the kid ; and the calf and the young lion and the

fatting together : and a little child shall lead them,' &c. After alluding to the fulfilment of this prophecy in the Gospel dispensation as shadowed forth by Isaiah, I had to tell them that these are the very days in which we live, and that they are of universal extension to the whole human family; every individual had a share in it, and a part to act in it, though of general application: that the Gospel was not a mere outward declaration of good things, but the power of God unto salvation, to all who believe, repent, and obey it, and that its privileges could only be attained through Christ: that the early promulgators of the Christian religion were constrained to turn all men to Christ. 'We preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake,' was the apostle Paul's declaration to the primitive believers, on behalf of himself and fellow-labourers; but he himself had a more special and divinely authorised commission, communicated immediately by the voice of that Saviour whom he had so long and cruelly persecuted, wherever His appearance could be found: it was stamped with a double seal, for a twofold purpose, both as a minister and a witness of those things which he had seen, and of things which were hereafter to be shown to him, in which his Lord would appear unto him, to open the eyes of mankind, to turn men from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God?—That Christ was the Light, the true Light, that lighteth every man that cometh into the world, unto whom all mankind must be turned, and must come, if they are saved, &c. &c. It was a highly favoured, solemn meeting and owned by the great Master of assemblies, whose power reigned gloriously amongst us, causing thanksgiving and praise in many hearts.

From the 3rd to the 6th. "Except in taking exercise for our health's sake, employed in preparing Extracts, &c., to send to England, (on the return of the 'Active' to Panama, via. Jamaica mail from thence.)

7th. "Walked in the evening to George Bicknell's, and had an opportunity of seeing the master of the 'Olivia,' schooner, of Boston, lately arrived from the Paumotu Islands. He seemed in the last stage of a consumption, was unwell when he left home, and has been exposed to great hardship amongst those islands. His complaint has been much increased and aggravated by having long to subsist on fish and cocoa-nuts. He appeared glad to see me; and after sitting awhile by the bed-side, I began to advert to his appalling situation, winding gradually on as matter opened. On saying it was little matter how soon we leave this world of trouble, if we are but prepared for the event, he said, 'I am not prepared, and cannot prepare myself.' I told him I was rejoiced to find he was thus sensible of his own inability and weakness, because it was a conscious feeling of the want and necessity of the Saviour's help. I endeavoured to turn his mind to the dear Redeemer; but he said, 'the time was too short to expect to accomplish the great work,'



and spoke as if it had been too long deferred. I reminded him that the invitation was extended even as late as the eleventh hour; and then mentioned the thief upon the cross, with the words, 'To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.' He seemed to be a little encouraged before we parted. I was afraid of staying too long, and of causing too much excitement, but a prayer ascended in secret for him both then and since. When about to leave, he expressed a wish for me to come again, and I hope to comply with it. I was comforted in finding he had got into a place where he would want for nothing, and be well attended to. I consider it an act of true Christian benevolence in George Bicknell, with his large family, to take in, without solicitation, a poor, exhausted, sick stranger, and cheerfully administer to all his wants, without a prospect of remuneration.

8th. "Busily employed on board, closing our letters for England, to be despatched this day by the 'Active' for Panama, touching at Valparaiso for a short time on her way. Got some exercise on shore in the evening. It has occurred to me since the last meeting held on board the 'Charles Carroll,' that the chapel on shore would be the next place for me to be in, although I mentioned it to no one, desiring to see the way clearly open, before any steps were taken.

"Charles Pittman came on board yesterday: and in the course of conversation said, that Eliza Pritchard had been thinking whether I would not come on shore the next sabbath-day, to have a meeting; and himself was desirous that some arrangement should be made, in which he expressed a willingness to assist. I told him it was yet uncertain, but that I intended calling at George Pritchard's house in the evening. On arriving there, I found Charles Pittman under the verandah, talking to a sailor, who had belonged to the 'Charles Carroll,' and had then come to have some conversation on the subject of religion. It appeared that this young man had been reached, at the last meeting held on board that ship, and was desirous of help and advice. He found it very hard work to stand against the strong current of evil to which he was exposed on ship-board, amongst a rude and wicked company, who continually annoyed him in one way or other. He was encouraged to watchfulness, and to perseverance in resisting every temptation; and if faithful, he would doubtless overcome them all, through the strength of Him, who, for our sakes, 'endured such contradiction of sinners against himself.' Whilst at George Pritchard's, I inquired whether any missionary was expected, or whether any meeting would be held there to-morrow, which was replied to in the negative. I said that I felt a little difficulty about their meeting-house, as it belonged to the people on shore, and they might be disappointed at not finding one of their own ministers there, and I could not answer, if I attended the meeting, but that it might be a silent one, which to some would be a disappointment; but Eliza Pritchard

said, they know very well; I suppose she meant, the manner in which the meetings of Friends are usually held. Having believed it right for me to hold a meeting there, previously to leaving the ship, what had passed served only to show that the way was open before me; and going out, I said,—Then I think we must venture to give notice to the shipping, that a meeting will be held at eleven o'clock to-morrow forenoon. As we returned on board, some information of the intended meeting was given by ourselves, and our captain engaged at once to invite the crews of the shipping generally, and to spread the information more widely on the shore.

9th. (*First-day.*) “At the time appointed repaired to the shore, landing at George Pritchard’s, whose family, with Charles Pittman and wife, accompanied us to the meeting. The attendance was much larger than at any time before. The baron, his wife, and the Pole, appeared amongst others. We sat long in silence, when I stood up with,—It was never said to the wrestling seed of Jacob, seek ye my face in vain; for the sighing of the needy now will I arise, saith the Lord. Let us remember the example of Jacob, who wrestled for the blessing until the break of day, although the angel said, ‘Let me go, for the day breaketh;’ but the patriarch refused to grant the request, saying, ‘I will not let thee go, except thou bless me.’ The result of his faithful perseverance was, that his name should be no longer Jacob, but that he should be called Israel; for said the angel, ‘as a prince, hast thou power, and hast prevailed with God and with men.’ After urging upon all present, the necessity of our wrestling for the blessing this morning, that so we might be numbered amongst the princes of Israel, and, like him, prevail, &c. with some further addition I sat down. The meeting then settled down in quietness, and remained long under a solemn feeling; when I had again to stand up and declare the blessedness of those who trust in Mount Zion, the city which the Lord hath founded, which can never be moved; whose children are joyful in their King; because poor in spirit, to whom only the Gospel was preached, and is still preached: these are filled with good things, but the rich and the full are sent empty away. It is the poor of the Lord’s people—the poor in spirit, whose provision will ever be abundantly blessed. Yea, they shall be satisfied—and no wonder! when made to partake of that bread which came down from heaven, whosoever eateth whereof shall live forever, for this soul-sustaining bread is Christ, who said, ‘I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.’ There is nothing in this perishing world to be desired, or worth hungering or thirsting after by those who have tasted of this true and living bread that cometh down from heaven. Who would not desire to be a citizen of this city which hath foundations, whose maker and builder the Lord is? This Sion which he hath founded for the poor of his people? There is no other

way to accomplish this, but that of doing the will of God, and not our own, through Christ Jesus, by the help of his Holy Spirit in our hearts, &c. I was largely opened to declare many great and heavenly truths to these people for about an hour, under a weighty feeling of a power to myself irresistible; all seemed brought down and laid low under its dominion, and the pillars of my frail tabernacle were shaken. I had to rise a third time to say, that if words would avail any thing, I was willing to spend and be spent amongst them; for I had been poured out as water for their sake, &c., turning their attention to the Word nigh in the heart, and in the mouth, of which the apostle spoke; commending them to God, and to the word of his grace, &c. Returned on board after the meeting. In the afternoon read portions of Scripture to our own crew, who had been on shore to the meeting in the morning.

14th. "Yesterday afternoon, Charles being too feeble, though better, to go on shore for exercise, I took with me a native boy, towards sundown, and went on shore. This boy was born at the Paumotu Islands, and had been very useful to us for several weeks, and ready on all occasions to plunge into the sea, or to bring down the cocoa-nut from its lofty tree; and never more delighted than when permitted to accompany us on excursions for exercise, or to search for shells among the coral reefs.

27th. "For several days past but little has transpired to vary the customary routine of duties. As regards myself, I have not been able to discern any particular line of service called for at my hands, and hope to be preserved watching and waiting as at the posts of Wisdom's gate. In vain, indeed, would an attempt be to move forward, while the cloud thus, as it were, rests upon the tabernacle. In the afternoon went to Taunoà to visit the American captain, who is not expecting to survive many days. Here is an affecting and mournful instance of the great business of life being neglected, and little thought of, until brought upon the bed of death. The 'Olivia' of which vessel he is part owner, sailed yesterday, and I thought he would now have nothing left relating to worldly matters to harass him, which induced me to make the present visit. I humbly trust, yea, I pray, that this poor dear man may yet so bow in humble resignation to the name and power of Jesus, and from heart-felt conviction, confess that he is Lord, to the glory of God the Father, as to obtain the salvation of his own soul. For, though he is now bowing, under heavy judgment, to this power,—great is my desire, that he may yet bow to it under a sense of the Lord's everlasting mercy, and forgiveness; for mercy still covers the judgment-seat, even to a hair's breadth. With God all things are possible to them that believe.

"I told the captain yesterday evening, that I did not see any thing to prevent our sailing this morning for Eimeo. At an early hour, Jemmy, the pilot, came on board, when the vessel was un-



moored; and there being a light breeze of wind off the land, the last anchor was weighed. We were towed out of the bay by a boat kindly sent by Captain Davies, of the ship 'Balance,' of Bristol, Rhode Island. Just as the anchor was weighed, a man came from the shore with a note from George Pritchard, and a packet containing letters, Yearly Meeting's Epistle, &c. from England, which had been brought by an English whaler, (supposed to be the 'Caroline,') to the Marquesas Islands, from which George Pritchard had arrived in the night. We could not but admire how exactly we had been cared for, in being permitted to receive accounts from our beloved family at Petersburg, contained in four letters, (though old dated,) truly acceptable, with letters also from some of our dear friends. Having discharged the pilot, cleared the reefs, and begun to stretch away from the island, the delightful employment of reading our letters commenced. While sitting on deck, the vessel made a formidable pitch, which occasioned a loud and sudden crash, as in a moment. It was soon ascertained, that our mizen-mast was gone by the board, and had fallen over the very centre of the stern. Not only the man at the helm escaped unhurt, but every other person on board; and nothing short of an Almighty, all-merciful, and all-superintending providence could possibly have screened and sheltered us from every harm. My Charles had been sitting for some time quite near the mast, but had removed just before from the place of danger. Our captain immediately represented the vessel as so crippled, that she would not stay, or tack, and wished to know whether I thought of proceeding, or of endeavouring to return to the Bay of Papeete, in the island we had just left. I paused for a moment, and then signified that we might safely proceed for the Island of Moorea, or Eimeo, although at the time it was nearly calm, and a heavy tumbling sea heaving around us. In a few minutes, however, the regular trade-wind sprung up, with a fresh gale in our favour, which in a few hours drove us to the desired haven of Talloo, into which the 'Henry Freeling' worked as well as could be desired, notwithstanding she had lost one of her wings; but it became dark before she reached the proper anchorage. The wreck of the mast, and the rigging, sails, &c. were all cleared away, and got on board, before the strength of the trade-wind set upon us, and before the sea had time to rise, which soon afterwards became unusually heavy. The great superiority of a small vessel over a large one was fairly proved on this day. As we were beating through a channel beset with coral reefs, in a masterly manner, our pilot frequently cried out 'Maitai, Maitai!' good, good, to denote his approbation; and would occasionally say, in tolerable English, 'She works well.' He told us, that one of the American ships now here, beat about for five days in the same place, and was towed in at last by six boats, when the wind died away. We just looked

into the harbour, as we passed, where Cook had formerly anchored, but it is more exposed to the heavy seas, which some particular winds occasion at times on the coast.

11th. "*Talloo Harbour, Island of Moorea, or Eimeo.* This morning sent on board the American ships, for assistance to repair the damage recently sustained in the loss of our mast. We were soon visited by the captains of those two vessels, bringing their carpenters along with them. It appeared that the dry rot, even with the deck, had been the cause of the accident. On examination, it was concluded best to make the same mast do again, which could be accomplished by making a tongue below the deck, and securing it with plenty of strong iron bands, which would only reduce its original height five feet. Though this reduction will not improve the look of the vessel, yet, in other respects, it may be considered a decided advantage. In the afternoon we landed, and for the first time visited the school, the residence of Alexander Simpson, his wife, and their little daughter. The children, about twenty-two in number, were at play upon the grass-plots in front of the house, which gave the place quite an air of English comfort. This ground is fenced in with strong stone walls. We did not purpose stopping long, having detained the boat, not being acquainted with the safest landing-places, nor sufficiently so with the road from Alexander Simpson's, to find our way back to the boat in the dark.

"In one of our letters recently arrived from England, was found a copy of a short testimonial drawn up at Shoosharry, in Russia, by my beloved children, of that illness which deprived them of their sainted mother, intended to have a place in the Annual Monitor for 1835. The perusal of this document brought afresh to my recollection the days of distress and affliction, which my endeared family had to pass through, in the loss of their precious parent, when already almost fatherless, from my having previously left home, to pursue the path of apprehended duty in the South Seas. A wound so deep, and but slightly healed, can never be forgotten when touched. But, I believe, that bitterness and anguish of soul is not offensive, when not accompanied with repining at the will and pleasure of my gracious and compassionate Lord; who when passing through the straits and difficulties of humanity, wept in love divine at the tomb of Lazarus. His compassions fail not; neither is the greatness of his faithfulness to a poor frail mortal, one particle diminished, who, in the depth of affliction and anguish, still endeavours to breathe in humble resignation and sincerity, the language of 'Thy will be done.'

12th. "The carpenter of the American ship 'India,' at work, splicing our mizen-mast. This morning the natives began to visit our vessel, but only few in number. One man brought a hog, but seemed rather shy at first: taking but little notice of him, soon brought him to reasonable terms. Having been paid for the hog, he

went away, but soon returned with bananas, guavas, ninitas, &c. in ample quantity, demanding for the whole, forty small sized clasp nails, which were given him with a little addition. When the heat of the sun lessened, we went on shore and drank tea at the school with all the children. When about to return on board, Alexander Simpson asked me, if I would favour them with a few words to-morrow; meaning the sailors that might come on shore, the few white residents, and the school family. I said that I thought of being at the native meeting at nine o'clock, to which there was no objection; but he still urged my speaking to the English after the native meeting was over. I told him, I could not answer for that, even if there, as I had nothing, and was nothing; I said I intended to come in time for the native congregation, and then asked, if he would interpret for me, to which he at once assented. Thus my way is open and provided for upon this island, if it pleases my heavenly Father to qualify me for the work, and open my lips, that in the ability which he alone giveth I may show forth his praise, and cause the thanksgiving of many to redound to his glory, for truly without him we can do nothing as it should be done.

13th. (*First-day.*) "Although we landed apparently in ample time, yet on reaching Alexander Simpson's house, we found it shut up, and the family gone to meeting; and although we hurried to the place of worship, yet the singing had commenced. We remained at the door until this was finished, then went in and sat down on a form. When the Tahitian exercises were all gone through, Alexander Simpson began reading my certificates; when these were finished, I went and stood by his side, to be ready; and when all was gathered into stillness, alluding to what they had heard read, I said, they were now aware that I had left all that was near and dear to me on earth, to visit them; that I had sailed over the trackless ocean, during many moons for this purpose, in order that I might be found standing in the counsel of that most holy will, which is ever excellent; and that the desire of my heart was, that the Gospel might not be to them an empty sound, or a mere outward declaration of good things, but that they might believe, repent, and obey it; and that it might be to them indeed 'the power of God unto salvation.' As I proceeded, I was strengthened as by 'the mighty God of Jacob,' by the extension of that love which enlargeth the heart, to declare to the people the unsearchable riches of Christ, and the necessity of their coming to the knowledge of Him in whom they believed, for themselves, by the Holy Spirit: that nothing short of their being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by this Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever, could make them members of his church, which is without spot or wrinkle, or any such thing. That, unless they came to hear the voice of the true Shepherd, and know it for themselves, they could never be his sheep, nor be



known of him. 'My sheep hear my voice,' said Christ: 'I know them, and they follow me; and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand;' turning their attention more and more to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, whose light shineth in every heart, that so they might come to sit under his teaching, and know the voice of the only true teacher of his people, who speaketh in righteousness, mighty to save his people from their sins, but never in them; appealing to the islanders, if they had not heard his voice in their own hearts, reproving them when they had committed evil, &c. That they must be willing to hear it and obey it, and to bear the indignation of it for sin and for transgression, until their cause was pleaded, and judgment executed, and themselves brought forth to the light, the light of Christ Jesus; 'the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world,' in the secret of the heart; the Holy Spirit of Him that speaketh in righteousness, mighty to save; that they might know Him experimentally to be the 'Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world,' from having witnessed their sins and transgressions to be washed white in his blood, and remembered no more, &c. &c.

"The people were very attentive in the general; and although the house is large, and was more filled than usual by natives from distant parts of the island, and others from Tahiti, I felt as if I could penetrate its most distant crevices with comparative ease. There might be twelve hundred persons present. A boat was waiting to convey us on board; but after having passed through the ceremony of shaking hands with a wholesale number, on retiring to the school, I did not feel altogether clear of the people; so concluded to send off the boat, and remained on shore to attend the afternoon meeting.

"The meeting gathered again at three o'clock, and was well attended, though somewhat smaller than in the morning. An opportunity was afforded at this meeting for us to witness the ceremony of baptizing a new convert, who, we were told, had applied for admittance into the church as a member. A child was also baptized, the offspring, it was said, of one believing parent, the mother then present. When the proper moment seemed come, I placed myself by the side of Alexander Simpson, and when all was quiet, began to inform the people, that a fear of not being clear of the blood of my fellow-creatures had induced me again to stand before them; but it was in that love, which would gather all mankind into the heavenly garner of rest and peace, testifying the endless duration of the Lord's mercy, and the unbounded extension of his love to all, by sending his only begotten Son into the world, that 'whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eter-

nal life.' My mouth was again opened to declare largely amongst the people the truths of the Gospel, and in a pressing manner to urge the necessity of the hearts of the parents being more and more turned to their children, in order to bring them up in the fear of the Lord, or else all the privileges and advantages which they had witnessed to result from the attempts to introduce Christianity amongst them, would in all probability be totally lost to their children, when their own heads were laid low. Without this care, things would soon be as bad as they had been formerly, when there was no place of safety nor of security upon the island; when every man's hand was against his brother, and the way of peace unknown. I had much to say to them of an arousing, encouraging, and warning nature and tendency, with the same undiminished strength as had been vouchsafed me in the morning, rejoicingly to the comfort, peace, and relief of my own mind, and I trust, with humble thankfulness, to my Maker's praise."

No circumstance attending our dear friend Daniel Wheeler's interesting visit to the South Sea Islands, appears to have more painfully affected his feelings, than the observation forced upon him from place to place, of the demoralizing and devastating effects of the intercourse of the natives with the crews of vessels visiting their shores. In some letters, not forming a part of his Journal, he thus alludes to the subject.

"We find that the voyages of the whaling-vessels are much longer than formerly, their success being more precarious and uncertain, owing to the increased number of ships engaged in that employ, which constantly disturb a great breadth of ocean, by looking over several hundred square miles of its surface every day; so that the fish are becoming scarcer, and more shy than formerly. We should rejoice to hear of any cause that would reduce the number of shipping which visit these islands for supplies, and to refit; as they only tend to diminish their population, by bringing spirituous liquors amongst the people, and by keeping alive a disease, the ravages of which are destroying whole families, both old and young, to an extent little contemplated in England, and truly painful and distressing to be an eye-witness to, and which is greatly aggravated by the use of ardent spirits. Surely, something will be done to stop this desolating scourge of the human race. It is the suffering case of an afflicted, injured people, and calls for the attention, and that speedily, of the legislature of every country, but particularly of England and America, which are the nations principally implicated in this dreadful traffic. Scarcely a ship arrives, but what has for sale rum, muskets, and gunpowder, for all of which the natives are extremely eager: and many of these are denominated 'Temperance ships,' and yet are engaged in producing madness amongst the natives, by furnishing the means of intoxication, at the same time supplying them with weapons of destruction to complete their misery. We have seen much of this

since our lot has been cast amongst them: and though the use of spirits is forbidden, and the article itself is destroyed when found, yet there are too many who carry on the trade in an underhand manner; and of late there has been more and more of its effects to be seen. Those who have it in their power effectually to stop it, are in their hearts desirous that it should be allowed, they not only like it themselves, but are fully aware how profitable the sale is to those that deal in it.

"If my friends at home could witness for themselves the state of many of the islands in these seas, which we have visited, lamentation, and mourning, and woe, must inevitably be their portion. Rum, muskets, and gunpowder, are articles brought in great abundance, particularly by the American ships, many of which are styled 'Temperance ships.' It is an absolute fact, incontrovertible, that vessels of this description have landed larger quantities of spirits on some islands than any other class of ships. On almost every island the population decreases, and the dreadful ravages made by disease is much aggravated by the use of spirits." After giving an affecting description of the consequences of disease, and mentioning that he had, in as many cases as his stock of medicine would allow, successfully checked and eradicated it, our friend adds:—"The island of Bolabola is one that has suffered most of any by the introduction of spirits, as it has caused the people to distil their bread-fruit, and every kind of food capable of producing spirit. I can never forget the abject wretched state of these people, with scarcely rags to cover them, in want of every thing, and possessing nothing to purchase any thing with, their little property being consumed in order to obtain spirits; the famished appearance also, of the more than half-naked children, who abound, will long retain a place in my memory, in that love which must ever intercede on behalf, and plead the cause of suffering humanity. The little things used to come on board to us; and when on shore, we were surrounded in a few minutes by delighted groups of them. My heart often revisits Bolabola, and gladly would I bind up her wretched inhabitants in the Lord's bundle of life for ever."

In the perusal of the latter Extracts, as well as some of the preceding, it will with sorrow of heart be felt, how exceedingly inconsistent, and awfully demoralizing is the conduct of many of those who "go down to the sea in ships, and do business in the great waters," and what a weight of responsibility rests on the heads of those, who, calling themselves Christians, and whilst in the pursuit of their lawful occupation, do thus lay temptation in the way of these poor simple people, and who are ultimately the occasion, in regard to many of them, of misery and death. On the other hand, in reviewing the whole of the Extracts from the Journal, &c., of our beloved friend, who thus, in fulfilment of apprehended duty, is traversing sea and land, may the tribute of thanksgiving and praise arise to the Great Head of the church, who, in so conspicuous a



manner, is pleased to be with him, strengthening and supporting him in every season of trial, and enabling him to declare the glorious privileges of the Gospel, in the power and authority which He alone can give. May He be pleased, in the further trials and conflicts of body and mind, that may await this our dear friend and brother, to continue to be with, and to preserve him, together with his son, and, through His own eternal power, enable him to perform what may yet be unaccomplished of the great and important work, into which, we fully believe, he is called.

---

### CHAPTER IX.

Meeting with the native children at Papetoai—visit to Afareaitu—meetings there and at Matea—a Marai—return to the ‘Henry Freeling’—meeting on board—native meeting—the unity of the brethren—a warning against intemperance—meeting with the mission families—sail for Huahine—prohibition of spirits there—native meeting—an invitation from the pilot—social meeting of the authorities—native meeting—distribution of tracts—sail for Raiatea.

“*Taloo Harbour, Island of Eimeo, 18th of Ninth month, 1835.*”

“Called upon Alexander Simpson to consult about going to the other side of the island, to Afareaitu; (of late called Griffin’s Town;) but as he had a serious sore throat, it was not prudent for him to undertake the journey on the following day. I now perceived that if I had not given up to attend the afternoon meeting at Papetoai last *first-day*, when it opened upon my mind, that I must have waited a week longer for want of an interpreter, on account of Alexander Simpson’s present indisposition. Truly it may be said, that the present moment is all we have to trust to, or depend upon; the future may, to us, never come; and time, once past, can never be recalled. Then may we be diligently seeking to improve the present, with thankfulness for being strengthened to yield obedience to every pointing of duty.

Ninth month 19th. “Finding my attention turned to the children at the school, it seemed as if to-morrow, at eleven o’clock in the forenoon, would be a suitable time to propose for our meeting together, if no difficulty should appear. After tea at the school, I mentioned to Alexander Simpson and wife, that if it would not interfere with any of their arrangements, I thought of paying a visit to the children to-morrow, at eleven o’clock, A. M. They at once expressed satisfaction with the proposal, and said it would be very acceptable. I said, ‘Then we will sit down together, and see what will be done for us.’”

Ninth month 20th. (*First-day*.) “Landed in the morning, so as to have ample time to walk to the school, and afford an interval sufficiently long to allow us to cool before going into the meeting,

the weather being extremely hot. When the time came we assembled as proposed, the children, and the family at the school. I fully expected that we should sit down in silence before the Lord: but when all were seated, it was proposed that the children should read a chapter, and the first chapter of the Epistle to the Romans was read accordingly. The children were then examined, by questions respecting the moral law, and the object of our Saviour's coming upon earth. After these were gone through, we were favoured to get into silence. Having sat for some time, I found my mind getting deeper and deeper under exercise, until the time came for me to rise, with the words, 'We through the Spirit, wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.' Sitting in silence may seem a little strange to those unaccustomed to the work, but it has been the practice of the religious Society of which I have the privilege of being a member, from its earliest rise, to wait upon the Lord for the influence of the Holy Spirit; to be taught by the great Teacher of his people, Christ Jesus, the minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle, 'which the Lord pitched and not man.' I had to tell them that there is no alteration in the Christian life; it is a continual warfare, but with the spiritual weapons of burning and fuel of fire, which, if patiently submitted to, would purify and prepare us for an incorruptible and never-fading inheritance. The universality of Divine Grace was freely spoken of, and the necessity of watchfulness and prayer urged with earnestness, even unto 'praying always, with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance.' The dear young people were tenderly invited to seek after that knowledge which is life eternal: to 'commune with their own hearts and be still.' I wanted them to witness the Gospel to be glad tidings of great joy to themselves, not a mere outward declaration of good things to come, but 'the power of God unto salvation,' to every one of them. Meekness and lowliness, those heavenly virtues, and first principles of the religion of Jesus, which characterize the Christian—taught by Him, and which all must learn of Him—were exalted, while pride and arrogance, and other concomitant evils, were trampled under foot. None could be insensible to the weight of solemnity which prevailed, and I had to acknowledge the condescending mercy of that Almighty power which was pleased to own the work, and also to appeal to those present as witnesses to the circulation of that 'life' which is 'the light of men.'

23d. "With the exception of taking occasional exercise for the last three days, have been busily employed in preparing despatches for my beloved friends in England, information having been received that an English whaler, homeward bound, had arrived at Tahiti. On going on shore this evening, we found Alexander Simpson so much recruited, that it was concluded to set off to-morrow morning for the distant tation of Afareaitu.

Ninth month 24th. "Rose early, and left the vessel at half-past six o'clock, in the Henry Freeling's long-boat, with a hired crew of four natives. We took in Alexander Simpson opposite the settlement, at seven o'clock, and immediately proceeded towards Afareaitu. Some parts of this passage are hazardous, owing to immense lumps of coral lying near the surface of the water, upon which boats are not unfrequently stove; but keeping a good look-out, we were favoured to pass through the whole of these places, which extend several miles, without touching with much violence upon any of the rugged cones. About three P. M., we reached Afareaitu, and were kindly received and entertained by Thomas Blossom and his wife, the former originally came out of Yorkshire, and with some of his connexions I was acquainted in England. Thomas Blossom came out in the 'Tuscan' several years ago with 'Tyerman and Bennet,' as an artisan belonging to the mission.

25th. "The bell for the sun-rise worship rung early, and when the people were collected we went to the meeting. At a suitable opportunity my certificates were read by Alexander Simpson, after which I had a full opportunity to clear my mind amongst these people; and although I had had nearly, if not quite, a sleepless night, and felt in the morning almost sunk both in body and mind, below the usual level of depression in such cases, yet my Lord was to me in truth, 'strength in weakness, riches in poverty, and a present helper in the needful time;' and I had largely to declare of his love, of his mercy, and of his 'Truth,' and to show forth his salvation to the people, as it is wrought in the heart through faith in the operation of the Holy Spirit. I had also close things to say amongst them, and to show them the dreadful consequences of drawing down the 'Divine wrath,' if their return for his love and mercy was only neglect, disobedience, and rebellion against his heavenly and righteous invitation, so largely extended towards them: and to point out the snare which had been laid by the great enemy, in the introduction of spirituous liquors amongst them, and how they had fallen under the temptation, from which, if they had obeyed the Gospel, they would have been preserved.

"Notwithstanding a messenger had been sent beforehand to invite the inhabitants of Matea, a distant village, (but said to be more populous than Afareaitu,) yet I think it was reported that none had made their appearance at the meeting. On considering the subject, I thought that, although they would not be at the trouble to come to me, I should not fully discharge my duty without going to them. This circumstance seemed likely to bring upon us the sacrifice of another night's absence from Papetoai, which is by no means desirable on several accounts; yet I felt resigned to give up every selfish consideration, if I should only be found in the path of duty. It was at last concluded for us to proceed to Matea, about a league along the coast, but in a direction that our



boat's crew did not approve, as they hoped we should have returned to Papetoai by a rout several miles shorter, which may sometimes be taken with safety when the wind and weather are favourable. We got ready immediately, and set out, taking with us Thomas Blossom and wife, their little boy, and a daughter of George Bicknell's, of Taunoa, on the Island of Tahiti, about ten years of age; they intending to walk home again in the cool of the evening. Having reached Matea, we landed, and soon met with the principal chief: some rather shuffling excuses were made on behalf of the people for not attending the meeting in the morning at Afareaitu; and upon being asked where the people were then, he first said, in the mountains, procuring food for the queen of Tahiti, who we knew had arrived at Papetoai: but when this man found there was a disposition in us to go into the meeting-house and sit down, (there being no seats in the house where we then were,) he began to alter his tone. Whether he thought we intended to wait for the people, or from what other cause, I am not aware, unless he supposed the falsehood would afterwards be detected, but he then said, the people were all in their huts, and he would send round to them to meet us forthwith. They assembled in as short a time as could well be expected, and when well settled, my certificates were read by Alexander Simpson, who, when he had finished, and given ample information respecting me to the people, said, 'If you have any thing to say to them, I am ready to interpret,' turning himself towards me. I drew towards him, and just stated that I had hoped to have seen them in the morning at Afareaitu: but although this had not been the case, I was not willing to pass them by. I then told them, that I had brought nothing with me, but that whatever my Great Master might be pleased to give me to speak, I hoped to do it faithfully amongst them. From this I went on step by step, until my heart was so enlarged, and my tongue loosed, that I declared the 'Truth' amongst them for the space of an hour. I have since been comforted in believing that, although many slept, yet there were many awake, unto whom my message belonged, and whose countenances bespoke that they were not only awake, but awakened to a sense (I humbly trust) of their situation—that they had a soul to be saved, and that 'no man can save his brother, or give to God a ransom for his soul.' When I sat down, I thought I was clear, but had to rise again in a while, and tell them, under its contriving influence, that I had felt the love of God since I sat down, to fill my heart, and that I never knew an instance, where a message had been sent to any people, but that the love of God was still extended towards them, adding, that I was not about to multiply words, but merely to express a desire that the Lord might direct their hearts into this love, and to the patient waiting for Christ.

"The wind was against us, and the boat's crew very sulky at their disappointment in our not going the shortest way back, as

they wanted, supposing they should have had less work in rowing if they had taken that course. The breeze presently died away, and I made signs to them that we should soon have a favourable wind, but one of them said, 'No,' in an unpleasant tone. In a short time, the breeze sprung up fair for the boat, when they became more cheerful, and before we had got many miles farther, they said it was well for them to go with these strangers, for they had brought a fair wind with them. They then remembered that we had a favourable wind the preceding day when going in the opposite direction, which is regularly calculated upon; but that we should have it fair again to-day was much more remarkable, as a circumstance but rarely occurring, because directly opposite the point from which the trade-winds almost uniformly blow. We were favoured to get through the most intricate and dangerous parts before it became quite dark, although we several times touched upon the reef: after landing Alexander Simpson at the settlement, we reached the vessel in safety, and I believe with thankful hearts, though from the lateness of the hour and darkness of the night, our return was not expected until the following morning.

"On the passage from Papetoai to Afareaitu, we landed to examine the remains of the largest Marai (Orua) in the South Seas, and not so much dilapidated as many of them. Much of the hewn stone work is yet to be seen; and the upright stones, placed in a position best adapted to accommodate the backs of the priests when praying, and from whence they could witness the sacrifices of the wretched human victims, are still remaining.

27th of Ninth month. (*First-day*.) "This morning awoke early, and on endeavouring to ascertain what path I should have to move in, I found that the openings which had just floated before the view of my mind, were now altogether out of sight; so concluded that I must remain on board the 'Henry Freeling.' Just as we were about to assemble together in the forenoon, — was seen on the shore: a boat was immediately despatched for him, when it appeared that he was coming on board on purpose to sit with us. In the course of the time of our being together, my mind was brought under exercise, and I had a short and encouraging testimony to bear to the faithfulness of our gracious Lord; standing up with words to the following effect; Although our company is small, and in a remote corner of the habitable globe, yet we have the word of a King for it, even the 'King of Saints,' that 'where two or three are gathered together in his name, (in his power,) there he is in the midst of them.' But it is only such as are gathered under a sense of this constraining power and with sincerity of desire, that will be benefitted. 'The battle is not to the strong, nor the race to the swift.' 'Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts.' 'Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid; ye believe in God, believe also in me,' was the language of the Saviour to his

disciples formerly, and I trust, there are none among us but believe in God and in his Son Jesus Christ. Then let us be willing to believe in the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus. Let us believe his words—‘It is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of Truth—He will guide you into all truth.’ There is nothing like an interest in the Master of the storm; if we have Him on board with us, though ‘asleep in the hinder part of the ship,’ it is enough, for nothing can harm us. In an earthly race, although many may run, but one obtaineth the prize; and that but a corruptible, perishing crown: but in the heavenly race it is not so, for all may run, and all may win a crown incorruptible, that will endure, a prize immortal. Then let us run with patience the race that is set before us. Let us lay aside every weight, and that sin which does most easily beset us, and run with patience the race that is set before us; looking unto Jesus, the blessed Author and Holy Finisher of our faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God, where he ever liveth to make intercession for those that are willing to come unto God by him.’ Even so run that ye may obtain!” Whilst we were sitting in silence after I had sat down, I believed it required of me to attend the native place of worship at three o’clock in the afternoon.

“Before two o’clock, Charles and myself landed, and reached the school just as the children were moving off in train towards the meeting. The school principally consists of the children and grandchildren of the missionaries. We followed, previously telling Alexander Simpson, that if I should have any thing to say, when he came down from the pulpit, I would come and stand by his side. I found that I had a heavy burden to throw off, but my trust was in the Lord Jehovah, in whom alone is everlasting strength. I sat while they were proceeding with the regular service, in much conflict of mind, but as has often, if not always been the case, casting a thought towards my dear brethren and sisters in England, as if they were in degree sensible of my situation: and I cannot help thinking that such is the precious unity in spirit of the faithful, that petitions are constantly ascending from one or other, as a lamp that burneth and never goes out, to the throne of the Majesty on high, on behalf of a poor weak brother, separated as an outcast almost as far from them as the east is from the west. For, however distant from each other the members of the mystical body may be placed, nothing can separate them from the love of God, as it is in Christ Jesus, their crucified, risen, and glorified Lord; and therefore, if one member suffer, all the members suffer; if one member is honoured, all the members rejoice in heavenly sympathy and joy, in which ‘a stranger cannot intermeddle.’ When



Alexander Simpson came down from the pulpit, I went and stood by him, and shortly after he had prepared my way, by telling the people to be still, I said, 'Verily there is a reward for the righteous: verily He is a God that judgeth in the earth.—Righteousness exalteth a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people.—The work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness, quietness, and assurance for ever.' I was not aware that my voice would be heard any more among you, but my Lord and Master hath put it into my heart to stand before you once again. As what I speak must be in faithfulness before my God, so I must be honest, and deal plainly with you. I am come to warn you to flee from the wrath to come; and to show you a snare which the grand enemy, both to God and to man, that old serpent the devil, has prepared for you: he has tried it before, and found it to answer. It is that of throwing strong drink, or spirituous liquors in your way. You have it in your power to resist the temptation, for no temptation will be permitted to assail us without a way being made for our escape. Then 'draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you: resist the devil and he will flee from you.' The scene of riot and confusion has already begun upon the sister island, Tahiti, and its poison will soon reach to this island: therefore, if you do not resist it, your destruction will be of yourselves. If those in authority do not know it, they ought to know it; and if the authorities do know it, and with those under them in power, are conniving at it, or winking at it, or deriving emolument from it, most assuredly the Lord will punish these: He will visit for these things. 'Shall I not visit for these things, shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?' was the language of the Lord through his faithful prophet, to a rebellious people formerly. Yea, He will sweep them from the face of the earth as with a besom of destruction. Nothing is so calculated to destroy the happiness of the people as this curse of the human race, and to aggravate that awful disease, which is now rapidly depopulating these islands. If you do not set shoulder to shoulder in resisting this evil, what will you do when the wrath of the Lord is appearing? 'He will laugh at your calamity, and mock when your fear cometh;' and the denunciation of the prophet against a people that had revolted, and forsaken the Lord their God, will be applicable unto you: 'Hast thou not procured this unto thyself, in that thou hast forsaken the Lord thy God when he led thee by the way? And now what hast thou to do in the way of Egypt,' in following the fashions and follies, and vanities of this world, and in drinking the dark and polluted 'waters of Sihor, &c.—Thine own wickedness shall correct thee—thy backslidings shall reprove thee: know, therefore, and see that it is an evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the Lord thy God, and that my fear is not in thee, saith the Lord of Hosts.' Come, then, my beloved people, in the fear and in the dread, and in the love, of the Lord Jehovah I warn you,

your only refuge is in Jesus: then turn inward, to his Holy Spirit in your hearts, to 'Christ in you the hope of glory;' submit yourselves to Him as little children, and he will leaven all in you into his own pure and heavenly nature, and prepare you for a kingdom 'consisting not in meats and drinks, but in righteousness and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost:' a kingdom into which it is declared nothing that is unclean or impure; nothing that worketh an abomination, or that maketh a lie, must ever enter: There, the wicked cease from troubling; there, the weary are at rest; there, the morning stars sing together; there, the sons of God shout an endless anthem; there, all is love, and joy, and peace, and that for evermore. Several of the people went out when *strong drink* was mentioned, but the queen and her party, with all the principal authorities and judges from Tahiti, as well as those of this island, were present, and remained to the last. Alexander Simpson told the people that they must not consider me their enemy, for it was in pure love that I had spoken to them: and after he had put up a prayer on the occasion, he dismissed the assembly. Only one man and one woman ventured to shake hands with me. I told Alexander Simpson that I had placed him in an awkward situation, but the truth must be spoken: it was not a time to withhold it. He expressed his satisfaction at what had been done, and said it was much better for it to come from a stranger. I certainly did not know that so many of the authorities were present from Tahiti. I knew that Pomare V. was in the neighbourhood, but though in the meeting, I did not see her, or know she was there. I was afterwards informed, that Paofai, one of the principal chiefs, was desirous to have spoken to me in the meeting by way of reply, but was deterred through fear of giving offence. When the meeting broke up he attempted to get to me, but could not succeed for the crowd of people. He told Alexander Simpson, my informant, that he wished, in reply to my testimony borne in the meeting, on behalf of the natives of these islands and himself, to have said, relative to strong drink, that 'he hoped I would go to Britania, and beg the people to have mercy on them, and then go to America, and beg those people also to have mercy on them; because it was these countries that sent this poison amongst them.' A fact not less true than lamentable.

Tenth month 3rd, 1835. "Nothing suitable for recording, of a religious nature, has occurred since last *first-day*. Considerable change has however taken place in the weather towards the latter part of the week, which, it is said, usually happens, and continues for some days after the sun has crossed to the southward of the equator. We have had heavy squalls of wind, with rain at times, and from the swell that rolls into the harbour of late, it is probable, there may have been rugged weather at sea. In the course of the past week our stock of wood and water has been completed, but it is very difficult to procure a supply of vegetables, owing to Po-

mare and her numerous attendants remaining so long upon this island; and we are told they will not depart until they have consumed all the food in the neighbourhood.

8th. "From the 4th instant employed chiefly in preparing letters for England. In the forenoon to-day, Charles and myself sat down together as usual. Much oppressed with heat and heaviness in the forepart of our sitting. Towards the end more lively, and strengthened to maintain the watch, even unto prayer at times. Had close conversation with the heads of a family, where we afterwards drank tea.

10th. "My mind for the last two or three days has been looking towards fixing a time for sailing for Huahine, but nothing could be clearly discovered. While on shore, yesterday, spent some time at the school. To-day another opportunity with the children and family at that institution has come much before me, to take place to-morrow, after the native or Tahitian meeting is over in the forenoon. After closing in with this prospect, the time appeared come for me to tell our captain, that if the deck of the vessel was all ready, and the spars secured in the course of the day, there would be no difficulty in being ready for sea on *second-day*, which he readily admitted, and gave orders accordingly.

11th. (*First-day*.) "Much rain fell during the night, but after day-break the clouds began to disperse, and the day became fine as it advanced. This being the case, I felt liberty to convene the two families aforesaid. We proceeded to the shore in good time, expecting to have to wait for the breaking up of the natives' meeting, but found, soon after landing, that the meeting was over, and Alexander Simpson had returned home. After sitting awhile, I told him, that we expected to leave the island to-morrow, and queried whether we could not sit down together once more, to which he readily assented. We then settled down into comfortable and silent waiting. At length, the time came for me to stand up, though under a sense of much weakness. After the silence was broken into with a short remark, I told them there might not be many words, but the desire of my heart was, that we might be sensible of the power which was before words were, and would remain when words shall be no more: for words shall cease, and declarations come to an end; but the 'Word of our God shall stand for ever.' I had to urge the necessity of seeking to know for ourselves the Divine Will, and then to do it: that this was the great business of life, &c. But knowledge only makes our condemnation greater, without obedience keeps pace with it: and truly this knowledge can never be attained in the noise and bustle, and mixture of this world; nor while we are living in conformity therewith, or conformed thereto. Nor can we expect to be entrusted with such great knowledge as the will of God, whilst in a carnal, unrenewed state of mind, according to the testimony of the Apostle to the Romans, when beseeching his brethren, 'by the mercies of God, to



present their bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, as their reasonable service.' And 'be not conformed to this world,' said he, 'but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.' I had to declare the blessed state of the inhabitants of Mount Zion, where every one appeareth before God: they go from strength to strength: God is in the midst of her: she can never be moved: 'He is known in her palaces for a refuge.' The stream of Gospel love flowed freely and largely to all present, and great was the solemnity that prevailed over us; such was the condescending mercy and loving-kindness of the Lord to his poor unworthy creatures. We then took leave of the whole, not expecting to visit them again, and returned on board to dinner, under feelings of gratitude and thankfulness, and in peaceful serenity of mind, not conscious of having any further service to attend to in this island.

12th. "The 'Henry Freeling' being ready for sea, and the pilot coming off at an early hour; at five o'clock, A. M., began to weigh the anchor, and at half-past six o'clock she was safely outside of the reef. Having discharged the pilot, we bore up and made sail, with a fine fresh trade-wind, for the island of Huahine. At four o'clock, P. M., this island was discovered, but as some part of the land is very high, and may be seen many miles distant, it was considered impossible to reach it before dark; on this account, it was judged most prudent to shorten our canvass and haul to the wind in good time, under easy sail during the darkness, with plenty of room to drift until the dawn of the morning. At day-break edged away towards the island, and by keeping a good lookout from the mast-head, we were favoured to distinguish the outermost point of the projecting reef, upon which the white foam of the breakers served as a beacon for us to steer by with safety. At nine o'clock, A. M., 'hove to,' for the pilot, for whom a signal had been previously made. He came on board, accompanied by Captain Russel, of the American ship 'Zone.' We beat safely through the narrowest part of the channel, and about eleven o'clock anchored in Fare Harbour, the 13th instant, and moored with a chain-hauser, made fast to a cocoa-nut tree upon the shore, there being thirteen fathoms of water close in with the strand. Two American ships left this neighbourhood yesterday afternoon, one of them homeward bound. A sail had been seen by us the preceding evening before sun-down, probably the homeward bound vessel. The 'Zone' only remained in the harbour.

"Soon after anchoring in Fare Harbour, a well-dressed person came on board, as a constable, to prevent petty thefts and depredations being committed by the natives who came on board; but we did not consider such a person at all needful; and having never suffered any material inconvenience of the kind at the other islands, this offer was declined. I thought it would look like distrust on our part, and might have an unpleasant, if not injurious effect upon

the people. In the afternoon, Charles Barff, the missionary, came on board, and seemed very sociably inclined towards us, and disposed to render every assistance in his power, when I might feel inclined to see the people collected. He translated the queen of Tahiti's letter to two of the chiefs of the island of Huahine, then on board, who appeared glad at having an opportunity afforded to take off the port charges, saying, they should be sorry to have been worse thought of than the neighbouring islands. I told them it was a very trifling affair, but I thought it would not have been handsome treatment, if the option of choosing for themselves had not been afforded. At midnight, tremendous gusts of wind from the mountains, with heavy showers of rain.

"We were informed that, a short time ago, some of the principal persons which had given away to the temptation of strong drink, were the first to come forward to propose that its use should be entirely abolished, which eventually was unanimously agreed to by general consent of the inhabitants. The reason given for making this proposal was, from a convicting sense that it was taking away their lives. Captain Russel told us that there are no spirits to be found on shore. One part of his crew go daily for exercise, and return every evening in an orderly manner, which would not be the case if drink could be purchased. How I should rejoice to hear that these islands are strengthened to stand firm against every thing of the kind being landed amongst them; which might easily be effected, by supplies being withheld from any vessel attempting to trade with it. Every Christian government ought to come forward for the protection of these defenceless islanders, from every cruel outrage of such vessels as might attempt to enforce a compliance by arms, to supplies being bought, in exchange for rum, muskets and gunpowder.

18th. (*First-day*.) "Last evening my certificates in the Polynesian language were handed to Charles Barff, to read at the native meeting this morning, if nothing should prevent my attendance. May the Lord be pleased to exalt his ever excellent name, and magnify his power amongst us, until the blessed Truth shall rise into dominion, and reign over all to his glory.

"After an anxious, restless night, in which little sleep could be obtained, we arose early, and went on shore in good time, to look into the children's school before the meeting took place. All our sailors accompanied us, except the Spanish cook and the captain, who remained to take care of the 'Henry Freeling.' The meeting was large, but the building would have accommodated a much larger assembly. The whole population is said to be, by a census lately taken, seventeen hundred and sixty persons, including every description of age and sex; but I cannot suppose that many more than one thousand were present on the spot. I sat in much conflict of mind: it was a low time with me; and when my certificates were read, and Charles Barff came down from his pulpit,

there seemed little before me to stand up with; but after the attention of the people was attracted, and a general stillness prevailed throughout the assembly, I expressed a desire that 'grace, mercy, and peace might be multiplied,' &c., upon all the inhabitants of this island; and then proceeded to declare, that for the sake of Christ and his Gospel, I had been induced to leave all that is near and dear to me in this world, that 'the fulness of its blessing' might be theirs; desiring that they might not rest satisfied with making an empty profession of the religion of Jesus, but that they might come to the 'full possession of the Truth as it is in him;' even 'Truth in the inward parts:' that so they might be washed, sanctified, and justified by his power, in his name, and by the Spirit of our God: that Christ might dwell in their hearts by faith; that they, being rooted and grounded in love, might be able to comprehend with all saints, what is the length, and breadth, and depth, and height; and know 'for themselves,' the 'love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, and be filled with all the fulness of God;' and not be members of an outward and visible church only, but of the new Jerusalem church—the church triumphant of the first-born: 'regenerated' and 'born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever,' which are written in heaven: pointing out the inward purity of heart that must be attained to, and is attainable by all, through the precious blood of sprinkling, which cleanseth from all sin; showing them, as ability was graciously afforded, the gradual and progressive work and nature of their being turned from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to the power of God in their own hearts; earnestly appealing to them, if they had not at seasons witnessed the workings of this power, and the in-shinings of this light, that reproves for sin, which makes manifest every deed of darkness, condemning for sin and for transgression. When the meeting broke up, the people flocked round us to shake hands, with much apparent warmth and sincerity, of which we partook in a large degree. On parting from Charles Barff, I told him, that if I was there in the afternoon, I would take care to endeavour to be in time. We returned on board immediately. In the afternoon, saw no other way than that of going again to the native meeting, and went early on shore for that purpose. Before going into the meeting, I mentioned to Charles Barff, that if I found any thing on my mind to say to the people, that I intended to come and stand by him, at a suitable time. During part of the meeting, it seemed as if I should have something to communicate, but this prospect eventually closed up altogether. When the meeting was about breaking up, I suspected that Charles Barff was telling the people to stop, (taking it for granted that I should have something to say,) and catching his eye, desired that he would not detain them on my account: he had then to tell them they might retire. I sat as a fool among them, though with a calm and peaceful mind. Some



smiled; some said, '*pou*,' i.e. it is over, 'there is no more.' I felt however, quite satisfied through all, and I trust that my apparent folly will be a subject long remembered, and wondered at by many, and lead some to inquire into the cause.

Tenth month 22nd. "Soon in the morning received a few lines from Charles Barff, accompanying a translated copy of a note, with the original, from Mauiui, our pilot through the reef, as follows:

"As I know not the names of you two gentlemen, I address you thus generally.

"Dear Friends.—All peace to you after living through the waves all the way to Tahiti. This is my little word, that I desire you two to agree to. Compassionate me, and come to my little dinner, about one or two of the day—a little friendly meeting.

"May you two be saved by Jehovah,  
"MAUIUI."

"An answer was returned to Charles Barff, that, rather than disappoint the intended kindness of Mauiui, we purposed accepting the invitation. It being *fifth-day*, we sat down together to wait upon the Lord. As regards myself, I thought I was sensible of something like a renewal of strength to struggle against the infirmities of the flesh, in drawing nigh to the everlasting fountain. About the time fixed, repaired to Mauiui's house, and found the company assembled, consisting of the lawful queen of the island and her husband, the young queen, Maihara, (who is to have full possession of the island next week,) and her husband, brother to the husband of Pomare, the queen of Tahiti; Mahine, the governing chief, and his wife, and the two chiefs next in rank upon the island, and their wives; the king of Raiatea's eldest daughter, and several younger branches of the chief families. A plentiful supply of provisions was set before us, with a variety of vegetables. Yams, plantains, sweet potatoes, bread-fruit, taro, &c., cocoa-nut milk, sweetened lime-juice and water, and plain water, were the beverages made use of. The company appeared upon the same level; no distinction of persons was visible. Harmony and goodwill were the prevalent feelings throughout. The host and his wife waited upon their guests with much delight and unwearied attention. It was afterwards ascertained that this female had been brought up in the family of Charles Barff.

23d. "The authorities of this island are in the practice of occasionally meeting together, and they usually solicit the company of strangers that may be among them, taking care to fix the day for collecting, when these can attend. Several days ago we were informed that such a meeting was in contemplation, and to-day being agreed upon for holding it, Charles and myself were requested to attend.

"The children were collected in the forenoon at the meeting-

house, and afterwards formed no insignificant part of the guests at the dinner-tables. We dined out of doors, under the shade of large trees adjoining the queen's apartments. More than one thousand persons were present, including lookers-on, and the festival altogether was highly interesting.

"The company was exhorted by several of the principal speakers, and the dear children were again and again reminded of the privileges enjoyed by these islands in their day and generation. They were told, that in the days of superstition and idolatry, many of them would have been offered as human sacrifices—that some of the boys might have been permitted to live, if their parents were of high rank, but the girls were often sacrificed, and many of the boys thus preserved would be afterwards killed, being kept only for the purposes of war. But now look round, (said one of these orators,) at the comforts and blessings we enjoy; and how did they all come, but by the introduction of Christianity amongst us? It was all the goodness, and mercy, and love of Jehovah, in sending the Gospel among us. Several of these speakers, on beginning, addressed themselves to us, in terms of welcome and approbation. One said, (alluding to myself,) 'Your address to us last sabbath-day in the chapel astonished us: I thought you had got the Bible in your head. We are happy to have a teacher come among us, then we have two teachers, one within, and one without. You told us, that a mere outward profession of religion was nothing; that it would not benefit us. The Holy Spirit of the Messiah in the heart is what we must learn to be acquainted with, and that all the work is within ourselves,' &c. He said, 'We have formerly been a very wicked people; our island has been worse than any other island in these seas. Captain Cook said so: he found us so: we were the greatest thieves he met with. Captain Cook shot several of us; and if we had provoked him further, he would have shot more of us. But your visit to us is not like his; yours is in love to our souls,' &c. In this manner the time was occupied for the space of two hours, when a hymn was sung, and afterwards a short prayer made by one of the chiefs, when the company dispersed with as much order and quietness, as the breaking up of a Friends' meeting in England. I could have said on the spot, 'It is good for us to be here,' for the love of the blessed Master flowed through my heart, and softened the creature, as into clay fit for the potter's use. It was at this island that Captain Cook caused the ears of several of the natives to be cut off for committing petty thefts on board the ships, and in other respects used them very cruelly.

25th. (*First-day*.) "For the last three days, at intervals, the prospect of attending the native meeting this morning has been heavy and humiliating, but there seemed no other way of clearing my mind, and of being at liberty to leave the island, than by standing resigned and willing to be any thing or nothing; to

go or to stay, according to the good pleasure of that holy will, in the counsel of which, I trust, it is my heart's desire to be found walking. Rose early to be in readiness, but for want of the means of keeping to any fixed time on shore, we found on landing that the children were coming away from school, although half an hour before the proper time for the meeting to gather. We remained outside until Charles Barff and his wife came. He asked, if I wished to have the order of things any way altered. I told him no; but that if I found it needful, I should come and stand near him at a proper time. I sat under much exercise until near the conclusion, when I began to see my way sufficiently clear to encourage me to leave the seat, and go to the table, which Charles Barff perceiving, exhorted the people to stillness and attention. A solemn silence prevailed, until broken by my saying, 'Blessed are they which have not seen, and yet have believed in the only begotten Son of God;' enlarging on the love unutterable, and gift unspeakable of our heavenly Father, in sending his Son into the world, that 'whosoever believeth on him, should not perish but have eternal life.' I had largely to speak of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, and the necessity of every individual coming to the saving knowledge of it in his own heart; for it had been declared by the Saviour himself to be the thing above all others, 'needful,' and the righteousness thereof first to be sought for: he has also told us where it is to be found. The kingdom of God is within you. That all things needful should be added to those that obeyed this Divine command of 'Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness.' I had to set before them the gracious dealings of the Almighty, and the blessings and privileges by which they are surrounded, and the return that is called for at their hands. Before sitting down, I had to speak in a close manner respecting the rising generation, to the heads of families, that their offspring might be placed in a capacity, by being prepared to inherit the same privileges and advantages which they themselves enjoy: being confident that if they, the parents, were so favoured as to be permitted to enter the kingdom of heaven, none among them could be found who would not desire to have their dear children there also: and therefore it was their greatest interest, as well as bounden duty, to lay these things to heart, &c. The meeting concluded in a solemn manner.

26th. "Great part of the day unable to attend to writing or to any other private concerns, from the company which kept coming on board, evidently with an intention of stopping with us. The queen and her husband, with two of the principal chiefs, and several others, came to dinner, and remained until near five o'clock, P. M., apparently well satisfied with their visit, although to ourselves it seemed almost like a day lost; yet it is needful to bear and have patience with the childish behaviour of these peo-



ple, however irksome it may be; it is more especially trying when much disposition to avarice is displayed.

27th. "Engaged on board until four o'clock, P. M., many of the natives constantly with us, among them several young women, and younger children of both sexes. They seem to enjoy themselves, and I like to see them so comfortable and unsuspecting, considering themselves quite safe on board. But I cannot help viewing their confidence with suspicion and fear, lest the treatment they meet with in our vessel, should induce them to venture on board of others at a future day, in the same unsuspecting and unprotected manner. In the afternoon, took exercise on shore, and ascended a considerable height up one of the mountains: Charles Barff having joined us, we accompanied him home to tea. In the course of the time we were together at his house, the circumstance of the females coming so freely on board the 'Henry Freeling' was mentioned, and the fears that I entertained on their account; but he said, 'Yours is called the "Praying Ship," which is the reason of their venturing on board as they do.' However pleasant and satisfactory it is to know the reason why our decks are so crowded with this description of female visitors; yet we find, to our great regret, that the practice of others in going off to the shipping is carried on to greater extent than their missionary is aware of; although things in many respects are much better regulated at Huahine than in other places which we have visited. What can be expected, while these poor islanders are exposed to the temptations and diseases brought among them by the notorious crews of the shipping, the vicious practices of whom cannot fail to subvert and banish every virtuous feeling, and whose example only teaches them to sin, as with a cart-rope: they are like a swarm of destructive locusts, that eat up every green thing wherever they come.

"Although I was favoured with an open relieving season in testimony at the forenoon native meeting, on *first-day* last, yet I did not feel myself at liberty to leave the island without attending one of their meetings, held on other days of the week. Although the number of persons who attend on those occasions, from various causes, is mostly very small; it appeared to me probable, that such as did get to them, might be considered the most valuable part of the community. Before leaving Charles Barff, I told him that I did not feel, as I had a little anticipated would be the case, at the conclusion of the meeting last *first-day* morning; and that I believed it best for me to be at the meeting to-morrow afternoon. Both he and his wife gave me to understand that the company would be very slender, yet it did not appear right for me to hesitate or demur on that account.

28th. "We repaired to the meeting-house about the time that the people assembled; and although but few were collected when we got in, yet the whole number at last was far more con-

siderable than had been looked for or expected. I had to revive the holy promise to them 'that feared the Lord; that spake often one to another, and that thought upon his name.' 'They shall be mine, saith the Lord of Hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.' I expressed to the people my belief, that they which attended on all such occasions, are in general desirous to serve the Lord in their day and generation; and although the number may be few, I would not have them discouraged. 'The righteous shall hold on his way, and he that hath clean hands shall be stronger and stronger.' That much depended on their conduct, and circumspect walking through life; as they would be looked up to by others, and therefore they had the greater need to take heed unto themselves. On returning to the vessel, I told Captain Keen that I knew of nothing to prevent our sailing for Raiatea on *sixth-day*, the 30th instant.

"The American ship, 'Commodore Rodgers,' arrived to-day, after a passage of six weeks, from Oahu, one of the Sandwich Isles; a full ship, with spermaceti oil, homeward bound; she had been out thirty months from New Bedford.

29th. "After dinner Charles Barff came on board: towards five o'clock, P. M., we went with him to the shore, to take leave of his family, in the prospect of leaving them to-morrow. Charles Barff purposes not only accompanying us to Raiatea, but also to Tahaa and Bolabola. Without this provision had been made, our touching at any of the islands to leeward of this place would have been wholly in vain, there being no missionaries residing upon them. The wife and children of George Platt are now living at Raiatea, during his absence at Samoas, or Navigator Islands, whither he is gone with Samuel Wilson. The circumstance of Charles Barff going with us, I cannot but regard as a singular interposition of Divine Providence in our favour, as it came about without any intervention or preconcerted plan or contrivance on our part; but originated entirely with himself; not a hint having been given nor a desire expressed that this might be the case; it is however in full accordance with the many great and marvellous works which our eyes have seen of Him, 'who causeth his wind to blow, and the waters flow.' A large parcel of religious tracts, and several of the writings of Friends, were selected this evening for Charles Barff, and to be distributed as opportunities may offer; as the shipping in general are eager to receive everything of the kind while on these long and tedious voyages. In the evening, every thing was ready for our leaving Fare Harbour.

30th. "At the dawn of day began to unmoor and prepare for sailing. Captain Taber, of the American ship 'Commodore Rodgers,' came on board, and kindly offered to take letters to New Bedford, and forward them forthwith from thence to England."

## CHAPTER X.

Raiatea—arrival at Uturóa—native meeting—a place of human sacrifice—meeting at Tahaa—a native feeding—Bolabola—desolating effects of intemperance—native meeting—meeting with the rebel chief and his idolatrous party—native meeting—wretchedness of the inhabitants—distribution of clothing—sail for the Sandwich Islands—contrary winds—Flint's Island—cross the equator—favourable change—Hawaii in sight—Oahu.

“At nine o'clock, A. M. (Charles Barff having been summoned on board by our making the signal for a pilot) the ‘Henry Free-ling’ weighed and made sail from Fare Harbour. When clear of the reef we ‘hove to,’ discharged the pilot, took in our boat, then bore up, and made all sail for Raiatea. Soon after one o'clock, P. M. we passed between the islands, which form the entrance to the roadstead; and at two o'clock anchored in eighteen fathoms water off Uturóa, (Oo-too-róa,) the missionary establishment at the settlement on the north side of the island. Charles Barff went on shore to dinner, in order to announce our arrival, and be in readiness to attend a meeting which was to be held in due course that afternoon. As only a small portion of the people would be there, it was concluded best for me not to be present, so that the reading my certificates might not take place until the whole congregation was assembled, the day after to-morrow, *first-day*. Towards evening we landed, and went to the mission-house, where we were kindly received and entertained by Judith Platt in the absence of her husband: she had a son and daughter at home with her, and her eldest son was expected from Bolabola. A considerable number of the natives, with Tamatoa, the king, or chief of the chiefs, with some of the governors of the island, soon made their appearance. All the seats in the room, which was large, were occupied, and many of the guests were squatted on the floor: they came to greet us on our arrival, and bid us welcome; at the same time it served as a plausible pretext for some to gratify their curiosity, and to scrutinize the strangers. We were, however, gratified ourselves, to find that many of them seemed alive to inquiry, and apparently desirous to improve. We have again been favoured to pass in safety from one island to another, and I trust, I have not left any thing undone that should have been done. Although desirous to move on, yet I am anxious not to be found imprudently hastening forward in my own will, instead of patiently and resignedly abiding the Lord's time. We brought with us from Huahine the son of one of the principal chiefs, whose mother is now on a visit to this island, attending the death-bed of her father.

Tenth month 31st. “In the course of the day I have been a good deal depressed, at the prospect before me of the native meeting to-morrow morning; but my trust is in Him whom I have been favoured to know; in whom I have believed, and who



said, 'Counsel is mine, and sound wisdom: I am understanding, I am strength.'

Eleventh month 1st. (*First-day.*) "Although half-past nine o'clock was the time fixed for the native meeting to begin, yet the people were observed moving along by the edge of the sea-coast, in small parties towards the meeting-house by half-past seven o'clock in the morning. On this account we landed earlier than the time agreed upon, that they might not have to wait long before our arrival, seeing they could not be blamed for not keeping near to the time appointed, not possessing the means of ascertaining the hour. On reaching the place we found the meeting nearly gathered, and Charles Barff at his post. Perhaps the number collected did not exceed materially one thousand persons.

"Charles Barff began at an early period of the meeting to read my certificates. I had been under a heavy load of exercise during the time we had been in the meeting-house, which indeed had been the case from an early hour in the morning: but now the cloud seemed, as it were, to rise from off the tabernacle, and my way seemed clear to stand up.

"When profound silence reigned, my soul saluted all present in the love of the everlasting Gospel in the apostolic language: 'Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep; through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work,' &c. A pause now followed, and when the attention of the people was firmly fixed, I proceeded with 'Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught,' showing the result of willing obedience to this, and every other command of our Lord, even though we may, as it were, have toiled all the night and taken nothing: such had been the case in reality formerly, as we may conclude from the reply of Simon Peter, 'Master, we have toiled all the night and have taken nothing; nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.' That the blessing Divine might perhaps be witnessed amongst us this morning, if such a disposition was happily wrought in our hearts, and increase and extend, as from vessel to vessel, until all were filled. 'I am the light of the world,' said Christ: 'he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.' To this I wish to turn the attention of all mankind, that Christ may dwell in their hearts by faith, which is in Him: then indeed would they be effectually turned 'from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to the power of God; and witness for themselves the light of the knowledge of the glorious Gospel of Christ so to shine in their hearts, as to be to them the power of God into salvation.—This was the most attentive audience that I have yet stood before as a spectacle; my heart was greatly enlarged, and utterance abundantly given me, far beyond what I can convey an idea of here: tending to turn the people more and more to the teachings of the Holy Spirit of the

great, heavenly, and only true teacher in their own hearts; which would tell them all things that ever they did, and by which they must be converted and born again, or they could not enter the kingdom of God. The solemnizing power of Truth with which we were highly favoured, and of which I trust there were many sensible witnesses, reigned over all: under the covering of which the meeting broke up, in great quiet and order.

"When the people were fairly at liberty, many of all ages and both sexes crowded round us, to shake hands, in numbers beyond all practicability of ascertaining. I scarcely remember any previous meeting after which I felt so much heated, and a long walk, exposed to the scorching rays of a verticle sun nearly at noon-day, helped not a little to increase this inconvenience. I told Charles Barff that I preferred remaining on shore, as I was looking forward to attend the afternoon meeting at three o'clock.

"By keeping in the quiet, I was refreshed and ready when the meeting-time came. The people assembled early, and in number far exceeding what usually attend in an afternoon. I had again to turn them to that Holy Word, by which they must be born again, that liveth and abideth for ever. This was the hope of David; he waited patiently for it: he said, he waited for the Lord more than they that watch for the morning. 'My soul doth wait, and in his word do I hope.'

"After the meeting broke up, we were spared the ceremony of shaking hands by a discussion which took place among the people. As this was in (to me) an unknown tongue, and no interpreter came forward, I felt myself at liberty quietly to retire: all the speakers were but barbarians or foreigners, as I am amongst the natives of these islands without an interpreter.

"It afterwards appeared that a proposition had been made to provide a 'feeding' for the strangers on the fifth instant. Upon inquiry, I found that it is a voluntary and free-will offering of the people themselves, and not arising from any constraint or order of the chiefs. This being ascertained, I feel a willingness to accept the kindness intended to be shown, at the same time hoping that good may come out of it. As regards the body of the people at large, this '*feeding*,' as it is termed, amounts to little more than the great bulk of the company bringing their vegetable food with them, and eating it, when collected together, by general consent at the same time. The seamen of the 'Henry Freeling' attended both these meetings in an orderly manner. Returned on board to tea, under a feeling of poverty and unworthiness.

2nd. "In the morning engaged on board. Charles Barff came off, bringing with him John Platt, (the eldest son of the missionary,) who had returned late the preceding evening from Bolabola, to which island he had been with a small native built schooner, to bring from thence a part of his father's cattle, many of which are still remaining there. The mission is entirely withdrawn from Bo-

labola, the people having generally given themselves up to intoxication, converting even their bread-fruit into spirit by distillation.

"In the afternoon, went on shore for exercise. Met with Charles Barff, and after going with him to see a patient labouring under a dreadful attack of the elephantiasis, went to look at the grave of the late James Loxton, with whom I became acquainted when in London about two years ago; he was then a fine young man. In this comparatively short space of time, (a fourth part of which had been expended on the passage out in the 'Tuscan,' or thereabouts,) he had arrived at this island, commenced his work, and finished his course: his widow has since become a mother, and returned to England with her infant charge in a British whaler.

3d. "Visited the ancient and extensive Marais at the east end of the island, accounted the most celebrated in the South Seas, and upon which the sacrifice of human life has been witnessed to a horrible extent. One of these was styled sacred to the god of wars, another to the god of thieves, &c. A native, not far advanced in years, who accompanied us, had himself been twice present at an exhibition of these dreadful realities: many human bones were lying about. To-morrow afternoon a meeting is appointed to be held on the island of Tahaa, not many miles distant from Raiatea, and sheltered within the same coral reef. It being the usual time for holding the native meeting, and notice having been sent yesterday of our intention to be there, it is hoped that those islanders will generally attend on the occasion. Tahaa is under the control of the government of Raiatea.

4th. "After dinner set out in company with Charles Barff, in a whale-boat, with a fine breeze of wind, for Tahaa. On landing, we stopped at the chief's house while the people had time to collect. On repairing to the meeting-house but few had come, and for some time the prospect was discouraging, particularly to myself, as I felt much depressed, and in a state of more than usual desertion and barrenness. As the number of people increased, their general behaviour indicated them to be strangers to the important object for which they are in the common practice of assembling; a circumstance which may be readily conceived and for which allowance should be made, as they are seldom even visited by missionaries at the present day. Since the death of James Loxton, and the absence of George Platt on the Samoa mission, they have even been left without a native teacher. After my certificates were read, I seemed to have little to communicate beyond remarking, that it would be understood by what they had heard, I had not come amongst them from any sinister or private motive of my own, but that I might be found standing in the counsel of the Divine will; that I sought not theirs but them; the welfare of the immortal part in them. For this cause I had left all that is dear to me on earth, and that in coming amongst these islands, I counted not my life dear, 'so that I might finish my course



with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus to testify the Gospel of the grace of God.' That the special object of my coming was to turn their attention to the power of Divine grace in their own hearts. That they were not beyond the reach of that eye, that neither slumbereth nor sleepeth. 'He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep;' and although they were left without an outward teacher, yet if they turned to this light of Christ in their own hearts, in earnestness and sincerity, they would have a Teacher indeed, that teacheth as never man taught; which could never be taken away or removed: and which, if sought after and obeyed, would make them the Lord's children, 'heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ' in his heavenly Father's kingdom. They would then be members of the Lord's church, because the Lord's children, all of whom it is declared 'are taught of Him; in righteousness shall they be established, and great shall be their peace.' I had largely to speak to them on the great and momentous work of regeneration, and the only blessed means by which this can be effected; that of obedience to the manifestation of the light of Christ, which shineth in every heart, through his Holy Spirit, by which we must all be born again.

"I had also to speak on the incalculable value of the Holy Scriptures: that all Scripture is given by inspiration, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, &c., and points to the Saviour of the world from the earliest ages of time, as the seed of the woman, that shall bruise the serpent's head. And that they show forth the gracious dealings of the Almighty, and testify his love to man, and are replete with heavenly precepts, examples and parables. It is a blessed Book, the Book of books, setting forth the revealed will of God. The meeting at first seemed as if it would be unsettled, but it sunk down into quietness as I proceeded; and before it closed, was eminently owned by the Divine Master. I think I never observed more attention and interest exhibited, and the countenances of many of the people bespoke the solidity of their minds.

"After noticing several of the people, we proceeded towards our boat, which the natives had tolerably well loaded with food. After taking a final leave, we were favoured to reach Raiatea before dark, and drank tea at the mission-house.

5th. "This morning our decks were crowded with the Raiateans, who began to bring on board an abundant supply of pumpkins, pine-apples, fowls, &c., which they bartered at a low rate. At noon, went on shore to partake of the feeding at Tamatoa's new house, which was opened, for the first time, on the occasion of this public dinner. The building, although extremely large, was well filled, and the whole affair conducted throughout in an orderly manner. Many able speakers among the people, enlarged in an impressive manner upon the privileges they now enjoy; contrasting their present state (however much below the Christian

standard of morality and virtue) with the state they were once in, when heathenism reigned unmolested, and every man did what was right in his own eyes. When these had apparently finished, I told Charles Barff that I wished to speak to the people at a suitable time, which he communicated to them, and a general silence soon prevailed. My mouth was opened freely to declare the day of the Lord amongst them, to the great relief of my own mind; standing up with 'Behold how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!' &c., declaring the blessedness of those that believe the Gospel, that repent and obey it. Such find it not to be a mere outward declaration of good things to come, but the power of God unto salvation, from sin here, and to their everlasting comfort hereafter. It proved a solemn opportunity. May it long be remembered, to the Lord's glory and praise, by the humble thanksgiving of many. Under a peaceful feeling took leave of the people and the chiefs, and returned forthwith to the vessel.

"Found a canoe from Tahaa, with the native school teacher and family, who paid us a short visit, and to whom some trifling presents were made. The natives on shore perceiving our return on board, came off with every kind of supply in their power to offer, and kept us very busily employed until it was time again to go on shore to pay a farewell visit to Judith Platt and family, whose uniform kindness could not well be exceeded. At eight o'clock, P. M. we took leave, and on reaching the 'Henry Freeling,' prepared for sailing in the morning, if nothing arose to prevent. The natives were on board at an early hour of the morning, on the 6th, and I felt desirous to accommodate them by taking their different articles that were at all likely to be of use to the ship. As soon as the signal was made for sailing, Charles Barff came on board, when all our payments were nicely arranged with the bartering parties; and having taken in the pilot, the anchor was weighed, and we proceeded from Uturōa towards the western passage through the reef. For several hours we were baffled between the two islands of Raiatea and Tahaa, the wind often light, and shifting from side to side every few minutes. At length a fresh breeze sprung up, and after making a few tacks we got clear of every shoal, and into the open passage; discharged the pilot, and made sail to the westward, with a fine trade-wind for the island of Bolabola at half-past one o'clock, A. M. Soon after five o'clock we entered a fine opening in the reef which encircles this island, and worked up into a beautiful, well-sheltered, and capacious harbour, or haven, sufficiently extensive to contain a great part of the British navy. Anchored in fourteen fathoms water, opposite the once flourishing missionary settlement at Vaitape, in latitude  $16^{\circ} 27''$  south,  $152^{\circ} 8''$  west longitude.

6th. "It was ascertained, after anchoring in the haven of

Teavanui, that there is a pilot for the accommodation of such ships as may incline to enter, but as it seldom happens that this place is visited at the present day, this man was engaged in fishing on the other side of the island when we arrived. One of the principal chiefs and many of the people have relapsed into their former idolatrous practices, and the intoxicated state of the people has latterly deterred ships from calling here, not only from a fear of receiving damage, but on account of the few supplies to be obtained. Such vessels as do come are mostly American, and they generally 'heave to,' or 'stand off and on,' at a distance, to dispose of rum, in exchange for what the islanders can furnish. There is, however, at present but little to be had, as the thoughtless part of the community (and these unhappily are in power) have converted even their bread-fruit into ardent spirits by distillation, and many families are now in an unclothed and famishing condition. Charles Barff has no doubt but they will be kindly disposed towards us, and I do not feel the least hesitation in coming amongst them.

"We found here John Platt, son of the missionary family at Raiatea, who has brought over a small cargo of plantains, as food for the people. In the schooner with this young man, our kind friend and interpreter, Charles Barff, looks forward to return to his family at Huahine, after doing all he can for us: he is now on shore endeavouring to collect the scattered people at the meeting to-morrow. There is a little remnant of serious natives yet remaining, who have hitherto stood firmly against the practices of those in authority, and several of them are nearly allied to the notorious chief whose name is Mai, (to which the letter O is often prefixed.) This little band there will be no difficulty in convening. We could not have arrived here at a more favourable moment, as the stock of spirits is exhausted, and the growing crops are not yet ready for the process of distillation. May the Lord work amongst them, to the exaltation of his own great and adorable name: may now be the accepted time: may now be the day of salvation to these poor people, saith all that is within me! In the afternoon landed with Charles Barff for exercise. Saw the relics of several Marais, where human sacrifices were formerly offered. Continued our walk until a bay opened on the other side of the island. Passed by one of the dancing-houses, which has been established since the introduction of strong drink amongst them. A message was despatched in the course of the day to the head of the rebellious party, who has been their leader into every mischief and distress that has overtaken them of late, to invite him and his company to attend the meeting to-morrow. These people have now taken up a position in a distant valley, for the purpose of carrying on their abominable practices more free from restraint: the invitation was stated to be at the request of two strangers just arrived from the island of Raiatea. They returned for answer, that



they could not come to-morrow, but would certainly attend on the following day. By this it was understood that they are in such a reduced, impoverished and suffering state, from their evil habits and ruinous practices, as to be for the most part without clothing, and their resources exhausted by purchasing rum and other strong drink.

8th. (*First-day*.) "From appearances upon the shore this morning, considerable hopes were entertained that the people in the neighbourhood of the settlement, would generally collect to attend the meeting. By nine o'clock went on shore, and on reaching the meeting-house, (a large and commodious building,) we found that the children were in school, and singing a hymn before separating. When they had finished, we went into the meeting-house, where about five hundred of the natives were soon assembled, but none of the rebel party were there. When Charles Barff had finished and come down from the pulpit into the reading-desk, I took a station at his left hand. The house being very large, and the people seated in a straggling manner, I suggested their drawing nearer together and to us; which was immediately complied with in a very rough and disorderly manner, and, as they continued unsettled, and talking pretty loud, I said a few words, which produced a general silence. My certificates having been read, after a pause it was with me to say,—Now let us humble ourselves under the mighty hand of God this morning, let us prostrate our minds before Him, as a people conscious that to us belongs only blushing and confusion of face: peradventure He may condescend to lift up the light of his countenance upon us, and bless us together, for 'God is love.' 'As an eagle stirreth up her nest, fluttereth over her young, taketh them, beareth them on her wings,' so the Lord is with his people, even 'as the mountains are round about Jerusalem—from henceforth even for ever.' I told them that I had passed over many miles of trackless ocean to visit them; that I had come among them in the fear and in the love of God; in that love which embraces all, and would gather every son and daughter of the human race into the heavenly garner of rest and peace: that this love constraineth us, 'because we thus judge that if one died for all, then were all dead; and that He died for all, that they which live might not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him, who died for them, and rose again.' The burden which rested upon me was to turn them from darkness unto the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus in themselves, to 'that light which lighteth every one;' that shineth in the heart 'of every one that cometh into the world;' the same and no other than the apostle John so fully mentions in the first chapter. That this light would show them where they are, and make manifest the state of their hearts, setting their sins in order before them, that so they might repent of them, and forsake them. That nothing short of 'repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ,' will be

availing. That this light is Christ: and if they believe in it, and have faith in its power, they should not walk in darkness, but should have the light of life, according to his word; 'I am the light of the world,' said He; 'he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.' Have you not heard the voice of the Holy Spirit in the secret of your hearts? I know you have! I am sure you have! Which of you that has come to years capable of reflecting upon your past and present life, can say that you have not heard this inspeaking voice, striving with you, and reproving you, when about to do evil—when about to commit sin, and for sin committed: reminding of sin after sin, committed perhaps many years ago? This light not only discovereth unto man his sins, but as he turneth to it, and followeth it, in obedience and heartfelt, unfeigned repentance, his sins are remembered no more against him; they are taken away and forgiven, and though once of the darkest hue, are now made white in the blood of 'the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world.' And those who thus turn to hear and obey the voice of the Son of God in spirit, although dead in sins and trespasses, 'yet shall they live,' and have a Teacher that cannot be set aside, or be removed into a corner; but their eyes shall see their teacher, and their ears shall hear a voice behind them, when about to turn to the right hand or to the left, saying in effect, 'This is the way, walk ye in it;' such shall no longer walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life, &c. Although poor and low enough before standing up, yet now my tongue was loosed, and my heart expanded in that love and strength, which alone clotheth with authority to set the truth over all, and cause even the earthly tabernacle to rejoice in the midst of the tribulations of the Gospel, because its consolations are known and felt to abound and create renewed sensations of gratitude and praise, 'to the glory of God the Father,' for Jesus Christ is Lord. It was a blessed meeting. When it broke up, the people crowded round about us in their usual way to greet the strangers. When going to the afternoon meeting, I told Charles Barff from present feeling, that I believed I should have nothing to say to the people; and so it proved, for I sat as a sign amongst them; but peace and resignation to the Divine will were my dwelling place. Our captain and seamen attended both these meetings.

9th. "A messenger was despatched early this morning to ascertain whether the rebel chief and his party were likely to keep their word and come to us; as I had concluded, if they failed in fulfilling their promise, to visit them in their own valley, although it might resemble in degree that of rousing the lion in his den. The messenger, however, reported, on returning, that the chief would come to us in the forenoon. By ten o'clock, A. M., information was received that he was near at hand; when we (accompanied by Charles Barff) landed to meet the party. It soon ar-

rived, and knowing that this man had objected to go into the meeting-house, this was not urged, but we took up our station immediately under the shade of an immense tree, under the wide-spreading branches of which several hundred persons could be sheltered from the scorching heat of the sun. The chief, at the head of a large banditti of females, first made his appearance; and on coming near to us, said, 'You are come at a good time, and I hope that one or both of you will remain with us and be our teachers.' I told him we were not at our own disposal, that we must go wherever it is the will of the Lord, and that I believed we had many places to go to beside that island. We then shook hands with him and all his followers. The females were decorated in true ancient heathen style, with garlands of flowers upon their heads, and were persons employed to perform for their chief's amusement, those disgraceful and abominable dances practised in these islands before the introduction of the missionaries. A body of men then followed, each of them throwing one or more cocoanuts at our feet as they came up; and those couples which had them suspended from a pole, threw them upon the ground in a ludicrous manner, which kept the whole assembly and the rabble that attended on the occasion, in constant laughter and confusion. Upon the chief beginning to ask some questions about us, I proposed that my certificates should be read, which Charles Barff at once assented to, when silence was immediately proclaimed. Before the reading was finished, these wild, thoughtless people were measureably changed into an attentive audience. When the reading was finished, all remained silent; and after a pause, I exhorted them to let the Lord God be their fear, and let him be their dread. 'He is not far from every one of us,' said I; 'for in him we live, and move, and have our being:' saying, that I had hoped to see their faces yesterday with the rest of the inhabitants of the island, who gave me their company; but as this was not the case, it was my intention to-day to have visited them where they dwelt, as I could not think of leaving the island without seeing them; for the Lord God, whom I serve, is a God of love and of mercy, and willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all should repent, return, and live. For this he sent his only begotten Son into the world, 'that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.' It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God; for if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the sinner and the ungodly appear. That for the sake of Christ and his Gospel I was come amongst them, for his inheritance is still the heathen, and the uttermost parts of the earth his possession. That I was a stranger, and knew nothing of the existing differences that prevailed amongst them, and desired to know nothing amongst them, but 'Jesus Christ and him crucified;' but this I do know, that you have not obeyed the Gospel; 'For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die; but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the



body, ye shall live.' 'Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.' 'Turn ye, turn ye, why will you die?' Your only refuge is in Jesus; and a measure or manifestation of his Holy Spirit is given to every man to profit withal; this is the light of Christ in your hearts, which if taken heed to, will place your sins in order before you, in matchless love and mercy, that you may repent of them, and be saved from them. But if you continue to disregard this light, and to rebel against it, it will be your condemnation, and the wrath of God will overtake you. He will laugh at your calamity, and mock when your fear cometh: the wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the people that forget God. I warned them, in the fear, and in the dread, and in the love of God, to flee from the wrath to come—to repent, believe, and obey the Gospel—to seek the Lord while he may be found, to call upon him while he is near. 'Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.' They were warned of the judgments of the Lord that would overtake them if they continued in their wicked practices, and entreated to turn unto the Lord; to acquaint themselves with Him and be at peace, &c. All was chained down and laid low; their haughty and airy looks were changed into those of serious thoughtfulness by that Almighty Power, which controlleth the hearts of all men.

"When we separated, this chief came to Charles Barff and told him, that old thoughts had been brought into his mind, and he seemed kindly disposed towards us. We remained on shore while some medicines were prepared and administered to the sick, and on returning to the vessel, found the chief had got there before us, with two of his sons-in-law, of the solid party, who staid dinner. One of the females had the audacity to make her appearance in the cabin at dinner-time; but Charles Barff, knowing the vileness of her character, she was forthwith dismissed. The visit of this man was far from satisfactory, but it was submitted to, in the hope that hereafter good might arise out of it. Our decks were crowded in the afternoon by the natives, but we were favoured to pass through it without any unpleasant occurrence. They are a proud, haughty people, that delight in war, and since the introduction of strong drink amongst them, and the practice of distillation, the missionary, George Platt, deemed it no longer safe to reside upon the island, and removed with his family to Raiatea, as before mentioned. It is affecting to witness the degraded and miserable appearance they now make for want of clothes, &c. Fowls, hogs, cocoa-nuts, pine-apples, &c., were brought on board by the solid party in tolerable abundance. Towards evening we went on shore, and called with Charles Barff to see several of the sick people, of

whom there are many : mostly wasting away by the disease brought amongst them by the licentious crews of the shipping.

10th. " To-day our deck has again swarmed with the natives, and although the principal part of our crew with our captain are engaged on shore procuring water, (a scarce article here,) yet there was nothing to apprehend from their numbers. Perhaps the treatment met with in our vessel is such as they never witnessed before, and we were far from entertaining a thought of danger, although the average number on board was ten of them to one of us, but their deportment has hitherto been uniformly gentle and harmless. They are naturally a ferocious people, and when not at war with their neighbours, are frequently engaged in broils amongst themselves. Great is the love I feel for them, as a stream in my heart, and particularly towards the poor neglected children. To-morrow morning a meeting is to be held, to which I have been looking at times since last *first-day* afternoon. All my springs are in the Lord Most High : when He is pleased to shut, who can open ? Unto whom shall I look, or whither shall I go ? for the words of eternal life are only with the Lord Jesus ; the crucified, risen, and glorified Saviour.

11th. " Attended the meeting held at the settlement at nine o'clock this morning, but the persons present were few in comparison with those at meeting last *first-day*. I was strengthened to declare amongst them, that one hour in the Lord's presence is better than a thousand elsewhere : ' I had rather be a door-keeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness ;' for in His presence only there is life, and at his right hand are pleasures, durable as the days of heaven.

" I felt much for the upright-hearted little remnant amongst them, who are desirous to serve the Lord in their day and generation. I wished them to be encouraged to hold on their way, for in due time they will assuredly reap if they faint not ; although they must expect many temptations and snares to be laid for them by the great enemy of God and man, and also by their brother islanders, for those that live godly in Christ Jesus, ever suffer persecution. The invitation of the Saviour, given when on earth, is still extended for us to come unto Him in spirit : it is there we must learn of Him. He is the only true teacher of his people, and continueth to teach, as never man taught. ' Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me,' said he, ' for I am meek and lowly in heart : and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.' We shall be taught how to pray to the holy Father in faith, believing in the name of the Son ; and what we ask, when thus qualified and influenced, we shall most assuredly receive for Christ's sake, and shall know from living experience that peaceful and easy is his yoke, light the burden, sweet the rest. The watch tower is the Christian's only safe retreat, his only refuge from the enemy. It is the place where prayer is wont to be made, appoint-

ed in love to man by Him who said, 'What I say unto you I say unto all, watch. Watch and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.' I had much more to express amongst them. It was to my own relief, and peace, and comfort, and I humbly trust if none were benefitted, that none would be hurt, for it was the Lord's doing, and to Him alone belongs the praise : man is altogether shut out and excluded.

"Busily employed the rest of the day on board, until evening, then landed and explored the neighbourhood for exercise. In the course of our travel, drank some excellent juice of a cocoa-nut, taken from a tree in our sight, which with three others, were planted about twelve years ago by George Bennet.

12th. "This morning our deck again teeming with the natives: they are so eager to obtain some article or other from us, that they bring with them for sale the very utensils out of their huts; useful to themselves, but to us of no value whatever. The poverty, disease, and wretchedness of many of them is truly affecting, and although mostly of their own bringing on, yet they are deeply to be felt for. It being *fifth-day*, we sat down together in the cabin, in the forenoon as usual; and although there was much noise upon the deck with these people, yet it served to make us sensible of our own weakness, and to awaken feelings of humility in commiserating the sufferings of others, in contritedness before the Lord. It would have afforded great satisfaction to clothe the poor naked children of this island, had I possessed the means, but the number is too great for my resources. It would have been a difficult matter to effect without creating jealousy or envy between the two parties. The children of the most notorious and unworthy parents were the most destitute, as might be expected; and yet more seemed due to the children of those parents who are struggling to stem the torrent of iniquity and dissipation so strongly and alarmingly threatening totally to lay waste the already much decreased and emaciated population. I was in great hopes that the children of sober parents would furnish a plausible pretext for being rewarded by having learned to read and write; but this did not prove to be the case with such as came on board the vessel, except in one instance of a little girl, who came with her father to sell her own fowl. On trial it was found she could write very well with a pencil on a slate. After having fitted her with a child's robe, she brought me the fowl as all she had in her power to make me recompense; but to her increased delight, I then bought the fowl for a thimble, two or three needles, and some thread. Dresses were also fitted upon two other children, the next deserving, but in order to select some more objects suitable for our purpose, Charles Barff was employed, who readily undertook to procure a list of the most diligent scholars from a native teacher. Forty-four garments were appropriated in this manner. In the evening visited the shore for the last time. Charles Barff being anxious to



return to his family at Huahine, any further stay at this island would have been useless on my part without our interpreter: but its suffering inhabitants will not be easily effaced from my memory; for whose welfare my heart is deeply interested, and for whom I must long mourn in secret, not having at any time felt a greater drawing of love for any people amongst whom my lot has been cast in this southern hemisphere, than for those of Bolabola. As we passed along the skirts of the harbour, we were followed by groups of the scarcely clad, famishing, dear children, who, from their eagerness to get near enough to us, might have known that the time of our departure drew nigh: their pallid, though quick and intelligent, countenances met us in every direction that we went. We returned on board at the close of the day-light, and made some preparation towards sailing.

13th. "After breakfast, a chapter in the Testament was read, as usual, and having spent a short interval in retirement together, Charles Barff and John Platt prepared to leave us. As soon as the anchor was weighed, our kind friends pushed off for the shore; and, quitting the well-sheltered haven of Te-ava-nui, we stretched through the opening of the reef, and once more committed ourselves to Him, at whose command the vast Pacific rolls. After getting from under the lee of the island, the weather proved rugged, and the wind scant. This day two years ago, we embarked from London to join the 'Henry Freeling' at the Lower Hope, about seven miles below Gravesend. Many have been our tossings, and buffetings, and provings since that time; but through that loving-kindness which is better than life, we have been delivered out of them all; and are still left to acknowledge, in the grateful language of the Psalmist, that 'the goodness of God endureth continually,' and his love and his mercy unceasingly flow from the rivers to the uttermost parts of the earth.

14th. "To-day at noon the island of Bolabola seventy-six miles distant. Strong breezes against us, with squalls, and heavy showers of rain. The best hog in our stock was so tired of his situation, that he sprung overboard and was lost; there being too much sea running for a boat to attempt to save him. Towards evening strong squalls, with much thunder, lightning, and heavy rain. The foot-rope of our jib gave way, but was discovered in time to save the sail.

16th. "Yesterday the roughness of the weather and the harassed state of our people, (several of them still sea-sick,) compelled us to relinquish meeting together in our customary manner on *first-days*. To-day the weather boisterous, and the wind contrary. After dark, frequent flashes of lightning from east to west. Birds of two kinds settled on the mast and suffered themselves to be taken, apparently nearly exhausted with fatigue. The very unsettled state of the weather, the opposing blast, debility of body, and poverty of mind seem to unite in producing fresh trials of our faith

and patience; but I trust it will be seen hereafter that all things have been working together for good. Had we known what awaited us, it is probable we should have still clung to the shelter of Bolabola, although for want of Charles Barff our situation would have been far from pleasant there. It is not long ago since an attempt was made by the rebellious party to seize a vessel which had put into the harbour for supplies: this, however, was frustrated by the sober part of the community, who armed themselves, and came forward in time to prevent its success. While we were there, the natives came on board without restriction by forty or fifty at a time: they were received in fullest confidence; our boarding nettings were entirely kept out of sight, and we felt perfectly safe among them. Some trifling thefts were committed, not worth noticing, although a good look-out was kept by our men. The three chiefs next in authority to the present vicious ruler, Mai, are all his sons-in-law by marriage, and stand opposed to his shameful conduct; they are at present the means of preserving the degree of moral order still existing upon the island: they have been applied to, to destroy their father-in-law, and rule themselves; but they say, 'He is our father; we cannot do that: we must bear with him.'

18th. "Yesterday the strength of the wind abated, but it remains still contrary with a heavy swell. At noon our latitude by observation  $12^{\circ} 54''$  south. To-day the weather fine, but the wind still northerly. The Magellan clouds are seen every night, but visibly getting lower and lower. We hope soon to get in sight again of the north star, which has for many months been hidden from us.

19th. "The wind still contrary. Endeavoured to commit my cause to Him who knows the depth of the motive that induced our steps being directed to the Sandwich Islands. The protracted adverse winds and humiliating state of mind, at present my portion, could not fail prompting to a strict examination of the foundation cause of this movement. I had, previously to finishing our visit to the Georgian and Society Isles, looked different ways as to the next route to be pursued. Roratogna, Tongataboo, and New Holland, seemed the places in regular course and succession in the nature of things; but the Sandwich Islands were often before me. However undesirable to the natural inclination of flesh and blood in this the evening of my day, the prospect might be, of adding several thousand miles to our already lengthened distance from home, which must be the result of our going thither; yet, no light or brightness shone upon any other track, and therefore, without hesitating, as the time of finishing at the southern islands drew nigh, I took care that the vessel was provided with water, hogs, and vegetables, to be in readiness to proceed, as the way should open; and at length left Bolabola with a peaceful mind, under a belief that to proceed to the Sandwich Islands was the only safe path for me to

pursue, and therefore we at once shaped a course towards the equator. This being *fifth-day*, it was a great comfort to have the privilege of sitting down to wait upon the Lord, who knoweth the secret exercises of my mind on the present occasion. After our sitting was over, I felt relief, and, I trust, resigned to the dealings of our heavenly Father.

20th. "Last evening, being in about the latitude of Flint's Island mentioned in Norie's list, a good look-out was kept for it during the night. This afternoon, just before sun-setting, the appearance of land was announced. Upon examining the latitude by observation at noon, and the course of the vessel since made good, there is no room to doubt but the land in sight is Flint's Island, in latitude  $11^{\circ} 30''$  south, and which may be considered as accurately laid down. This is frequently not found to be the case, and when islands are wrongly placed on the charts, they are calculated only to mislead, rather than assist a stranger. After dark, edged away to give this land a wide berth, it being uncertain how far its coral crags may extend from the main body of it. This island bore from us, when last seen, east by north, about ten miles distant, and appeared in the form of three small islands close together. It is cause of humble thankfulness that we have not been taken by surprise in meeting with it in the dark, or under circumstances unfavourable and dangerous. To-day abiding through favour in the low and peaceful valley, although under more than ordinary circumstances of discouragement, by reason of the increased swelling of the lower part of my legs and ankles, from the supposed cause of the great and constant heat to which we are subjected, together with the want of exercise, which the incessant motion of the vessel almost precludes the possibility of obtaining; but in my straits and difficulties I am endeavouring to 'set the Lord always before me,' believing He will not permit me to be greatly moved at what he may be pleased to dispense to a 'worm and no man,' as is often my state of feeling and condition.

23d. "The weather much the same since the 20th inst. Yesterday very wet and squally, and although the *first-day* of the week, we were forced to let it pass over without assembling the people. As regards myself, poor and low; endeavoured to keep my mind stayed, watching unto prayer towards the Lord. At our evening reading, my understanding was renewedly opened, to comprehend in a spiritual sense some texts of Scripture which were read; to my comfort and edification, and I hope to my Maker's praise. Towards night the wind came fair, but the old swell was so heavy that we could not make it availing. At ten o'clock, P. M. a dark cloud arose in front of the vessel, when our fair wind gradually died away, and was succeeded by another edition of adverse breezes, accompanied with heavy rain. To-day fair weather, which afforded our people an opportunity to dry most of their wet clothes.



26th. Latitude  $9^{\circ} 44''$  south. "Since *second-day* many changes have taken place, but mostly tending to retard our progress, as we have only altered the latitude about twenty-two degrees. This forenoon we held our little meeting, and notwithstanding previously to sitting down I felt surrounded and hemmed in outwardly and inwardly by discouraging circumstances, yet as the struggle was maintained, a gleam of comfort seemed to shine as from the Sun of Righteousness, which alone can avail and cheer the drooping traveller in the Christian course, and strengthen him more and more to walk by faith and not by sight; and less and less to look for support and comfort from the perishing 'things that are seen' and only 'temporal;' whilst the blessed realities which endure, are 'not seen,' but are 'eternal.'

27th. "We were favoured this morning, soon after breakfast, with a sight of Caroline Island, about three leagues under our lee. Although from the present wind, and relative positions both of the vessel and this island, we could never have touched it, yet it is comforting and relieving when permitted to have a distinct view of such lurking neighbours; as it at once places all risk of running upon them in the darkness of the night beyond the shadow of a doubt. Caroline Island, like many others of those beautiful spots which stud the capacious bosom of this vast ocean, is so low that nothing was apparent but the tops of the trees that grew upon its coral foundation: it is said to be uninhabited. This day my sixty-fourth year is completed, and when I look at the lateness of life's hour, and consider my present situation, (contending with winds and waves on this side the globe, and my hands ready to hang down under a sense of weakness and increasing infirmities which cannot be mistaken,) it is truly appalling. I feel at times ready to faint at the magnitude of the prospect still widely spread before me, and certainly 'I should have fainted' long ago if I had not believed to see, and also been permitted to see, to my finite admiration, the mercy, the goodness, and the faithfulness of 'the Lord in the land of the living.' He beareth up my often drooping and helpless head above the strife of the mighty waters: He sustaineth and upholdeth me by the word of His power for His great name's sake.

29th. "The weather still rough and unsettled. This is the third *first-day* in succession that we have been prevented from meeting together in the usual way. A circumstance that did not occur during the long and stormy outward-bound passage from England. Such is the closeness and heat of the cabin below, that our toiling sailors soon become drowsy in this climate, which renders almost useless our assembling any where but on the deck, which the weather of late has not permitted.

Twelfth month 4th. "Since the 29th ult. nothing to record but a series of rough and unsettled weather, (excepting those mercies which are new every morning,) until the 2nd instant, when a sight

of the sun was obtained, and our true latitude found to be  $11^{\circ} 46''$  south, having drifted about two degrees to the southward, owing to the prevalence of strong northerly winds, and the swell of the sea against the vessel.

"Yesterday the weather and wind more favourable, which was succeeded by a calm. It being *fifth-day*, we held our usual meeting in thankfulness for the quiet opportunity afforded by the more gentle tossing of the vessel. Supported in humble resignation to divine disposal. In the afternoon a shark was taken, about seven feet long. This day, three weeks from the island of Bolabola.

10th. "No material alteration in the weather since the 4th instant, although some progress has been made. On *first-day*, the 6th instant, portions of Scripture were read to the crew in the forenoon; in the afternoon this was prevented from taking place, by the state of the weather. To-day we sat down together in the morning, and I was favoured to feel refreshed. We have now a steady trade-wind from the eastward, sufficient to allow our making a north course good against an opposing swell, but greatly annoyed with another swell more heavy upon the quarter, which makes the motion uneasy, and at times violent. Latitude this day at noon  $3^{\circ} 9''$  south.

14th. "Steady wind from the east and fine weather. Yesterday, assembled the crew twice in the day for devotional purposes. About eleven in the forenoon, the 'Henry Freeling' entered the North Pacific. At noon our latitude  $0^{\circ} 6''$  miles north of the equator. Longitude about  $147^{\circ}$  west. This morning we have got through a strong current which in the course of a few hours had swept us twenty-eight miles to the westward, as indicated by the chronometers. On examining our private chart, we find that Walker's island is at no great distance from us. A good look-out will be kept in the course of the night, and as the moon rises about two A. M. its additional light will be very acceptable and opportune.

"For more than three weeks after leaving Bolabola, our progress has been greatly impeded by an almost constant succession of contrary winds and rugged weather, and yet I could never see my way to bear up and run back to the islands for shelter. I believed on setting out that the track towards the Sandwich Islands was the right one for me to pursue, and yet every thing combined to obstruct and frustrate our best attempts to persevere. Winds, from quarters from which they are seldom known to blow in these seas, were permitted to buffet us, at times strongly with considerable sea: these, together with a succession of drenching heavy thunder rains, made the prospect additionally discouraging and gloomy to some on board. Although I never hinted it to any one, yet I had pretty much concluded that, on reaching the equator, if the northerly blast should then appear to be fairly established strongly against us, I should be satisfied to bear away before it for the nearest port, rather than any longer to persist in beating

our little vessel to pieces by contending against its overwhelming force; as having done all I could to endeavour to follow the line of apprehended duty cast up before me; not doubting but the will would be accepted for the deed, by Him who knows the integrity of all hearts, and had witnessed our faithful striving, in vain, week after week, to accomplish its fulfilment. But, on reaching the utmost bound of south latitude, yesterday, instead of boisterous and contrary winds, we were favoured to cross into the northern hemisphere with a leading breeze, and as beautiful weather as could be imagined: and such has been our progress through the night, that at noon this day, our latitude is  $2^{\circ} 28''$  north;  $146^{\circ} 59''$  west longitude, by lunar observation. This change in a prospect so lately and so darkly clouded, has brought with it comfort and strength, and caused gratitude and thanksgiving to spring in my heart to our all-merciful and faithful Creator and Preserver.

17th. "Continued to make rapid progress since the 14th instant to the northward with a side-wind. Yesterday the appearance of the weather very threatening, and the swellings of the ocean much increased. A considerable quantity of rain fell in the course of the day, but the clouds most heavily charged rode past us altogether unbroken. Charles and myself sat down in the forenoon, and towards the latter end of our sitting, a small portion of strength was felt, to draw nearer to the Fountain of life.

18th. "A steady wind, about one point free. At noon the latitude  $10^{\circ} 25''$  north;  $146^{\circ} 16''$  west longitude. The distance from the north end of the island of Hawaii about seven hundred miles; bore up another point to the westward, which increases our speed and lessens the motion of the vessel.

21st. "The wind rather more in our favour. Our progress somewhat retarded by reason of changing several of our sails, from their being too old and thin to trust to, when liable to heavy gusts from mountainous land. Yesterday assembling the crew for devotional purposes was not omitted. At ten o'clock P. M. last night shortened sail, for fear of a supposed island being in our route, called Hirst's Island. This island is mentioned by Norie, in a chart published in 1833, belonging to our mate; whilst our own private chart, and the ship's atlas are silent on the subject. It is probable this island may exist, but certainly not in the place laid down; as we must have passed nearly over the spot where it is said to be, in the dark, and met with nothing. This circumstance cost us several hours of a beautiful wind, without the satisfaction of being able to furnish an accurate statement of the fact of there being such an island, and of its true position, for the benefit of other wandering pilgrims on this expansive watery waste.

"On the 19th, did not fail, and, I trust, allowably so, to remember the mercifully-bestowed, and long-entrusted and beloved partner of my bosom; a bosom friend indeed; guileless and faithful, to my so much the greater and irreparable loss, but to her eternal



gain. Humble resignation to the divine will is as a canopy of peace around me, although the loss was such, that even time does not lessen its value.

23d. "Yesterday the wind fresh and favourable: through the night got on rapidly also, and to-day still hastening onward with a following sea. At noon the latitude  $19^{\circ} 41''$  north; at four o'clock P. M. longitude  $153^{\circ} 18''$  west. This morning hauled a little more to the westward, to endeavour to make land. Just before sun-set, the sight of land was announced from the mast-head, but the haze about the water's edge, made it very indistinct, and not visible from the deck to myself, until the sun had sunk below the horizon; when not only the stupendous mountain of Mouna Kea, with its snow-clad top, which is more than 13,000 feet above the level of the sea; (as per the recent accurate measurement of — Douglas;) but the lower land towards the north cape of the island of Hawaii could be plainly distinguished at the distance of more than eighty miles. Here is a renewed call for thankfulness after such a winding and intricate passage of six weeks, thus to be favoured with such a defined, and decidedly excellent landfall before the night closed upon us, which is now long and dark, the shortest day, in this region, being just over, and the moon but in an infant state at present. The mercies of the Lord are indeed from everlasting to everlasting, and blessed for ever is He, the Lord God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things; and blessed be his glorious name for ever, and let the whole earth be filled with his glory: and who can refrain from saying with David, 'amen and amen'?"

24th. "This sight of the land enabled us to run through the dark under whole canvass without fear, making great progress; and this morning the lofty mountain upon Hawaii, from our having approached at least fifty miles nearer to it, appeared twice as high as it did last evening. Before noon the island of Maui was discernible from the deck, and at sun-down Tauroa was plainly to be seen. In the evening brisk galés and fine weather, with as fair a wind as could be desired. At eight o'clock P. M. off the west end of Maui; reduced the canvass for the night. Our getting into Oahu to-morrow is at present uncertain; the day must declare that event: at four o'clock P. M. this afternoon we were one hundred and thirty miles distant from that island. Some of my beloved friends may be at a loss for the reason of our passing by some of the largest islands in the Sandwich group, (particularly Owhyee, formerly considered as the king of the cluster,) and aiming directly at one not one-third its size, and much less than Maui. This decision seemed to arise from the circumstance of Captain Keen's being a stranger at the other islands, and from the information obtained, that there was no safe anchorage for a vessel in the winter season, but at Oahu (in the port of Honolulu) where there is safety at every season of the year. It occurred to me at the same time that, if we should be favoured to reach Oahu in

safety, and then find it necessary to proceed to other islands, some person might be found well acquainted with their different bays, roads, coves, creeks, &c., and easily obtained to accompany us on such a visit. These were my motives for what might seem, and did seem to some people, beginning at the wrong end of the work, by going to leeward, and having to come back again against the trade-wind, which is no easy matter. But I have since found that I should have been wrong altogether if I had stopped short of Oahu, for here I found the seat of the government of the islands established; and also the head quarters of the American missionary establishment: in short, the only means of access to the authorities of the other islands, and to the missionary stations, were here; and, in some instances, we could not have procured supplies for the vessel without an order from the government, or an agent of theirs sent along with us. I mention the missionary stations as needful to have access to, because it is only at them that I can look for an interpreter, and through him that I can speak to the native tribes. We therefore passed by Hawaii, Maui, and Morakai, at all of which are several missionary stations, except the last mentioned, where there is only one. And it now fully appears that the step of coming in the first place to Oahu, has opened the way in a most satisfactory manner, in every respect, for a visit to the other islands. I have added the foregoing explanation while transcribing this series of Extracts, &c., for the information and satisfaction of my dear friends.

"I feel it no light thing to be, as it were, upon the eve of again landing upon shores by myself as yet untrodden, amongst thousands and thousands of my fellow-creatures, in whose sight I must unquestionably appear, 'as one born out of due time;' but when I trace the motive and the sole object of my coming to its utmost source, I am favoured to find a foundation firm enough to bear me out: and the prospect of another opportunity being afforded me, for the exaltation of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, at seasons warms and gladdens my heart, rekindling a measure of that love which desires the welfare of all mankind the world over; which prompted me to forsake my all that is near and dear on earth, to declare amongst these heathen tribes its 'unsearchable riches;' many of whom have long since heard of the name of Jesus, the Messiah, at a distance, but know him not as a Saviour, nigh in the heart to save them from their sins.

25th. "The breeze continued until midnight, after which it gradually lessened, and at four o'clock, A. M., we were becalmed. In the forenoon made some progress with light winds, and before noon got sight of Oahu, but the prospect of our getting in is now doubtful, the wind having become variable. Towards evening the breeze freshened, and enabled us to get considerably nearer to the island. Our latitude this day at noon was  $20^{\circ} 37''$  north,  $157^{\circ} 26''$  west longitude. The whole of the Sandwich group in sight,

except Tauai, or Atooi, which lies ninety-four miles to leeward of Oahu. Before dark, a sail hove in sight from the westward, the first and only vessel we have seen at sea for the last eight weeks, or since leaving Huahine."

---

## CHAPTER XI.

Sandwich Islands—Oahu—anchor in the harbour of Honolulu—native meeting—letter from the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands—visit from the king—meeting at the mariner's chapel—distribution of tracts, &c.—native meeting—meeting at the chapel—visit of the governor of Hawaii—half-caste girls' school—meeting at the chapel—native marriages—native meeting—meeting at the chapel—native girls' school.

26th of Twelfth month. "Plyed to and fro during the darkness to windward of the island, and at the earliest dawn of day bore up for Diamond Hill. At eleven o'clock, A. M., made the signal for a pilot, and hauled close in towards the opening of the reef under easy sail. As we neared the entrance, several boats were seen coming out. The first brought two or three of the resident traders, the second brought the pilot and some others, and in the third came the British and American consuls. The former bringing us a packet of letters containing tidings from our beloved family at Shoosharry, &c., though, as might be expected, all of old date, but new to us, and truly welcome, and afresh claiming a grateful tribute of thankfulness to Him whose tender mercies extend to all his poor unworthy creatures, however widely separated. The wind, which at first was likely to prevent our getting in, now changed, and bore us quickly through the winding narrow channel at once, into the still harbour of Honolulu. The anchor was but just dropped, before Hiram Bingham, the senior missionary of the establishment at this place, came on board, who offered his services in whatever way we could accept them; at the same time invited us to become his guests while here. We had on board a large packet of letters and parcels for him and his colleagues upon these islands. It appeared that information of our being at the Georgian Islands had long since reached this place, and as soon as our vessel came in sight, there was no doubt, from her strange and novel figure in these seas, but we were arrived: this was evidently the case, for the British consul, Richard Charlton, brought off our letters without hesitation.

"The natives here being much accustomed to see shipping, in general take but little notice of them, and seldom visit them; but they soon swarmed upon our deck, attracted by the odd appearance of the 'Henry Freeling;' and we afterwards understood that they gave her the name of the '*Mast-and-a-half*.' We now find it



needful to make an alteration in the day of the month and of the week, to accommodate the time in these islands. Yesterday was with us what is commonly called Christmas-day, the 25th instant; but we find that to-day, (with us the 26th,) is here only the 25th, and the Christmas-day kept here. To prevent confusion, we purpose adopting the day considered the sabbath here, instead of our own, whilst we remain among the Sandwich Isles; such an occurrence is not likely to happen again, but the ship's log-book will still retain the dates and days as when we left England, and in it the change will never be observable. We remained on board to-day, to get things adjusted various ways.

27th. "In the afternoon landed and made our way to Hiram Bingham's habitation, but not finding him at home, we called upon the British consul, who kindly accompanied us to obtain some exercise on foot, it being forty-five days since we had had an opportunity of walking more than a few paces at a time on the 'Free-lings' deck. Returned to Hiram Bingham's about the time his return home was expected, and found him accordingly. Believing it safest for me not to miss an opportunity (if one could be obtained) of seeing a body of the natives collected together to-morrow, (*first-day*,) at their own place of worship, I mentioned the matter to Hiram Bingham, who readily made way for my accommodation, kindly offering his services to interpret if I wished to address the people. After partaking of an early tea with the family, we returned on board. Ten o'clock, P. M. mercifully supported to look forward towards to-morrow in humble confidence and hope of that help and strength which is almighty, and which has never yet failed to deliver me out of every trouble and distress. My trust is in the Lord, whose power is infinite, who alone can bless and cause his own works to praise his ever great and adorable name.

28th. (*First-day*.) "Repaired to Hiram Bingham's house by nine o'clock, A. M., he accompanied us to the native meeting. As the branch of the mission here consists of several families from America,\* who understand the native language but in a small degree, and as some other white people attending the meeting are labouring under the same disadvantage, Hiram Bingham proposed that my certificates should be first read in English, and then to the people in the native tongue; and this plan afterwards appeared more eligible, when it was observed that other persons came into the meeting (probably induced by curiosity) who do not attend on other occasions, such as the foreign consuls and others from the town. The service performed here by the missionary somewhat differs from what we had seen among the Southern Islands. It commenced with a very short prayer, which we had previously

---

\* The missionaries stationed in the Sandwich Islands are exclusively from the American board of missions.

been told was for a blessing on what was about to follow ; a portion of the Scriptures was then read, and afterwards a hymn was sung. When this was finished, the principal prayer (as before explained to us) was offered at considerable length, and then another hymn was sung, after which the reading of my certificates commenced. I had sat under a great weight of exercise, from a belief that I should have to stand up when the reading of them was gone through, and not without a humiliating feeling of weakness and fear at my own insufficiency. Not having for perhaps a year and a half heard my certificates read, except in the Polynesian language, I felt quite struck on hearing them in English, but I think the unity and sympathy of my dear brethren and sisters at home, never at any time felt so truly precious and strengthening to my bowed-down mind; and the expressions which they contain of my beloved family's concurrence with my leaving them, to attend to the call of apprehended duty, were so unexpectedly sounded in my ears, that the weakness of human nature could not be repressed, nor the tear of parental affection restrained. 'Deep called unto deep;' the waves and the billows passed over, leaving me in a state of nothingness and emptiness, but, perhaps, never more fit to declare of the goodness and mercy of my Lord, in the ability he was graciously pleased to bestow. When Hiram Bingham had finished reading and explaining my certificates to the people, I went and stood by his side, as 'a reed shaken with the wind.' A solemn silence now prevailed over us, until it was with me to say—It is more than probable that the greater part of the company now assembled never before heard of the existence of a Society under the denomination of Friends, (alluding to my certificates,) but my beloved people, all such as love the Lord Jesus Christ and keep his commandments, are friends—friends universally to God, friends to one another, and friends to all mankind. 'Ye are my friends,' said Christ, 'if ye do whatsoever I command you.' All such are members of the same society the world over. Then, charging the people to endeavour to draw nigh unto God, that under the sanctifying influence of His power and life-giving presence, our meeting together might be rendered a blessing, I was largely opened to declare the everlasting truth amongst them, and to turn them to its light in their own hearts; to the Holy Spirit of Him, who is 'the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world,' in whom only there is life, and who is the only way to God the Father, as declared by himself:—'I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh to the Father but by me.' That a mere outward profession of religion would prove altogether unavailing to them: the great work of regeneration must be witnessed: that to be members of the true church they must be redeemed with judgment from sin and from transgression, and be converted unto God by the righteousness of Christ Jesus, believed in and submitted to through faith in the operation of the Spirit of

God, who raised Him from the dead, with whom also they must be raised from death unto life. That we cannot worship God in the manner He requires while we continue in sin and wickedness, for the prayers of the wicked are not heard; they cannot pray acceptably in that state; their sacrifice is an abomination. The true and living worshippers of the only true and living God are no longer dead in sins and trespasses; they are redeemed from these by the Righteousness of Christ Jesus, who came to save his people from their sins, and never in them. That we must fear God, and in thought, word, and deed, give glory unto Him, before we can worship Him in spirit and in truth. For considerably more than an hour my heart was enlarged in the flowings of Gospel love, as a stream bearing down every thing before it. A more attentive audience can scarcely be conceived, than certain classes of this people, both natives and foreigners. The Lord's power had the dominion, and reigned pre-eminently until the breaking up of the meeting. Every class and variety of the people flocked round us, scarcely affording us an opportunity of speaking to the members of the missionary establishment. Some of the natives endeavoured to thank me through the medium of Hiram Bingham, but I requested him to refer such to the great Creator, and not to look at the creature. One said I had brought them a blessing. A number of serious-looking women came round us, whose countenances bespoke that love was in their hearts. Troops of the dear children gathered in their turn, and seemed delighted to find that they also might shake hands with the strangers: some of them would come again and again until they found their faces were recognized. We seemed to need more hands than we possessed, as frequent attempts would fail to shake hands with those that held theirs out to us, by others reaching forward and taking hold of ours before them, in quick succession.

"Thus hath my gracious Lord been pleased to deal with a poor, unprofitable creature, but a living monument of his everlasting love and mercy, although unworthy of being numbered among the least of his servants. Truly his judgments are a great deep; but his love who can declare? It is unutterable, unfathomable, and unbounded as his mercy, whose is the kingdom, and to whom all power and glory belong for ever. When we got into the open road, Hiram Bingham told us the bell was then ringing at the Mariners' Chapel, where the English and other foreigners meet, if I wished to go to it. I replied, that I believed I must go on board to my little family there.

31st. "Engaged on board during the forepart of each day preparing despatches for England, and by the numerous callers to look at the vessel, and see the newly-arrived strangers. The governor of the fort, and some of the principal chiefs, with the governor of the island of Maui, were amongst them. In the afternoon took exercise on shore, and called upon some of the inhabitants,



and engaged in writing till late at night. This evening spent some time with the seaman's chaplain, a young man appointed and sent out by the Seamen's Friend Society in America, to preach at the Mariners' Chapel. While together some interesting conversation took place on important subjects.

1st of First month, 1836. "This morning a deputation of chiefs of the highest order came on board, bringing a letter, addressed to me, as follows:—

*"Honolulu, January 1st, 1836.*

"As an expression of friendly regard of Kinau and her associate chiefs to Mr. Wheeler, the friendly visitant, they beg his acceptance of a few supplies. They are the following:—five barrels of potatoes, five turkeys, five fowls, and one hog.

NA

‘KINAU.’

"Finding upon inquiry that to refuse this present would create much dissatisfaction, because entirely intended as a good-will offering, the following acknowledgment was written and returned:

"Highly sensible of the kindness and hospitable intention of Kinau, the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands, and the constituted authorities of the same, I assure them of my Christian regard in the love of the everlasting Gospel, which has induced me to visit these isles afar off.

"I feel and value this token of good-will, in their act of generosity, and I do freely accept the supplies so gratuitously furnished.

"With best desires for their present and eternal welfare, and that of every age and every class over whom they preside, I am her and their sincere friend,

"DANIEL WHEELER.

"‘Henry Freeling,’ in the harbour of  
Honolulu, First month 1st, 1836.

"To KINAU, the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands, &c.

"Before the business was fully arranged, and the parties gone from the cabin, the young king Kauikeaouli arrived, with several of his principal attendants. He was escorted on board by the English consul, accompanied by two other foreigners. It appears that the king, although the lawful ruler of these islands, has delivered up the executive power into the hands of Kinau, and takes no part whatever in the administration of public affairs. He is surrounded by a set of evil advisers, and there is every reason to apprehend, leads a very unsteady, dissipated life, but is said to possess good abilities and an amiable disposition: he talks some English and understands much of what is said. He examined every part of our vessel very minutely, and might possibly have gone to the mast-head, (as is a common thing with him,) but our

rigging being afresh tarred, deterred him from attempting it. An intelligent person, a native of Dundee, was on board at the time, though not one of the palace party. To this man I mentioned what I thought of the islanders, and as the king, who sat next him, appeared to listen attentively, I spoke freely and plainly on the impending ruin that awaited these islands, if the importation of spirits and the use of them was allowed to continue; and without the private property of the poor inhabitants is respected and protected by wholesome laws, firmly executed without partiality. At present these people are groaning under an arbitrary feudal system, kept up with shameful and oppressive tyranny on the part of the chiefs.

2nd. "In the evening called upon Hiram Bingham, and Richard Charlton. On our way to the habitation of the latter, accidentally met with the seaman's chaplain, who accompanied us thither. While together, I felt best satisfied to make inquiry as to the probability of the inhabitants being willing to attend a religious meeting, held on a *first-day* evening; and being assured that the foreigners would come more freely in the evening than in the morning, I believed it best for me to agree that public notice should be given at the close of the morning meeting, that a meeting for worship after the manner of the Society of Friends, was intended to be held there in the evening of next *first-day*, at the usual hour of the place being open: the use of the Mariners' Chapel having been previously offered at any time I might be ready to accept it, with every assistance that could be suggested, as likely to facilitate my object.

3d. "Having prepared a number of written notices of the intended public meeting, we landed and took measures for their circulation. Called at the reading-rooms, and looked into the chapel, which is over them. Captain Keen was employed to spread the information of the meeting both on shore and amongst the shipping in the harbour. 'The Lord of Hosts is my defence, the God of Jacob is my refuge, and my only hope.'

5th. "Yesterday, as our people were left at their liberty to attend a place of worship on shore, Charles and myself sat down together in the forenoon: with the weight of the prospect before me of the appointed meeting to be held in the evening with the public, the quiet season we were favoured with was both refreshing and strengthening. We landed soon after dark to be in readiness for the time appointed, and repaired to the place of worship. The time no sooner arrived, than the people poured in from every direction, and soon filled nearly all the seats; some more were provided, but many had to stand at the lower part of the house in a crowded manner. The novelty of a 'Quaker's meeting,' and the first ever held on a Sandwich Island, might induce many to come out of curiosity, who at other times never think of attending a place of worship; and it is probable, that the whole of the white

residents were present, besides those who came from the shipping, and a considerable number of the natives and half-castes, with several of the highest authorities in the place; so that the house was crowded, we were informed, as it had never been before.

"Sitting in silence seemed perhaps to nearly all that were there, quite incomprehensible. The fore-part of the time was unsettled by many whispering and talking, and an individual or two not quite sober, were a little troublesome and annoying; but I think I have witnessed in lands accounted civilized, a meeting, from one or other cause, quite as unsettled, though altogether free from those disadvantages under which this was labouring. Having sat a considerable time in silence after the meeting was fully gathered, it was with me to say, that as the disciples formerly were incapable of feeding a hungry multitude, until the great Master had blessed and broken the bread, so it is at this day. Without him we can do nothing as it should be done; and it is only when He is pleased to qualify any of his servants to proclaim his Truth, that the people can be availingly benefitted. 'Without me ye can do nothing,' was our Lord's declaration; and true it is, for without Him we can do nothing, not even think a good thought, nor restrain an evil one; the spirit truly is willing, but the flesh is weak. That the Society of which I have the privilege of being a member, has always borne a faithful testimony to the excellency of waiting upon the Lord, as the all-sufficient and only great and true Teacher of his people. After recommending that we should endeavour to wait for the influence of the Holy Spirit to solemnize our minds together, I sat down. The meeting became much more settled after this had taken place, though doubtless the patience of many would be tried before the silence was again broken. When the time was come, I stood up with these expressions: 'I am no prophet, nor a prophet's son,' but in me you may behold a living monument of the Lord's everlasting mercy; and although in my own estimation less than the least child that is alive in the truth, yet to me, even unto me is this grace given, that I should declare unto others the unsearchable riches of Christ. I have no sinister motive in thus coming among you; the comprehensive principle of the Gospel, which would gather and embrace all mankind, enables me to call every country my country, and every man my brother. It is this that has induced me to leave a delightful home, and a numerous and endeared family, and everything beside which a mortal need possess, and more, to visit these 'isles afar off;' well knowing, that he that loseth his life for Christ's sake and his Gospel, 'the same shall find it.' I have no new doctrine to preach; the way to the kingdom is the same that it ever was; the foundation is the same, 'Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone;' 'for other foundation can no man lay than is laid.' But although the foundation be from everlasting to everlasting, yet if the superstructure is not raised upon it, what will it avail? It is, then, of the greatest



importance for each of us seriously to examine upon what we are really building our hope of salvation; for a day of trial will come upon every man's work: the day will declare it, and the fire of the Lord will try of what sort it is, when nothing will stand and endure the trial, but what is built upon the same sure, immutable foundation, which the righteous in all ages and generations of the world have built upon; even Christ Jesus the righteous, that tried corner-stone, elect of God, and precious indeed to them that believe and obey his Gospel; and blessed and happy are they, &c. I had largely to declare of the universality of Divine grace; that none are left short of a measure of it: it hath appeared unto all men, and its teaching, if regarded, would bring salvation to all men. That 'a manifestation of the Spirit,' which is no other than 'the Spirit of grace,' is 'given to every man to profit withal.' This precious gift was not limited to a few individual members of the church only, but extended to all men universally: first when our Holy Redeemer had suffered without the gates of Jerusalem on Calvary's mount, 'He ascended up on high, led captivity captive, and received gifts for men;' not for an elect, chosen few only, to the exclusion of others, but 'for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them,' as by holy writ declared. So that every man hath 'a manifestation of the Spirit bestowed on him to profit withal,' however widely this Divine gift may be diversified in its operations, or its administrations may differ, it was obtained through the shedding of His blood, 'who died for us, and rose again,'—the just for the unjust, that he might bring us unto God.' All men have an opportunity of becoming members of the mystical body of Christ, the true church, if but willing to turn to the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, that shineth in every heart; 'the true light, that lighteth every man that cometh into the world.' Although many may think themselves dwelling securely, and spending their precious time, days without number, in dissipation, folly, and utter forgetfulness of God; rejoicing as in the days of thoughtless youth, yet they will be overtaken at last, when least expecting it, in the midst of their sinful course, and brought under judgment. 'Rejoice, O young man, in thy youth: and let thy heart cheer thee in the days of thy youth; and walk in the ways of thine heart, and in the sight of thine eyes; but know thou, for all these things God will bring thee into judgment.' Ask the votaries of dissipation and folly, after a dark season of sinful pleasures, or rather of wretchedness, if they have not felt horror, remorse, shame, and fear, the certain and constant attendants upon guilt, and which are nothing less than the strivings of the Holy Spirit, discovering unto them their deeds of death and darkness; and which, if attended to, would deliver them out of this miserable bondage of Satan, and lead them to the knowledge of the Holy Spirit of Him, who is the life and light of men. It is true that this light would make manifest all their evil deeds; it

would set their sins in order before their guilty minds, in tenderest mercy and redeeming love, that they might forsake them and repent, return unto God, and live. But, alas! how many turn away from these faithful reproofs of instruction, and join in fresh scenes of vice and wickedness, or with large draughts of strong and poisonous drink, endeavour to smother and drown the voice of this heavenly witness against sin. But this light will search them out at last, although but for their condemnation. But to those who turn inward to it, and are willing to bring their deeds to its shining, the exceeding sinfulness of sin will be discovered. That sorrow of heart will then be begotten, which never faileth to work true and unfeigned 'repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.' It was the desire of my heart that all might be encouraged to repent, return, and live, by embracing the means so mercifully and amply provided for the salvation of all mankind, in wondrous love and compassion. So great was the solemnity that continued to be spread over us, that I had to call the attention of the people to witness it for themselves, as beyond the reach and power of man to produce. The Lord alone was exalted; His own arm brought him the victory and the praise.

8th. "Since the fifth instant, our time has been filled up in preparing letters for England, and in making a large selection of Friends' tracts, with several standard works, illustrating their principles, together with other writings of Friends, and numerous other tracts for depositing in the reading rooms, fitted up by the 'Seaman's Friend' Society in America. Some of the tracts were for general distribution, the others to lend out for perusal; a copy of each of the standard works to remain stationary at the rooms: the total number of the above 1099. There is a large field open for the circulation of publications amongst the shipping which touch here for supplies, &c.; there are at present twelve sail in the harbour. This morning furnished some Spaniards on board the 'Raselas,' (which sailed for China in the afternoon,) with two Testaments, two J. J. Gurney's Essay, two ditto Letters, two Wilberforce's Works in the Spanish language. Two English Testaments were given to two half-white girls, who had learnt to read in English.

10th. "Yesterday, the weather wet and unsettled, remained on board through the day, getting letters ready to go by way of Boston to England, an American ship being soon to sail for that port. I have several times throughout the week had to look towards the approaching *first-day*, as if I might have again to go to the natives' place of worship, and, probably, hold another public meeting with the foreigners in the evening at the Mariners' Chapel, but could not arrive at sufficient clearness, to warrant the necessary steps being taken to bring these things about, and yet did not feel easy to let such opportunities pass away without embracing them, as time is short, and once past can never be recalled. This after-

noon, it seemed best for me to go on shore to Hiram Bingham, and say, that if I should come to the native meeting in the morning, I would endeavour to be at his house in time: this matter, though in degree arranged, was still left open. It was afterwards agreed with the minister of the Mariners' Chapel, that if I should have to hold another meeting with the foreigners to-morrow evening, care would be taken to inform him in time, that public notice of it might be given, at the breaking up of the morning meeting at his place. Satisfied with the steps thus far taken, I returned on board before dark, leaving the following morning to decide the work of the day; taking care to have a written notice ready, (of the intended public meeting to be held after the manner of the Society of Friends,) if the way should be clear to make use of it, but I was not satisfied that it should be forwarded, until after the native meeting was over, if I should have to be there.

11th. (*First-day.*) "Awaking at an early hour with the prospect of the native meeting full before me, I made no hesitation about setting off to attend it. My Charles, who for some days past had had considerable irritation about his throat and lungs, was too unwell to accompany me, and it was rather a relief than otherwise that he was prevailed upon to remain quietly on board. On reaching Hiram Bingham's, I found him also unwell with a similar attack of cold, and unable to act the part of an interpreter for me, but he said, he had provided Doctor Judd, the physician to the mission, who had studied the language, and at one time was intended for an ordained preacher in the establishment. On this head I was satisfied, if I should find occasion for an interpreter. A missionary from Hawaii, now here, was to supply the place of Hiram Bingham. When going into the meeting, I felt a poor creature indeed, now entirely companionless, and in the midst of strangers. I was bowed down before the Lord, who comforted and strengthened my heart, and I felt resigned and willing, and in degree prepared, when the first proper interval offered, to stand up.

"I had not spoken to the stranger about to officiate for Hiram Bingham, previously to the meeting, but just at the time when he was about to commence his sermon, I got up, and with some difficulty waded through a dense body of the natives, who were seated or squatted so thickly on the floor in front of me, that I could scarcely avoid treading upon some of them. I took a station in front of the pulpit upon the ground floor, and Doctor Judd observing this movement came and stood beside me. We remained in silence, with the eyes of more than two thousand five hundred people fixed upon us, until my mouth was opened to declare the cause of my again standing before them, which was, that I might be found in the counsel of the Divine will, in order that the fulness of the blessing of the Gospel might be theirs; that 'Christ might dwell in their hearts by faith; that they being rooted and grounded in love, might be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and



length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that they might be filled with all the fulness of God.' That it was not to the high and the mighty that the Gospel message was sent formerly, neither is it now, but to the 'poor in spirit' the Gospel was, and is still preached, and blessed are they. 'Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven:' it is these that shall be satisfied with favour: they shall be filled with good things, but the rich and the full are sent empty away. For upwards of an hour I had to declare the glad tidings of the glorious Gospel among them: the people were very solid and attentive, and they were encouraged 'to press towards the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.' The Lord's love flowed richly in my heart towards these people. The meeting was unusually large, owing, perhaps, to the governors of three distant islands being there, viz. Owhyee, or Hawaii, Maui, and Atooi, or Tauai. A number of strangers came about me when the meeting separated, and Kuakini, the governor of Hawaii, (well known by the name of John Adams,) who speaks tolerable English, wanted to know when I should come to his island. I could only say that I was not my own master, but it was not improbable but I should visit Owhyee before leaving the group, &c. I got off from them as soon as I could with propriety, as the way seemed now fully open before me to appoint a public meeting for the whites and half-castes, to be held at the Mariners' Chapel in the evening.

"Repaired to the shore before dark, in time to be in readiness for the meeting, but the approach of a storm, (the thunder and lightning having commenced,) it is probable prevented some from being there, as it was not so large as the one held the preceding week, but not the less comfortable on that account. After sitting long in silence, I had to express a desire which had quickened upon my mind shortly after taking my seat, that it might not be said of us as of a people formerly, 'This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me;' and of expressing the necessity of drawing nigh and waiting upon the Lord, and of persevering to wrestle for that spiritual blessing, which makes truly rich, and whereunto no sorrow is added: we again dropped into silence, during which, only one person went out. In a short time afterwards, I stood up with those expressions of the apostle, 'We through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith,' by which we are justified, and have peace with God the Father, through the Son, our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; even that peace, which the world with all its delusions cannot give, and blessed be the name of the Lord, of Israel's God, neither can it take one particle of it away: setting forth the exceeding blessedness of those, who have not seen, and yet have believed in the only begotten Son of God, whom, having not seen they love, in whom, though now they see him not, yet believing, they rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory. I

had largely to speak of the beauty of true spiritual worship, and also of the life and immortality which are brought to light by the Gospel; and of the possibility of the day of visitation passing over unheeded, and the things which belong to the soul's eternal peace being for ever hidden from our eyes, for want of walking in the light of the Lord Jesus. It was a solemn, comfortable meeting, yielding peace. When it broke up the rain fell in torrents, and the streets, in some places, were literally running in sheets of water: but for the friendly assistance of a stranger, who procured a lantern, we could not easily have found our way to the sea-side, so dark was the night. The rain fell in such quantities, that the water was about our feet in the boat, although she had been once emptied out after leaving the vessel. The captain only was with me, and I was thankful that my Charles did not venture on shore that night. 'The Lord is our help and our shield.'

12th. "In the morning, a native teacher called on board, named Tootee, after Captain Cook, (intended for Cookee.) This man was born at Huahine, and with another teacher since deceased, was sent to these islands several years ago: there was something agreeable about him, and we find that he is well spoken of by those who know him.

13th. "This forenoon, Kuakini, the governor of the island of Hawaii, came on board; he was proceeding homeward in his own schooner, but having to convey the princess Harrietta Náhiánaéna, the king's sister, to the island of Maui, was detained until her arrival on board his vessel, which was standing off and on while he paid us a visit during the interval, to invite us to the shores of Hawaii. We had a good opportunity to show him what must inevitably be the dreadful result, if measures are not speedily taken to check the desolating scourge of rum, with which the American ships are deluging these much-to-be-pitied islanders. He is an intelligent person, and speaks very fair English, considering it has been acquired in no other school than frequent intercourse with foreigners, which compose the crews of the British and American whaling vessels. He said that the use of rum was prohibited at Hawaii among the natives, and that it was only in the hands of foreigners. We told him that the foreigners would be the certain ruin of these islands, if the government did not lay such a tax upon all spirit dealers, as would place this curse of the human race beyond the reach of the natives to purchase, and render it not worth any person's while to continue the sale of it. They have tried, he said, to abolish it here, (Oahu,) but could not do it; adding, 'the king is fond of it;' intimating, that the princess not being ready this morning was owing to the king's being intoxicated last night. He said, 'the merchants here (who are all Americans) take good care to supply the king with money, and every other thing that he wants: by this plan they have him so completely in their hands, as to succeed in persuading him that it is to

the interest of the islands to allow the free use of spirits.' Kuakini is about the largest man we have met with, but seems to possess very little bodily strength in proportion to his ponderous bulk, and has very little use of his limbs. He is forty-five years of age. He could not climb up our little vessel's side without the assistance of two men, and a descent into our cabin was quite a serious fatigue: the passage down was certainly not sufficiently wide to allow his making use of his unwieldy legs and arms. He told us his sight was failing, asking for a pair of spectacles, which were immediately handed to him: although very rough coarse articles and rusty from the dampness of the vessel, yet he seemed glad to have them. He would have stopped while some fish was prepared, but the arrival of his passenger summoned him away as quickly as he was capable of moving.

"Yesterday, arrived the 'Thetis' schooner, from Ascension Island. This vessel has had a mutiny on board: her captain, and several of the crew, were murdered by one man in the night, a Bengalee, who himself sprung overboard at last, and was shot by one of the surviving sailors. They suffered much from the natives, or rather from the runaway sailors, at Strong's Island, one of the Pescadores.

14th. "In the evening, met with an interesting young Spaniard and his sister, the wife of an English merchant of California. This young man had been in the United States, and spoke good English, but his sister knew only the Spanish language. In the course of conversation, I mentioned having some books on board in Spanish, and proposed to furnish some of them, at which they seemed grateful, and gladly accepted the offer.

17th. "Yesterday visited the school for half-white girls, it being the anniversary of its establishment three years ago. To teach this class of children is a laudable undertaking, and highly needful on their behalf. These children are of a description calculated to do either much good or much harm upon these islands, from their knowledge of the native language, derived from the mother's side: this, in conjunction with a moral education, would tend to assist in the civilization of the people at large; at the same time there is much reason to fear their assuming a superiority over the natives, from their nearness of kin to Europeans or Americans from whom they have sprung. Although little to be proud of on this account, yet it mostly happens that they abound in pride and haughtiness; and the fathers of such being for the most part runaway sailors, rum-sellers, or other profligate characters, their offspring, from earliest age are accustomed to scenes of vice and wickedness, not likely to be shaken off as they grow up, but rather to operate as highly injurious to the natives around them, by their unrestrained, immoral, and base conduct and example. But not the least difficulty to be surmounted, is that of finding suitable employment to keep them out of mischief, having been trained in habits of sloth



and idleness, and ignorance of every domestic and useful occupation whatever. We have had a visit from the surgeon of the British whaler 'Corsair,' lately arrived from Ascension Isle, in the 'Thetis' schooner. The 'Corsair' was lost upon the Nautilus Reef, near Drummond's Island, one of the Kingsmill group. This young man, with five seamen, were saved in a whale-boat: after enduring great hardship for want of food, they were favoured at last to reach the isle of Ascension, in the North Pacific. The 'Corsair' was fitting out in the West India dock, at the time the 'Henry Freeling' was equipping in the City Canal, in 1833.

18th. (*First-day*.) "Having no engagement on shore, the day was spent on board with our own people. In the afternoon, two seamen from the 'Gannymede,' of London, on her way to the Hudson's Bay Company's settlement on the Columbia River, (north-west coast of America,) attended with our men. I had a few words to utter in testimony to the light of Christ Jesus, which shines in every heart; and the necessity of bringing our thoughts, words, and actions to it. Before leaving our vessel, these men were furnished with tracts of different kinds.

24th. "In the course of the week, a prospect of holding another public meeting with the foreigners and half-whites in the Mariners' Chapel, has at intervals crossed my mind; and yesterday afternoon, accidentally meeting with the missionary from the Columbia River, (at present here on a visit,) who occasionally officiates as pastor, he asked me, in plain terms, if I would occupy the Mariners' Chapel next *first-day*, either in the morning, afternoon, or evening. I told him that I had thought a little about it, but it seemed to pass away at the moment and nothing was fixed, although I was not quite clear of the subject. To-day it seemed best for me to see this young man again, and to tell him, if right for me to do so, I would send him a written notice to be read at the close of the morning meeting, which would serve as an invitation to all present to attend a meeting in the evening, held according to the practice of Friends.

26th. "On *seventh-day* evening, having prepared written notices of the intended meeting before mentioned, in readiness for distribution on *first-day* morning, and finding freedom to circulate them when the day opened, Captain Keen was commissioned to do the needful, in order to spread the information that a meeting for worship would be held in the evening, after the usual manner of our Society. In the course of the day our crew assembled for devotional purposes. The weight of the prospect spread upon my mind, was as a heavy burden through the day, raising in me strong cries to Him from whom only cometh help and strength, for ability to do His will, and to exalt his ever great and excellent name. We repaired in time to the shore, and were the first that took seats in the meeting. The people gathered slowly, but with quietness, and the number was probably as large as at any time previous. After

a considerable time of silence, beyond all expectation solid, I had to supplicate Him who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light, that every thing in us that stood opposed to his righteous principle of light, life, and love, might be shaken and removed out of the way; that that only which cannot be shaken may remain to the exaltation of His own great name, and the establishment of the kingdom of Christ Jesus, which shall never have an end. Afterwards the people sat as if accustomed to silence. The first expressions with which the silence was broken were, As no man can save his brother, or give to God a ransom for his soul; so no man for another can perform the solemn act of worshipping the Almighty Creator. If I was to speak to you, said I, or read to you for an hour, it would only be an act between a man and his fellow-creatures, and not worship; for worship can only be performed between a man and his Maker, who is a Spirit. 'God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in Spirit and in truth.' 'The Father seeketh such to worship Him,' we are told by the Son, who is 'the way, the truth, and the life;' and no man cometh to the Father but by the Son. 'Without me ye can do nothing,' He himself declared. 'Our fathers worshipped in this mountain;' said the woman of Samaria to our condescending Lord, 'and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in Spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship Him.' This is the will of the Father, that we should hear his beloved Son, Christ Jesus—'I am the light of the world,' said He, 'he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. In him was life, and the life was the light of men; and the light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehendeth it not.' The same eternal power who said, 'Let there be light, and there was light:' even God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give us the light of the knowledge of his own glory, in the face of Christ Jesus. It is to this light that all men must be turned, and to which all men must come if they are saved. This is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men are not willing to believe in it, because it makes manifest their dark and sinful state: they love darkness rather than light, because their deeds are evil. 'For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to it, lest his deeds should be reprov'd.' Such continue under the power of Satan; 'but he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God;' he is turned from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God:—he receiveth for-

givenness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith which is in Christ Jesus, the life and light of men.—The people were very attentive, and such a solemn stillness prevailed the greatest part of the time, that if they could not have been seen upon their seats, it would have been difficult to ascertain whether any persons were present. It was the Lord's doing, and as is His name, so is His praise for ever.

27th. "Yesterday had a satisfactory visit from the Canadian missionary stationed on the Columbian river, north-west coast of America. He was desirous of information respecting the principles of our religious Society, and of possessing a Book of Extracts; from having only one on board the 'Henry Freeling' of the new edition, a copy of the old edition was given him, and a copy of 'Bates' Doctrines,' &c. I look forward to furnishing him with some religious tracts, which may be useful to the North American Indians, amongst whom a mission is established, although the result is hopeless indeed, as these poor people are too often paid in rum by the trading vessels, both American and British, for their beaver skins, &c., which, with other causes, is fast sweeping from the face of the earth this injured race of mankind. Muskets and gunpowder are among the principal articles of barter goods taken to them.

"This afternoon I received a letter from the senior missionary here, of which the following extract is part, addressed to myself, and dated this day:—

"I am happy to inform you that to-day we commence a series of meetings with the people for their spiritual benefit. The hours of service for five days will be sun-rise, ten o'clock, A. M., two o'clock, P. M., four o'clock, P. M., in the natives' chapel, and a meeting at one of our houses at half-past seven o'clock, P. M. Probably, there will be some hundreds of the people more than usual present, possibly a thousand: perhaps our chapel will be filled: several of my brethren will be present from the other stations on this island. If you will favour us with your assistance to-morrow at ten, or at four o'clock, I will gladly interpret for you, Providence permitting. Shall be happy to see you and your son at any of our meetings—the field is white.'

"I called the same evening at the writer's house; and having considered the subject, acknowledged the receipt of his letter, and told him that I had felt nothing upon my mind towards the meetings to-morrow, which he had mentioned. All that seemed safe for me to say was, that I had a desire to be present when the largest body of the people were collected together. It appeared to me that the forenoon of the following *first-day* would be the right time for me to be there, which was at last fully agreed upon. Whilst at this house, five marriages were solemnized at seven o'clock, P. M., in the room where we sat. This ceremony to four couple was performed in the native language, and in English to



the fifth, the man being an American negro. 1546 marriages have taken place upon these islands within the last year. It is hoped that the institution of regular marriage will be of use to this people, but it is greatly to be feared, from what the missionary himself said, that their solemn vows and promises are soon forgotten.

30th. "On fifth-day our meeting was held as usual. Yesterday employed in selecting various books and lessons for the use of schools. For the last two or three days, the prospect before me of attending the native meeting has been more formidable than usual, from the apprehension, lest I should be found running, if not altogether unsent, without an evidence sufficiently strong, that it is my duty to be there. I have endeavoured to keep close to the exercise, though in much conflict of mind.

31st. (*First-day*.) "Had an almost sleepless night, but towards morning the way seemed to open with relieving clearness for me to attend the native meeting: landed in due time, and called upon the missionary, who accompanied us to the meeting. When on the way, Hiram Bingham asked whether I would prefer speaking to the people before the service began, or after it was over. This question was so unexpected, that I replied without proper consideration, that I had rather wait, I meant in silence before the Lord, but he supposed until their service was gone through, and of course matters went on in their usual way. I felt regret afterwards that I had not more fully entered into explanation at the moment. It was afterwards proposed by Hiram Bingham that I should go into the pulpit with himself and another missionary, saying, that the crowd would be so great that he should not be heard if he interpreted from the floor. This proposal was declined at first, but on getting into the place I was convinced that if I did not go then, it would scarcely be possible to do it afterwards should it be needful, as the floor was already almost a solid mass of people; so we proceeded accordingly without delay. I sat as one who had the sentence of death in himself, and felt so much sunk and depressed, that at one time I thought of telling Hiram Bingham that I did not expect to have any thing to say to the people, but was withheld from doing so. In addition to their usual services on these occasions, a child was baptized, and it seemed long before all was finished, and general silence prevailed. After a short interval I stood up, when Hiram Bingham exhorted the people to stillness. I remarked on taking up the time of the meeting, which had already sat long, but that I was induced to stand before them once more to communicate whatever might be given me on the occasion. The attention of the people seemed now fully arrested, and after a solemn pause it was with me to express the encouraging language of the Lord's prophet, 'Arise, shine; thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee. For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the

people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee and his glory shall be seen upon thee.' Thus was announced, by holy inspiration, the light of that glorious Gospel morning, then preparing to dawn upon the benighted regions of the earth; to dispel the mists of darkness from the mind of man, that sin should no longer have dominion over the human race, but that mercy and truth should meet together, and love, and joy, and peace through righteousness, should prevail from the river to the uttermost parts of the earth: that as sin hath reigned unto death, so now might grace reign, through righteousness, unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord. When anger, hatred, malice, and revenge, with all the malignant passions which corrode and agitate, and agonize the human breast, shall be subdued and brought under the benign influence of the power of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, and the knowledge of the only true God and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent, even eternal life, 'shall abound, and cover the earthly nature in every heart, as waters cover the sea.' There is no other way by which mankind can participate in the life and immortality that are brought to light by the Gospel, than that of believing in Christ Jesus, and turning to the light of his Holy Spirit, which shineth in every heart. I was sure that these beloved people (telling them so) were no strangers to the name of Christ. But that the bare name is not enough: I wanted them to become acquainted with His power, to save them from their sins: without this He would be no Saviour of theirs. I felt persuaded that some among them did believe in Christ, and if they believe in him, they at once believe in this light: their 'light is come,' for He is 'the light of the world,' and those who believe in Him and follow Him, no longer walk in darkness, but have the light of life; they not only have the promise of the life that now is, but of that which is to come.

"The number of people present was computed at four thousand and upwards, and being placed above them, the heat was almost insupportable; they stood in crowds outside of the six double doors, and about a window that was open at the back of the pulpit. The building is one hundred and ninety-six feet long, and sixty-eight feet wide, and was, to all appearance, as full as the people could pack together. The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting, and his truth to all generations of them that fear and love Him. We sat a few minutes with Hiram Bingham's family after the meeting concluded, and then returned on board to our own crew, who were assembled in the cabin in the afternoon.

13th of Second month. "Not able to take any exercise on shore since last second-day, until yesterday evening, on account of the extreme wetness of the weather, it being the rainy season in this region. In the course of our walk called upon one of the missionaries for the translation of an article relative to the arrival of the 'Henry Freeling' at Oahu, that had appeared in the Hawaiian Teacher, a semi-monthly periodical, printed at the mission press,

and edited by a regularly ordained minister. When coming away, without any previous hint on my part, he kindly proposed that I should have the Mariners' Chapel to-morrow, (*first-day*,) either in the forenoon or evening, or both. I parted from him with saying, I should turn the matter over and let him know, that timely notice might be given if the meeting was of my appointing, so that the people might be fully aware of its being held according to the established practice of Friends, but I thought it well to wait a further time before giving a decided answer, lest it should not come to pass, although the prospect had been again and again before me early and late, at intervals, since I first got sight of it.

"This morning, being seventh-day, it seemed best for me to move forward by having notices prepared, that information might be well spread in good time, both on the shore and on board of the shipping in the port of Honolulu. While these were preparing, I went on shore to the missionary, and told him that I believed it safest for me to hold a meeting to-morrow in the fore-noon; the way was now thoroughly cleared before the distribution of the notices, and I endeavoured to dwell under the weight of the responsibility of this important engagement, which seemed fastened upon me as a knot not easily untied. My mind is often turned to the Lord with secret cries for help: greatly do I desire that the noble cause of Truth may not be tarnished in my hands, but that His ever great and adorable name may be exalted, and the people turned to the power of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus—the creature laid low and kept in dependence on Him alone, that the work and the praise may be His, unto whom the kingdom, and the power, and the glory for ever belong. In the afternoon spent some time with the manager of the book-binding department of the American printing establishment: his wife superintends a school of the native children, and with her husband appears to move in much plainness and simplicity.

15th. "After a restless night, landed in good time yesterday morning in readiness for the appointed meeting, which was well attended by the residents and strangers from the shipping. After a time of silence, it was with me to revive among them the Divine command, 'Be still, and know that I am God,' and that this command must be obeyed before we can come to the blessed knowledge of the only true God, and his Son Jesus Christ, whom to know is life eternal: desiring that we might humble ourselves before Him, and in the silence of all flesh 'be still:' peradventure He would graciously condescend to overshadow us with his heavenly presence. After recommending that we should endeavour to settle down in stillness of mind before the God of the spirits of all flesh, I again resumed my seat. A comforting solemnity soon spread over us, under the precious covering of which we sat until the time was come for my standing up again, when it seemed increasingly to prevail. I reminded them of the expressions of those



formerly who were struck with the display of the Divine power of the Saviour of the world when personally upon earth, 'What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?' and that the solemnity then so evident was not at our command, but came from Him, unto whom all power in heaven and earth is given. Man cannot cause it: hath he commanded the morning since his days, or caused the day-spring to know his place? Nay, verily, no more than the leopard can change his spots, and the Ethiopian his skin;—it is in the power of Him only who 'declareth unto man what is his thought,' to do this. We must all pass through the great work of regeneration before the kingdom can be entered; it is wrought in the heart through the faith of the operation of God, who raised from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, by whom, and with whom we must also rise from death unto life. But before we can rise with Him, we must be willing to suffer with Him, we must know what it is to be crucified with Him. How is He at this day pressed down as a cart laden with sheaves! How is he forgotten and neglected, under the weight of earthly cares and transitory pleasures, and amidst the 'lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life,' totally disregarded and set at naught. But these things, which war against the soul, must be removed before we can know and be admitted into the fellowship of His sufferings, and witness the power of his resurrection, before we can adopt for ourselves, from heart-felt living knowledge and experience, the apostolic language of 'I am crucified with Christ; nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.' There is no obtaining and wearing the crown, but by the way of the cross; we must be willing to suffer with our suffering Lord, and it is only such as suffer with him that shall reign with Him in glory. We must be willing to bring our deeds to the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, which shineth in every heart, and to bear the indignation of the Lord, because we have sinned against him: to sit alone and keep silence, ashamed and confounded, as in the dust, because of the reproach of our youth; and it is only while we have the light that we can thus bring our deeds to it, and walk in it. He that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth: and if by neglect and disobedience the light in us be darkness, how great is that darkness! we may sin out the day of our visitation; then the candle of the Lord is withdrawn, or put out; for He hath declared, 'My Spirit shall not always strive with man.' These visitations are the merciful tokens of the Father's love to draw man to the Holy Spirit of His beloved Son in the heart, 'the life and light of men;' unto whom, although shining in all, none of us can come in our own will and strength, or by any inherent righteousness of our own. 'No man cometh unto me,' said Christ, 'except my Father which hath sent me draw

him, and I will raise him up at the last day.' As no man cometh to the Son but by the Father, so no man cometh to the Father but by the Son; according to his word, 'No man cometh to the Father but by me.' By grace are we saved, and that not of ourselves, it is all through the boundless mercy and everlasting love of God in Jesus Christ, by whose grace we are saved: the same which hath appeared unto all men, which bringeth salvation unto all men that are willing to 'believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and be saved.' After this manner was I strengthened to declare that loving-kindness which is better than life, and to testify of that grace, which comes by Jesus Christ. The meeting held longer than usual, but ended well. I trust the Lord magnified his own power in the hearts of some, who is blessed and worthy, and God over all for ever. The missionary families were most of them present on the occasion.

16th. "Yesterday, while on shore, visited the school for native girls, under the superintendence of a missionary's wife; which is, for good order and general quietness, the best conducted establishment of the kind we have yet seen. For some time after the formation of this school, the children could not be prevailed upon to go forward with the regular duties, without an adopted child of the queen's led the way, and had the preference shown to her. When ordered to break up at noon, or in the afternoon, they would all retain their seats; and when the reason was asked for this behaviour, would say, 'Let the queen go first,' although a mere shrimp in size compared with many of the other children, and not more than six years old. The school-mistress has taken much pains to abolish such an unnecessary and invidious distinction, and has not hesitated to punish this child when in fault, like the other children, without showing any partiality, because of her patronage. For a time this gave great offence, but by firmness and steady perseverance the difficulty was at last completely surmounted. Most of the children have now got the better of yielding such undue servility, although it is said that some of the timid still consider that this child's word is law.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

Interview with the queen—public meeting—publications of the mission press—half-caste boys' school—address to the rulers of the Sandwich Islands—visit from the mission families—meeting at the chapel—an infidel ship's company—appointed meeting—departure from Honolulu—Hawaii—anchor in Kalakakua bay—native visitors—public meeting—interesting opportunity with the mission family—proceed to Kailua—relics of idolatry—native meetings—visit of the king—leave for Waimea mission station.

17th of Second month. "This evening repaired to Hiram Bingham's by appointment to meet Kinau, the reigning chiefess, or queen. Her husband Kekuanóa was there, and Kanaina, another

principal chief and his wife, a woman of higher rank than Kinau on her father's side. It proved an interesting season; they were desirous of being instructed in the best manner how to govern the islands, and benefit the people. I told them, there is but one way to effect this, and that is upon the principles of the Gospel; nothing else will stand. Kinau has long been desirous of prohibiting the importation and use of ardent spirits altogether, and requested some advice upon this head. It would require caution, I said; but that the first step would be to stop all further importation; and that they themselves had better become purchasers of the stock on hand, and empty the rum into the river, than that the people should be destroyed by its effects; the dealers would then have no cause to complain: that best wisdom should be sought for to direct, and that all these things should be conducted throughout in a Christian spirit. It is high time something was done to remove this evil from amongst the people. They expressed satisfaction with the interview, and suggested that we should meet again for the further consideration of this important subject, viz. the best manner of governing the islands and benefitting the people. Both these females are tall, portly women, of shrewd understanding, and have a gentleness in their demeanour not usually possessed by others of the same rank, though on first appearing they assume much reservedness and austerity.

18th. "Some time back my mind was attracted towards preparing something like an address to be left with those in authority, that bear rule over the inhabitants of these islands, which might serve to remind them at a future day that I had not omitted to warn them of those evils, which, if suffered to continue, will undermine every effort to improve their condition, both civil and religious. The conversation which took place last evening seems to have opened the way for something further, and confirmed me in believing myself required, as ability may be afforded, to draw up and leave some written document for the clearance of myself towards them.

20th. "Before retiring to rest, I began to feel a little towards the evening meeting at the Mariners' Chapel to-morrow, and the love of the Gospel flowed in my heart so encouragingly, that a willingness was at once begotten, to give up to a meeting being appointed on my account.

21st. (*First-day*.) "This morning I received a note written at seven o'clock A. M. from the American preacher, offering his place of worship for an evening meeting. On solidly considering the subject, I believe, with an honest desire to do the will of my gracious Master, I did not feel easy to let the opportunity pass away without availing myself of it; and therefore, in due time sent written information, in order to insure its being held as a Friends' meeting. In the course of the day our sailors were assembled twice for devotional purposes, and in the evening they



attended the public meeting appointed to be held at a quarter past seven o'clock, an hour best adapted to the climate and the people. The meeting was larger than looked for, (the weather being showery,) a number of strangers were present, who had arrived two days previous, in a ship from Boston, the most seriously inclined part of the residents, several branches of the missionary establishment, with an increased number of sailors, and many of the islanders. We sat long in silence, but under a feeling solemn beyond expression, which chained down opposing spirits.

"When the time came for me to stand up, I had to contrast the difference between the worship of Almighty God under the Jewish dispensation in the outward temple, with that of the Gospel in the inner temple of the heart, which is altogether spiritual, because 'God is a spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.' How can we so expressively manifest our fear and love in approaching the presence of infinite purity, as in solemn, awful silence, in humble watchfulness of mind, endeavouring to detect and suppress every creaturely desire? Words are inadequate, and not essential in the performance of worship to Him who is a Spirit, for his Holy Spirit searcheth all things; the most hidden and secret thought is known to this all-penetrating, all-searching power; no offering is acceptable to Him, but what he himself prepares, for 'the preparation of the heart in man, and the answer of the tongue, is of the Lord;' and the entire prostration of the will of the creature, under the preparing, sanctifying influence of his Almighty power, constitutes the pure, unadulterated offering, which, free from human contrivance and performance, rises a spiritual sacrifice, rendered acceptable to God, through the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ in the heart, the great and everlasting High-priest of our profession. The people were called upon to behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon his creature man, that we should become his sons: for who can comprehend the greatness of that love, wherewith 'God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.' Who can contemplate the fulness and extent of love like this, and not feel a grateful tribute to arise of 'thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift!' My soul longeth that all mankind may become acquainted with the preciousness of this costly gift. It is the same and no other than that of which the blessed Saviour testified in that memorable and instructive conference with the Samaritan woman, when He condescended to answer her question of, 'How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, who am a woman of Samaria?' for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. 'If thou knewest the gift of God,' our Lord replied, 'and who it is that saith unto thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldst have asked of Him, and he would have given thee living water.' 'The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well

is deep; from whence then hast thou this living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again; but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst, but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.' The poor woman perceiving the great advantage of possessing water, of which 'he that drinketh shall never thirst,' said, 'Sir, give me this water that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.' Her expectation thus raised, and her understanding opened more and more to discern, from what followed, that she had met with One, from whom nothing was hidden, and that knew all that was in her heart, and perceiving that He was a prophet, and by inquiry having elicited for the lasting benefit of all mankind, the declaration, that 'the hour was come, that the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth;' confounded and self-convicted, she concluded by saying, 'I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ; when he is come, he will tell us all things:' when the Lord of life and glory was pleased to reveal himself, telling her, 'I that speak unto thee am he.' From what she had heard and felt, she could not for a moment doubt, and leaving her water-pot, went her way into the city to proclaim his power, and declare him to her brethren, 'Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?' I was strengthened to make a solemn and confident appeal to all present, who had attained to years capable of serious thought and reflection, if they had not at seasons heard the voice of this 'unspeakable gift,' bringing to their remembrance 'all things that ever they did,' in order that they might repent, return unto God, and live for ever. This is the grace that brings salvation; in this we must all believe—to this we must all come, and hearken and obey its teachings. The above, although only a part, is the substance of what was declared amongst them: the people were very attentive, as has been uniformly the case at every meeting.

24th. "This afternoon the 'Columbia' barque and 'Beaver' steam-vessel prepared to proceed to the Columbia River. Before sailing, they were furnished with a supply of tracts, those printed for Friends, for the Religious Tract Society, and a number of temperance tracts, which were received with apparent kindness. The crews of these vessels are amongst the most profligate that have visited the port of Honolulu since our arrival; they are both in the employ of the London Hudson's Bay Company.

25th. "Held our week-day meeting as usual, which proved a low, stripped and barren season; but we must be content to suffer with a suffering Lord; and truly the state of the people in this place is affectingly dark: the prince of darkness reigns unmasked; the lives and conduct of the major part of the white residents de-

clare it openly, to whom these remarks principally refer. Specimens of all the books, pamphlets, &c., which have issued from the mission press were sent us a short time ago by a missionary, accompanied by the following note:—‘We send by your young man a copy of all the books that are printed, with the exception of the New Testament, which will be ready for delivery in a week or ten days. Please to accept them as a token of our esteem and approbation of the motives which have induced you to visit these ends of the earth.’

26th. “To-day visited the school of half-white boys. As our calling was altogether unexpected, there could have been no contrivance whatever to show off to the best advantage. Sixteen boys were present: we heard them read, spell, and answer a variety of questions, and saw specimens of their writing. This school has been established rather more than three years, and although no great progress has been made by any of the scholars, yet when the habits in which they have been trained are considered, and the baneful examples they are daily and almost hourly exposed to when at home, of drinking, swearing, gambling, and every evil that can well be conceived or imagined, it is only surprising that they are as they are. Several of the parents are grog-sellers, and keepers of gambling-houses. Some of the children are the offspring of the principal inhabitants, American or English, on the father’s side, who live with native women, but unmarried. In point of intellect these children are equal to any in the world, and some of them particularly quick and intelligent, but none more so than one true-born native boy, adopted by a white resident, from supposed motives of policy. On hearing them read some manuscript verses on ‘a little boy that never told a lie,’ and ‘a paper against committing sin,’ I perceived something gathering upon my mind, and told the master that I wished to say a few words before we separated, as we might never meet together again. I wished them fully to understand that the knowledge they were acquiring by the instruction afforded, would be no benefit in reality, but render their condemnation greater, unless obedience kept pace with it; reviving the Saviour’s words, ‘If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.’ That reading those verses on ‘a little boy that never told a lie,’ or those ‘against committing sin,’ even if they had them by heart, would be of no avail to them, if they gave way to telling lies, or to committing any other sin; for ‘Nothing that is unclean, nothing that is impure, that worketh an abomination, or maketh a lie,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven. That the only way to escape falling into temptation, is at all times, as much as may be, to consider ourselves in the presence of Almighty God, who sees and knows all our actions, and the most secret thoughts of the heart, by His Holy Spirit, which searcheth all things, even the deep things of God; every imagination of our thoughts is known to Him, nothing can be hid. That some of



them were old enough to know when they did wrong, either in telling untruths, or when in any other way they committed sin; that they then felt uncomfortable and unhappy in themselves: that these are the reproofs of the Holy Spirit for sin and disobedience, and if attended to would lead to life, and to these I wished them to take heed.—That the Lord loveth an early sacrifice; He delighteth to regard it. That they must have heard what the voice of wisdom saith in the Holy Scriptures; ‘I love them that love me, and they that seek me early shall find me.’ That they could not begin too soon to seek an acquaintance with the Lord’s Holy Spirit in their hearts, that so they might become wise. That the great end and object of all teaching and all learning, should be to make wise unto salvation. The boys were very attentive, and behaved in a solid manner. We remained until the school was dismissed, and then returned on board. In the evening we were again on shore, and were detained there until after nine o’clock, by a violent storm of thunder, lightning, and rain.

29th. “Yesterday (*first-day*) collected the crew twice in the cabin for devotional purposes: our intervals of silence were solid and consoling. This afternoon came in, the ‘Gryphon,’ Captain Little, from St. Blass, bringing intelligence from America, via Panama, in sixty-eight days, of the destruction by fire of a large portion of the city of New York.

1st of Third month. “Having completed an address to those who bear rule over the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands, in order to procure a translation of the same into their language, it seemed best to consult the senior missionary on the subject. After having perused it, he very kindly undertook to translate it, in readiness to lay before the king and chiefs when convened for the occasion, in the course of a day or two.

11th. “This morning Hiram Bingham came on board to say we were expected this evening at his house, as Kinau, the governing chiefess, with her associates, and the king himself, would be there; and that my address would probably be read. May the Lord incline their hearts to render unto him his due.

12th. “Soon after sunset last evening, we repaired to Hiram Bingham’s, where the whole of the company expected assembled, with some others. After tea the address was introduced, and read in the native language. The greatest attention was manifested by the principals present, and a solemn feeling prevailed over us. Shortly after the reading was finished, one of the females proposed that it should be printed, which was confirmed by Kinau, and appeared to be the mind of all the parties concerned. Unless this were done, it is scarcely probable that the end intended and hoped for, would be answered, as to the future rulers of these islands. Kinau remarked, that it was very easy to be understood. Having done what I believed to be my part, I can peacefully leave the result to Him, who alone can make it subservient to any purpose

for his own praise and glory, and the well-being of the workmanship of his hands. The following is a copy of the address:—

*“Address to the Rulers of the Sandwich Islands.”*

“As the present and eternal well-being of the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands is often the fervent and ardent desire of my heart, my attention has of late been arrested by the consideration and belief, that it will be best for me to leave behind a written memorial, which under the blessing of the Almighty parent of the whole human family, ‘the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,’ may have a tendency to remind the governing chief and her associates in authority, or those into whose hands the control and government of these islands may be entrusted at a future day, of their great responsibility and indispensable duty to God, to themselves, and to the people over whom they preside.

“In order to draw down the blessing Divine both upon prince and people, or upon rulers and people, let it never be forgotten or lost sight of, that ‘he that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God.’ The fear of God is the foundation-stone upon which every Christian government ought to be erected: upon this only it can stand secure and prosper. This fear at once makes it safe and permanent, because it ‘is clean, enduring for ever;’ for where the true fear of God prevails over every other consideration, the heart is kept clean and watchful against every temptation to let self-interest or partiality bear sway, either in the case of ourselves or others, when decrees or laws are made or enacted, or when judgment is called for between man and man. Impartiality is the life of justice, as justice is of government.

“When every thing is conducted in this fear in the sight of God, divested of partiality and every sinister motive whatever, without feeling any painful sense or evidence of condemnation after a decision of importance is come to, (and every case is important because it demands strict justice,) then have we confidence towards Him, inasmuch as our duty is performed towards Him, and justice has assuredly prevailed; and having done our duty towards God in this decision, it is done also to ourselves and to the people. ‘But if our heart condemn us, God, who knoweth all things, is greater than our hearts;’ and we may rest assured that such a decision is not in righteous judgment: it hath not been come to in his fear, nor in that love which is first of all due to Him, and then to our neighbour or brother, as unto ourselves. This love would not fail to prompt us to do unto others, as we would that others should do unto us; and for want of this, an unjust decision has been made, for which we are condemned by the Lord’s holy and pure witness in our hearts; it has been made contrary to the commandment in the old law, and also to the benign principle and precept of the glorious Gospel, both which are distinguished by the heaven-born characteristic of love to God, and love to man. ‘God

is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.' Such are the excellent of the earth, and compose the blessed in heaven: they are come 'to the spirits of just men made perfect,' and are fit to rule over men: their judgment is just and righteous; they rule 'in the fear of God.'

"The religion of Jesus at once qualifies a man for every station of life in which it pleases Almighty God to place him, but it is the ever-blessed truth in possession, in the inward parts, which alone can safely guide out of all error into all truth, and make us to know wisdom. A mere profession only will avail us nothing, we being destitute of the true fear and love of God, demonstrated by good works; and faith is the root of all, for without this we cannot please God; nor can we fear and love that in which we do not believe. The Saviour of the world was holy, harmless, humble, meek, and lowly, just, merciful, and full of love; yea, love itself personified, when among us, to teach what we should do when He was gone. But He is amongst us still, and in us too, an ever-living and perpetual preacher of the same grace, by His Holy Spirit in our consciences; and by this alone kings and others, whose province it is to rule over men, are qualified to promote amongst the people whatsoever things are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, and of good report, and where these are the fruit and works produced, such a government and such a people must be lovely indeed to every beholder.

"But now let us examine whether our justice is complete in the fear and love of God, and to our fellow-men, lest we should be deceiving ourselves and endangering the well-being of our own immortal souls, while those we are ruling over shall be finally admitted, with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, into the kingdom of God, and ourselves thrust out: 'For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, is guilty of all:' in like manner, 'he that is unjust in a little,' is at once upon a level with him who is unjust in much. And although we may be faithful and strictly just in the administration of the laws themselves, without partiality or respect of persons; yet, if these laws are such as to sanction covetousness on the part of rulers, and allow them to grind the faces of the poor by unwarrantable oppression and extortion, to uphold and support themselves in vice, luxury, and extravagance, then this calculation may be safely made, that sooner or later the oppressed people will take the reins of such a government into their own hands, and rule in their turn after the same example of injustice and oppression, which has been set before their eyes, and under which they have so long groaned and suffered, unheeded and unregarded, unless the merciful and righteous Lord should please, in wonted compassion, to gather them to Himself from the face of the earth, and permit strangers and foreigners to possess these fruitful islands, who for want of firmness and justice on the part of the rulers, towards God, to themselves, and the greatly injured



aborigines of the soil, are rapidly establishing themselves upon it, and prosecuting commerce, some branches of which are obviously pernicious. Therefore, they who rule over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God: and where they are happily thus ruling, they will be truly great, and their reign glorious; every act of injustice will be avoided: love, joy, peace, and comfort will prevail in the land; the population, instead of diminishing, will increase and multiply abundantly, and the blessing of the Lord will rest upon it.

“Happy those rulers (said a wise man) who are great by justice, and that people which is free by obedience: and they who are just to the people in great things, and humour them oftentimes in small ones, are sure to have and keep them from all the world. The members of an obedient well-regulated family, treated with every act of affectionate kindness, never meet with any home so sweet as their own; besides, long experience and holy example tell us, that goodness raises a nobler passion in the soul, and begets and gives a more exalted sense of duty, than cruelty, oppression, and severity. Sore and heavy judgments are denounced by the Most High in the Scriptures of truth, against oppression, and oppressors of the poor and him that hath no helper. ‘He that oppresses the poor is a reproach to his Maker; but he that honoureth Him hath mercy on the poor;’ and the justice and mercy of rulers should shine conspicuously in all their actions. ‘The wicked and unjust man and his oppressor, have their portion and inheritance appointed of the Lord,’ and it is declared, they shall receive it of the Almighty: if his children be multiplied, it is for the sword, and his offspring shall not be satisfied with bread; those that remain of him shall be buried in death, and his widows shall not weep: though he heap up silver as the dust, and prepare raiment as the clay; he may prepare it, but the just shall put it on, and the innocent shall divide the silver.’ The Israelites were sorely oppressed in their day, but what was the result? the destruction of Pharaoh and all his followers. If the poor people of this island and the surrounding ones are grievously oppressed, either by burdensome claims or taxation, they that rule over them cannot be just, ruling in the fear of God; and however they may reconcile these things to their own consciences for a time, the Lord’s righteous judgments will assuredly overtake them: He will plead the cause of the poor and of the oppressed with a mighty hand and stretched out arm; and will rid them of their oppressors for his great name’s sake. Now, that justice and judgment in which the Lord delighteth, would at once loose the bands of wickedness, undo the heavy burdens, let the oppressed go free, and break every yoke of exaction and extortion. The people would then enjoy the comforts and blessings which the Lord in mercy hath bountifully showered down upon them; they would then feel an interest in the welfare of their neighbours, and in their country at large: but if afflicted by the pressure of heavy burdens, every feeling of sympathy and social interest is benumbed;

they have nothing to lose and nothing to gain, and it matters little to them who are their rulers; they can scarcely be worse off than they are. Without their privileges as men and brethren are consulted and respected, the profession of Christianity is but mockery; instruction only serves to show them that their rulers are not just, nor ruling in the fear of God: and the pretensions of such rulers to religion are vain, more calculated to produce disgust and abhorrence at its restraints, than piety, virtue, and holiness.

“ Although much has been said, and might still be said, yet it all centres in one point at last: ‘ He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God:’ and such as are desirous of ruling in His fear, can only be advised to take counsel of Him on every occasion, by invariably consulting the holy witness in their own hearts, which will neither flatter nor deceive. If we are truly desirous of obeying the royal law, of doing to others as we would ourselves be done unto, let us endeavour to place ourselves in the situation of others, and act for them as if acting for ourselves, in all cases and at all times, without partiality, or respect of persons, whether rich or poor, high or low, bond or free, old or young, stranger or friend, for the same justice is due to all. It would be as presumptuous and assuming, as it would be altogether in vain, for any individual to take upon himself to advise in a matter which involves so great a responsibility as that of ruling over men, beyond simply referring all parties to the righteous and only true and safe principle of justice in the fear of God. To fear God and keep his commandments is the whole duty of man in every station upon earth, from the loftiest prince to the humblest peasant; and the way to fear Him is, for all of us to bring every thought, word and deed, to the light of his Holy Spirit in the secret of the soul, and to watch and pray, and wait in this light, to know his holy will, which would clearly discover whether the action or transaction we are about to undertake or engage in, or decide upon, (whether we be rulers or people, for the question bears on all, and the light shines in all,) is done or committed in the fear of God, and in obedience to His commandments which are, that we should love Him above and before all, and our neighbour as ourselves. If we do not act upon these manifestations, in faithfulness and truth, our heart will condemn us, because what we do is not done in the fear of God, who is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. But if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward Him, and whatsoever we ask we receive of Him, because we are walking in his fear, and keeping his commandments, and doing those things which are pleasing in his divine sight. From the best observation I have been able to make, whilst hearing the sentiments of persons high in authority over these islands, in addition to an evidence upon my own mind abidingly sealed, I am thoroughly convinced by their own remarks upon things of the highest concernment, that they know what is right well enough: ‘ for that which may be known

of God is manifest in them, God hath showed it unto them,' to the praise and glory of his grace. All that is wanting on their part, is a constant dwelling near to this precious gift of God in their own hearts, watching unto prayer; 'praying always with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance.' Then their councils and deliberations will be blessed: they will be qualified to judge righteous judgment at all times and in all cases, against every false tongue, even to the giving 'the living child to its own mother;' and no weapon formed against them by Satan or his agents shall be suffered to prosper, for the Lord Most High will be their 'shield, and their exceeding great reward.'

"It is an evident sign of a corrupt and unchristian government, when any of its subjects are permitted to suffer persecution, either directly or indirectly, on the score of religious dissent from any particular established form, so long as the public peace is undisturbed, as the 'sword of the magistrate should be a terror only to evil-doers, but for the praise of them that do well:' 'By their fruits ye shall know them.' To persecute others because they do not see or think as ourselves, is the sure and hateful mark, which can never be mistaken, of the false church, over which the devil presides in full power. But the true church, whose holy head is the Lord Jesus Christ, never persecuted any, but 'suffereth long and is kind; beareth all things; believeth all things; hopeth all things; endureth all things; rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth,' its sure and immovable foundation; love and mercy being the chief corner stone, upon which no other principle shall ever be displayed than that of doing to others as we would that all men should do unto us.

"Let none consider me an enemy because I have spoken the truth. I pray that the foregoing hints may be accepted in a measure of the same love in which they are written by one who desires the eternal salvation of all mankind.

"DANIEL WHEELER.

"On board the 'Henry Freeling,' in the harbour of Honolulu, the  
1st of Third month, 1836. Sandwich Isle, Oahu."

13th. (*First-day*.) "Remained on board through the day with our own people. Strippedness and poverty of mind, my present portion, and perhaps food of all others the most needful for me.

18th. "It having been a subject of consideration whether there would not be a propriety in our showing kind attention to the American mission, by inviting some of each family on board the 'Henry Freeling,' as best suited their convenience, lest by an apparent non-intercourse of a social kind betwixt us, malicious reports might get circulated by the white residents, calculated to injure them in the estimation of the natives; and also in the hope of



setting aside some false impressions detrimental to their interest, of which there had been already no slight indication: concluding it best to adopt such a measure, we called yesterday evening upon the two oldest families, who readily accepted an invitation, and seemed glad of an opportunity of visiting us. When leaving the senior missionary's habitation, a newspaper was put into my hand, said to contain the great 'Missionary Question,' accompanied with a desire that our sentiments might be given on the subject. On examining the paragraph alluded to, when returned on board, I found this question had been propounded by the said missionary himself to the American board, in these words: 'We are often led to inquire (can you tell us?) why it is that so few who hear the Gospel in Christian countries, and in the fields of missionary labour, are savingly converted to Christ?' querying if the cause of this acknowledged and deplored evil arose from such and such circumstances as he enumerates at full length. Both, or parts of both families came on board the 19th inst. as invited. Boisterous weather, with frequent heavy rains.

22nd. "Yesterday and to-day some of the members of the missions, both male and female, came on board, but the roughness of the weather necessarily shortened their visit. In the evening attempted to take exercise on shore, and although we reached the landing-place, the rain fell so heavily, that we did not quit the boat, but returned to the vessel again. In the night heavy gusts of wind from the mountains; at one o'clock, A. M. the brig 'Bolivar' drove down upon us, but no injury was sustained. Two vessels from Boston are now at anchor outside the reef; this is the third day of their being in this exposed situation, and the wind is still so strongly opposed that they cannot enter the harbour.

26th. "But little communication with the shore since the 22nd inst., owing to the state of the weather. By a newspaper brought out by one of the vessels just arrived from America, we are furnished with the Epistle of the Yearly Meeting held in London in 1835, of which a present has been made to us in great kindness. It was a treat no less welcome for not having been anticipated, and to myself particularly consoling, being replete with explanation of the principles and views of our religious Society, as held by our worthy predecessors when they first came forth, and declaring them to remain unalterably the same at this day. I trust the pure mind will be stirred up in many of our members to a serious consideration, whether we are endeavouring to uphold them in their original purity and simplicity, as handed down to us, in the eyes of the world, and in faithfulness and gratitude to Him who called and separated those ancient worthies from the many lo here's, and lo there's of their day and generation, to be a people to His praise. We also obtained a copy of an article contained in the last 'St. Petersburg Journal of Agriculture,' in which our own name is mentioned in connexion with the improvement of the lands in the

neighbourhood of that capital, &c. The knowledge of my beloved family being still there, at least when the account was printed, which was much later than any tidings we had ourselves received, although nothing could possibly be gleaned of their present state and welfare, yet to hear of them, even in this way, yielded a satisfaction which those only know and can appreciate, who have been long and distantly separated from all most dear on earth to memory and life.

27th. (*First-day.*) "The weather still very boisterous. Assembled the crew in the cabin twice in the day. In the forenoon it was a dull, heavy season; the afternoon more lively. I have been much cast down of late by several discouraging circumstances. The continuance of heavy rain not only confines us more on board, but within the narrow limits of our little heated cabin below deck. In addition to this I do not see my way clear for leaving the island of Oahu, while most persons around are impatient to be gone, and cannot exactly enter into my feelings. The Lord alone knoweth, and to Him I commit my cause, and desire to bow in humble resignation to his Holy Will: if only now and then favoured with a glimpse of his heavenly, life-giving presence, (however short if certain) it will be enough.

24th of Fourth month. (*First-day.*) "In the morning wrote a note to John Deill, enclosing a written notice, which he was requested to read to the people at the breaking up of the forenoon meeting, informing that a public meeting for worship, after the manner of the Society of Friends, would be held in the Mariners' Chapel that evening, at the usual hour, to which the company of all persons who inclined to attend was requested. Our captain delivered this note to John Deill, and no difficulty appearing on his part, notice was then personally given in such directions as seemed most likely to insure full publicity.

"Read portions of Scripture to our seamen twice in the course of the day. At the time appointed, landed to attend the meeting. It gathered slowly, but in the end was well attended. After sitting a while in silence, it was with me to point out the desirableness of our endeavouring to get into a quiet state of mind, that we might be sensible of the influence of the Holy Spirit, to solemnize our minds together, if He should be graciously pleased to lift up the light of His heavenly countenance upon us, and bless us therewith: we then settled down into silence before Him. After a time, one or two persons went out, but stillness generally prevailed over the company. When the time came for me to stand up, I told them that I had no expectation of my voice being heard again among them, that my mouth had for several weeks been closed up, and that a heavy burden had rested upon my mind,—to what shall I compare it, but to 'the roll that was written within and without, with lamentation, and mourning, and woe,' for the inhabitants of that place, who are crucifying to themselves the Son of God

afresh, and by their example putting him to open shame, in the face of the benighted islanders among whom they dwell. It was probable that those who were the principal causes of this travail of soul, were not among that company, but I could do no less for the clearance of my own mind, than publicly advert to this lamentable and so generally prevailing state of things, lest I should be found short of doing my own duty, though the cause of suffering might not be removed; but the disciples of Christ must be willing to suffer with their suffering Lord, and to fill up that which is behind, that which remains of the afflictions of Christ in the flesh, for his body's sake, which is the church. Notwithstanding the extent to which sin and iniquity abound, such is the wondrous love of God to his creature man, that he willeth not the death of a sinner, but that all should repent, return unto Him, and live for ever: for this He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life; and blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed in the only begotten Son of God. I trusted that there were many such believers then before me, who profess to be his followers; but that a bare profession only of Christ would do little for any of us—nothing short of the possession of the unspeakable gift of His Holy Spirit will avail us. It is no matter under what denomination of religion we are walking before men, or to what outward and visible body of professing Christians we may belong, if we are not members of the mystical body of which Christ Jesus is the holy Head and everlasting High Priest, the church triumphant, whose names are written in heaven: and there is no other way of attaining to this, but by and through Christ Jesus; by receiving Him in the way of his coming. We must be willing to take his yoke upon us, and learn of him meekness and lowliness; we must be willing to submit to the restraining yoke of his Holy Spirit upon us, and to bring our deeds to its light, which will show us our sins, and our exceeding sinfulness, and cause us to feel our miserable condition. As this yoke is patiently abode under, the effect will be godly sorrow unto repentance, never to be repented of: for the prospect of the glories of eternity will be gradually opened to our view, and we shall be permitted to behold the blessedness of those who have found rest in Jesus. Our sins will be removed from us as far as the east is from the west, and blotted out for ever for His sake; and we shall be numbered among those who have returned, and come to Zion, with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads, because ransomed and redeemed from our sins by the blood of Jesus, the new and living way, and the only way of initiation into membership with those whose names are written in heaven. Unless we witness this, and know from heart-felt experience Christ Jesus for ourselves, to save us from our sins, He is no Saviour of ours: and if we die in our sins, where He is, we can never come. I stood long among them: and although in the fore-part of the



time it seemed heavy getting on, yet towards the latter end, the life spread over us in an eminent manner, and reigned over all. The people seemed as if riveted to their seats, instead of rising up and hasting away, when I sat down. After this I had to appeal to themselves as witnesses of the power which prevailed over us. They still remained stationary after I again sat down, until informed that the meeting was over. Such was the renewed goodness and mercy of Him to his poor unworthy creatures; but He is 'God over all, blessed for ever.' Amen.

"25th. "The way seemed now clear for me to direct that the vessel should be completely furnished with wood and water, and prepared for sea in other respects. In the evening, I went to Hiram Bingham, to say that I wished to see the people once again collected; at the same time querying, whether, if the meeting in the middle of the week was held in the evening, there would not be a fuller attendance, especially if the occasion was made known. He immediately proposed, that as their week-day meeting consisted principally of Church members only, they should come together as usual on the fourth day, and that he would then give notice of a meeting to be held on the fifth day evening at half-past seven o'clock. This proposal was accordingly adopted, and gratefully accepted on my part.

"On observing the —— of Boston preparing for sea, our mate was despatched with a parcel of tracts, &c., for the use of the ship's company; when he got upon her deck, the chief mate came forward and (seeing what he had in his hand) said, 'We do not receive any of those things: we are all infidels: we do not want any thing connected with the Bible; but if you will bring us any of the writings of Voltaire, Tom Paine or Rousseau, we shall thank you for them: give Captain ——'s compliments to Mr. Wheeler, and say we don't want any thing of the kind; and if you persist in leaving them, they shall be thrown overboard.' The mate returned on board quite disconcerted, having never before met with such a reception in the Pacific. There is great reason to fear that there are many of this description in these parts, but such an open avowal is rarely to be found. Upon inquiry, it appeared that no sailors are admitted on board this ship but such as deny the existence of an Almighty Being.

26th. "To-day employed in receiving stone-ballast, to supply the weight of iron, hardware, tin, and nails, disposed of from time to time. As soon as our wants were communicated to the government, without waiting for an arrangement being made by our captain for the stone, and its transport, eight canoes of large dimensions were loaded and despatched to our vessel. Writing-paper and nails were sent in return for this accommodation to the full extent of its value; it had been previously ascertained that writing-paper was very scarce with those in authority.

27th. "Until now, every thing like a present to any of the par-

ties with whom we have been connected, was studiously avoided on our part, as gifts often open a door to blindness and perversion; but the time of our departure being at hand, several articles likely to be useful were selected and presented to 'Kinau,' and her associate chiefs, as a token of esteem and gratitude for the uniform kindness shown us while in the port of Honolulu; which were courteously received. The sails were now brought to the yards and booms, and every thing secured for encountering the passages between island and island, which (the almost constant *trade-wind* forcing an immense body of water through them from the mighty Pacific, at times against a counter-current,) often exhibit an outrageous sea, in which a vessel frequently suffers more than through the whole passage from England to Oahu. The wind usually blows from the north-east quarter, so that a vast extent of ocean ranges continually towards these islands, except during a short period of the year, when the northerly blasts prevail. With the assistance of the British consul, a pilot well acquainted with all the principal bays, coves, and creeks of the islands was procured to accompany us. He could talk a little bad English, was a native of Oahu, and went by the name of 'Sugar-Cane.' Being an elderly man, and very asthmatical, one of his sons was brought to assist in caring for him, and to take his share of duty with our crew.

28th. "Felt much depressed at the weight of the prospect of meeting with the natives in the evening, as before appointed, but endeavoured to bear up in humble reliance on the everlasting Arm of strength in patient resignation.

"Sat down together in the forenoon as usual; in the afternoon a native schooner (the 'Vittoria') through mismanagement ran directly against our vessel. A serious injury was generally anticipated on all sides, but it was so ordered that the violence of the shock was broken by first one rope giving way and then another, as the pressure increased, at last her stem came in contact with one of our main shrouds, which made such a powerful resistance before breaking, as materially to check her progress, when about to strike our hull; so that the whole damage was comparatively trifling. Her commander came on board immediately, with tears in his eyes, in great fear lest any on board of us had been killed. This man and his people so fully expected that one or both of the vessels must be destroyed, that he despatched a man to the shore for boats to save the crews; this messenger immediately sprung overboard, and swam so quickly as to reach the shore before the two vessels began to show signs that they were not seriously injured. The spectators could scarcely believe that we had sustained so little harm. After taking tea at Hiram Bingham's we proceeded to the meeting appointed the preceding evening, and found a large concourse of people assembled in readiness. As this was an extra meeting appointed entirely on my account, and having expressed a desire that we might sit down in silence, the

people were informed that it would commence with silent waiting, and exhorted to stillness.

“Although it is probable there were more than three thousand persons present, and many of them strangers to the practices of Friends, yet such was the solemn feeling graciously vouchsafed on the occasion, that the greatest order and quietness prevailed. However long the interval of silence might seem to others, to myself it was remarkably short, before I was strengthened to set forth the necessity of silent waiting upon God for the sanctifying influence of his Holy Spirit to enable us to worship Him acceptably, ‘in spirit and in truth.’ I had also to bear testimony to the all-sufficiency of that grace which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men, ‘teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; looking for the blessed hope, and glorious appearance of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ, who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.’ I was enlarged and strengthened to testify the Gospel of the grace of my good and gracious God, which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men; a word of encouragement was strong in my heart to the dear people, and I had to remind them, that it was not the rich, nor the mighty, nor the noble to whom the call was limited; not many of these were called, nor many that were wise; but the poor, simple-hearted and unlearned, and fishermen like themselves; and that they were the people unto whom the call is still extended. After having sat down awhile, it was with me to endeavour to make them sensible of the power, that so eminently reigned over all; recommending them to keep close to it, and it would be with them for ever; because it is ‘the power of an endless life.’ None attempted to rise up when the meeting was over: I requested Hiram Bingham to dismiss them, but they still kept their seats, and the same precious solemnity prevailed. When we left our seats they began to draw round us to shake hands, and bid us ‘farewell.’ Most of the missionary families were present, and five of their preachers.

29th. “Believing myself clear of the island, every exertion was made to be in readiness to leave the harbour on the morrow, and although much impeded by persons coming on board, we persevered in making the attempt. Towards noon *Kinau*, the reigning chiefess, sent on board to ascertain what supplies we were most in need of, and her husband, the commander of the fort, seemed a little disappointed on finding that hogs and goats were already purchased. They provided us, however, with eggs, cabbages, water-melons, onions, turkeys, and fowls, sending them off in good time. In the afternoon, saw all our accounts settled; drank tea at the consul’s, (Captain Charlton,) called upon the whole of the mission, and took leave of them.



30th. "In the morning, completed our preparation, made the signal for a pilot, according to the rules of the port, and at eleven o'clock A. M. slipped off under easy sail, and when clear of the reef made sail to the eastward. The morning had been cloudy and squally, but the trade-wind was now steady, though strong and scant for our purpose. The motion of the vessel was soon sufficiently violent to make almost all on board sea-sick: for my own part, although not sick, I was otherwise unwell. Towards evening the wind forsook us, when we had Ranai Point, and the islands of Morakai, Maui, and Tauroa in sight. Calm most of the night, but we had the mortification to find that our vessel required much pumping to keep her clear of water, owing to her having been so long in a heated and dry atmosphere, although almost constantly covered with awnings.

1st of Fifth month. (*First-day.*) "Early in the morning a strong trade-wind set upon us, and soon raised a heavy sea. From the state of the crew and other circumstances, the usual practice of assembling together was necessarily abandoned; the vessel still continuing to require considerable pumping.

2nd. "Strong gales all the day, with a heavy breaking sea, which kept our decks in a constant wash, and rendered it impossible to secure and preserve the things in the cabin, from the innovations of the salt water. The evening brought us less wind, but the swell still continued. In the morning split the jib, and carried away one of the runner pendants, which support the mast: this being to windward, for a time endangered it. Towards nightfall, we had an indistinct view of the island of Owhyee, now called Hawaii.

3d. "Notwithstanding the scantiness of the trade-wind, we had the satisfaction to find, soon after day-light this morning, that there was a probability of our fetching into the neighbourhood of 'Kalakakua Bay.' As the day advanced the wind became more favourable, but as we crept under the land the breeze was light. About three o'clock P. M. we dropped an anchor in ten fathoms water, close in with the shore, and near the place where the affray occurred, in which the British commander, James Cook, was killed. This bay is exposed to the sweep of the Pacific, from south to west: but such is the marvellous provision for the safety of vessels which touch here, and for enabling the natives to procure a plentiful supply of fish, that a sea-breeze sets in almost as regularly as the day revolves; but before the swell of the sea has time to rise to any material height, the land-breeze comes off the mountains, and restores order again upon the ruffled surface: at some seasons of the year, it would, however, be very unsafe for a vessel to anchor here; a few hours is generally sufficient for those which do come, to obtain a supply of hogs, goats, &c. No canoe came near us for a considerable time after the anchor was down, and then they came off very sparingly; but when the first adventurers

had had time to return again to the shore, and report to their comrades, that they had been invited on board, and that we had articles for barter, our deck was presently crowded with almost all ages and sizes, of the male natives, bringing with them pine-apples, pigeons, bananas, ninitas, &c., with the different varieties of shells which this part of the coast furnishes. They remained with us until sun-down, and seemed well satisfied with their visit. It appeared that it would be best to visit the missionary station without delay, and to request that a meeting of the islanders might be convened purposely, without waiting for their usual meeting day, as a few yards of cotton print would be an ample reward for those who took an active part in this business, for the extra fatigue it would occasion. By this step a much larger attendance would be secured, besides the saving of time which was now particularly important, as the missionaries were shortly to leave all the stations upon this island, to attend their annual meeting at Oahu, which holds three weeks or more, and generally, from one or other circumstance, requires nearly two months to restore the parties to their respective stations again.

"At midnight the wind came in from sea-board, (an unusual circumstance,) but as the night was serene and tranquil round about, we remained stationary, although some swell had begun to set into the bay, but it did not materially increase.

4th. "Our deck was crowded in good time this morning by the natives, bringing with them abundance of their simple varieties for barter. In the forenoon we landed, and ascended a steep more than two miles in length, and by places almost inaccessible. The great heat of the sun, reflected from a nearly black surface of volcanic rock, smooth, and glassy, was almost insupportable. The native boys and girls were very desirous to help me up the hill: some pulled me forward by the arms, and others pushing behind, contributed to lessen the fatigue; although this had a ludicrous appearance, I could not well reject their kindness. On reaching the mission-house, we were welcomed in a friendly manner by Cochran Forbes and his wife, who occupy this secluded habitation. As the native meeting was to be held in regular course in the afternoon, it was concluded that notice should be given of a public meeting to be held to-morrow morning, for our accommodation, in the hope of collecting a large number of the people together, but a chief woman who sat by stated, that as the king and his large retinue were at Kailua, (the next station,) the people who were now at home, in their huts, would be engaged in procuring a supply of food, and in transporting it to these visitors both to-morrow and the next day also. On this account it seemed best to hold the meeting this afternoon, and to take measures to spread the report of our being come to attend it.

"A considerable number of the people were collected at the hour appointed, and in due time my certificates were read, and transla-

ted by the missionary ; and after calling their attention to the importance of the object for which we were assembled, ability was afforded me to declare the truth amongst them, fully and freely, for the space of an hour, directing them to the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus which shineth in every heart, which would not only show them their sins, but would, if taken heed to, save them from their sins, with an everlasting salvation. That as no sin is committed without the thought of the heart for its origin ; it is the heart that must be watched over, because every thing that defileth a man cometh from thence. First of all, before wickedness is committed, proceed 'evil thoughts,' and if these are cherished, then sin followeth, and darkness and death reign,—but if the watch is faithfully maintained, it will lead unto prayer, and that light which is 'the true light, that lighteth every man that cometh into the world,' will make manifest the tendency of every thought ; from what root in us it springs, whether good or evil ; and as we choose the good, and refuse and reject the evil, we shall be strengthened more and more to watch, and to pray, even always, 'with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance,' the light will shine brighter and brighter, we shall no longer walk in death and darkness, but shall have 'the light of life.' In this way the glad tidings of salvation were proclaimed amongst them, in Gospel love. Nothing could exceed the attention and solidity manifested by these Hawaiians, I humbly trust to the glory of Him who wrought and crowned the work by his solemnizing presence.

"On the left of the ascent to the missionary station, about half a mile from the rocky margin of the sea, stands a rough but substantial monument, erected to the memory of the late James Cook, with the following inscription. 'In memory of Captain James Cook, R. N., who discovered these islands in the year of our Lord 1778 ; this humble monument is erected by his fellow-countrymen in the year 1825.'

5th. "This morning the natives thronged the deck of our little vessel. We had agreed to visit the missionary station again this afternoon, but the violent exertion of yesterday, rendered my dear Charles unfit to risk another such fatigue in the heat of the day ; and I thought it best, in order to prevent suffering myself from the same cause, to submit to being conveyed upon the shoulders of the people, in the same manner as they are accustomed to transport their chiefs on particular occasions. Having landed by myself and procured some willing natives, upon promise of rewarding each of them with some blue cotton print, I proceeded on my journey. On reaching a very steep part of the road, and making signs that I wished to walk, they at length consented to set me down, but seemed quite uneasy until permitted to resume their toil. This I did principally on their account to make the work lighter, but I found it very difficult to persuade them to do it a second time at



the next steep, until a determination was manifested on my part to get down, when I was reluctantly permitted to alight: they then would not allow me to climb the hill, without some of them pushing behind to help me along. I succeeded in getting set down four times: at last my entreaties were altogether disregarded, and they persisted in hurrying along, until we reached the missionary door. My labour was richly rewarded by a truly interesting opportunity with these newly-acquired acquaintances, whose minds were open to receive all that I found in my heart to communicate to them. They expressed a desire to understand the principles of our Society, and inquired if we had any tracts or writings of the Society in our possession: they were satisfied on this head, with a promise of being well supplied before we left the Bay. The evening proved very wet, but several serious women came and took their stations on the floor in the usual way.

6th. "To-day the natives seemed to bring on board, to all appearance, all that they possessed, in their eagerness to obtain some of our useful articles. Their poverty and want of clothing are extreme. I purchased many things from them of no use whatever to myself or to the vessel, rather than send them away empty-handed. The missionary family came on board about noon, and were furnished with some of our books. A variety of things calculated to be useful for children's wearing apparel, &c., were presented at the same time, and gratefully received. May the Lord direct their hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for the Lord of life and glory. After they returned to the shore, the number of natives began to diminish. In the evening we got all secure, to be ready to avail ourselves of the land-breeze in the night, to enable us, if permitted, to stretch along the coast, towards the Bay of Kailua, the next missionary station. Various specimens of native manufactured cloth were procured to-day: the frames and implements used in making it were brought off, in the hope of their being accepted in barter.

"As the king (Kauikeaouli) has arrived in Kailua Bay, the body of the people will be necessarily attracted towards that neighbourhood from hence, and many of them engaged in keeping up a supply of food and transporting it thither, for his large establishment; on which account several hundreds will assemble at the place of worship next *first-day*, on the occasion of his being there; so that my mind is bending towards that spot, in the anticipation of being strengthened to declare the mercy and goodness of my Lord amongst them, and it is my soul's desire that His heavenly presence may be there.

"At nine o'clock, P. M. got under weigh with a fresh land-breeze, and stood off from the coast to secure an offing sufficient to warrant our steering with safety shoreward in the dark, clear of all crags. Heavy rain fell just after leaving the bay of Kalakakua, but the rising of the moon soon after midnight dispelled every

cloud, and the weather continuing beautifully clear, favoured our design. About eight o'clock, A. M., on the morning of the 7th inst., we anchored near the king's brig, which, with three native schooners, was lying in the roads of Kailua.

"This anchorage is more exposed to the swells of the ocean than that of Kalakakua, having twelve points of the compass without a sheltering point of the island. In the forenoon the resident missionary, Artemas Bishop, came on board, to welcome us on our arrival; we returned with him to the shore, taking him into our boat, as he had come off in a native canoe: on reaching the mission-station we were kindly received by the family. Here we found a Dr. Gardner, in a declining state of health, who had been in the employ of the Hudson's Bay Company, on the Columbia river, but had retired in the hope of being benefited by the mildness of the air at Hawaii. In the afternoon we called at the residence of John Adams, alias Kuakini, the governor of the island, with whom I became acquainted at Oahu, but he had not returned from his favourite employment of fishing, at which he is considered very expert. On our way back we sat some time on the floor with a chief's widow, who was sick. On the fort established by Tameha-meha are yet remaining two enormous idols, which were formerly worshipped by these people. They have been evidently cut out of the solid part of two immensely large trees, and carved into forms hideous and disgusting, and truly gigantic: and they must have cost excessive labour. Several pieces of heavy cannon were lying about, with the marks of G. R. upon them, which could only be viewed with regret. While together, Artemas Bishop very kindly tendered his services in any way in which he could be the most useful, placing every thing, as regards the meeting to-morrow, at my disposal, and declaring his willingness to act as interpreter.

"On the passage from Honolulu, although our little vessel became more leaky than at any time since leaving New South Wales, (excepting during the heavy tempest encountered in near 40° south on the voyage from Sidney to Tahiti,) we were in hopes that the leaks would close up in a few days, but it was discouraging to find it still necessary to have recourse to our pumps. Whether the 'Henry Freeling' was more injured than appeared at the time when the schooner ran into her before leaving Honolulu, or whether the leaking had been occasioned by a seam just above the margin of the copper, which may have opened from long exposure to the sun in still water, is uncertain; we cannot, however, take any measure to ascertain this, until again sheltered from the never-ceasing swells of the Pacific; but our hope and trust are in the Lord alone. It was remarked this morning, although riding in about thirteen fathoms water, that the rocky bottom might be plainly distinguished, intermingled with patches of what was to all appearance hard, solid, white sand, supposed to

have coral underneath: but it so fell out that our anchor had fallen upon one of these white places, and as it could be seen plainly that the bill had made scarcely any impression, nor perceptibly sunk, they were thought to be beds of white coral, free from sand.

8th. (*First-day.*) "Reached the shore in good time, and finding that the missionary had not got to the place where the people were assembling in crowds, we walked on to his abode; he with his family then accompanied us to the meeting, which was held in a large temporary building close to the sea-shore: this place was open on all sides, and widened for the purpose with rows of pillars on the longest sides, supporting the thatched roofs of this extra skirting. Large as it was and well packed, it could not accommodate the people, and dense bodies were ranged quite without the shelter of the roofs, but being open on all sides, those without could hear almost as well as those within. When all seemed gathered, the people were informed by Artemas Bishop, that if we should remain silent, they were to keep themselves quite still and quiet. As I have uniformly witnessed the beneficial effects of my certificates being read, I had previously handed them to the missionary, who read them audibly in English, as many of our nation were present, and afterwards translated them (I believe very ably) to the islanders, who were very attentive. A salutation in the love of the everlasting Gospel was in my heart to every individual then present, when I stood up, desiring that the dew of heaven might rest upon them, even unto life, and that for evermore. After declaring the fulness of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ Jesus, that awaited them if they turned to its light and obeyed it, I had to speak of the nature of that true, spiritual worship, which only is acceptable in the Divine sight. Vain is the attempt of any to draw nigh unto God in praise and prayer with the lips, if the heart is not prepared by the Holy Spirit; pointing out the necessity of our waiting for this preparation, in humble, reverential silence before Him who is a Spirit, and discerneth the thoughts and intents of every heart, before we can 'worship Him in spirit and in truth,' which He requires in this Gospel day, which long since dawned upon benighted man. It was the travail of my soul that they should all come unto Christ, who is 'the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world, and is given for God's salvation unto the ends of the earth.' We had a highly favoured season together, and the language of 'peace be unto you,' flowed in my heart richly towards these dear people. When the meeting was well gathered, the king and some of his followers came in, and staid the whole time, and behaved in an orderly manner. When the meeting broke up, those with whom we had been previously acquainted at Oahu flocked about us, and many others followed their example of shaking hands. Being informed that a Bible-class was about to assemble, in the same building, we resumed our seats again. It was conducted on the system of learn-



ing one verse per day, through the week, the whole to be repeated on the *first-day* of the week. The children and adults repeated the same words aloud at the same time. After this, questions were asked by the teacher, to which all the parties answered with one voice.

“Not feeling any warrant to request that the afternoon meeting should be held exclusively on my account, it took its usual course, although it did not seem safe for me to omit attending it. I sat near the missionary, and when the usual services were gone through, I told him that I wished to say a few words, and on standing up, he rose to be ready to interpret, which arrested the attention of the people. After a pause, the way opened for me to declare the necessity for ‘every one that nameth the name of Christ, to depart from iniquity,’ without which the highest profession of the Christian religion is in vain; and that nothing short of the regenerating power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus in the heart of man, can cleanse and purify, and prepare him for that kingdom which shall never have an end. It is in the heart that sin hath its origin and root, and where the disease is seated, there the remedy must be applied. Out of the heart of man, proceed ‘evil thoughts,’ and it is these that must be watched for and detected in the light of the Holy Spirit. I stood up in much weakness, but was greatly strengthened, and largely opened before sitting down, to testify the Gospel of the grace of my God, and to ascribe all to the Lord God and to the Lamb, who sitteth upon the throne, who loved us, and washed us from sin in his own precious blood, to whom dominion, and glory, and praise belong for ever.

9th. “This morning Kauikeaouli, the king, came on board, and fixed to come again in the afternoon to dinner, which he did to our great satisfaction, bringing with him a confidential person of respectability, who was born on the island: his father was a white man. This young man was brother to the wife of Dr. Rook at Oahu before mentioned. Every opportunity that could be desired was afforded to put the king in full possession of our opinion as to the real state of things upon the islands, and to apprise him of the artful designs of those persons who are constantly endeavouring to prejudice him against the missionaries, by raising evil reports against them on every trifling occasion, under pretence of being his best friends, while they are at the same time his worst enemies, and those of his people. They would rejoice to see the missionaries banished from the islands, the latter being the only persons capable of counteracting their desire to reduce the people to a state of slavery. By introducing an extensive growth of sugar-cane, and by permitting the chiefs to share in the profit with them, they would at once compel the natives to labour for them, or in other words to be slaves to their sordid avarice, while a set of mercenary foreigners would be enriched, altogether regardless of the shameful waste of life they occasion. The king listened

with great attention, and from the questions he asked, there is no doubt but that he thoroughly understood the substance of the whole matter. Although Kauikeaouli does not speak English with facility, yet he understands it tolerably well, and the young man who accompanied him, having had a good education, was able to give every explanation required.

"In the evening we drank tea at the mission-house, where again Kauikeaouli was one of the company. I sat next to him, but he was now like another person, and took no interest in any thing that went forward, seeming quite absorbed in thought. During the day, the natives were bartering their shells, fowls, and vegetables upon the deck, for our knives, handkerchiefs, needles, and fish-hooks. The weather was very hot, and the incessant tumbling about of our little vessel, from the swell of the ocean unceasingly rolling into this exposed bay, contributed to render it very exhausting and fatiguing to supply the demands and attend to the wants of the natives, upon whose well-oiled skins the heat seemed to make no impression. The number assembled at the meeting yesterday was more than 2000, but many of them had come from the neighbourhood of Kalakakua Bay.

"A large stone building, for a place of worship, is nearly ready for roofing at Kailua: and on my remarking the very great thickness of the walls, I was told, that unless this was the case it could not stand, on account of the violent shocks which earthquakes frequently occasion: at times the tables and chairs rattle on the floors of the missionary dwelling.

10th. "Our deck again crowded with the natives. The missionary with his wife and two children, accompanied by Kuakini, the governor of the island, paid us a visit in the forenoon, and staid dinner on board. In the evening went on shore, and seeing nothing to prevent our proceeding to the eastward, took leave of those we knew, and returned on board after dark. Preparation being made for sailing, and the land-breeze springing up, we left the bay of Kailua about midnight and stretched off under easy canvass, not having the advantage of moon-light through the gloom. In the morning of the 11th inst. the weather clear and hot, with light breezes, but not from a favourable quarter. Low in mind, but in the enjoyment of peaceful poverty, trusting in Him who only knoweth the extent of what is before me. My desire is, to be found in the way cast up for me, and that I may leave nothing undone, and no place unvisited where it is His will that the ever-blessed truth, by the power of the Holy Spirit, should be proclaimed, though it be in weakness and in fear, by such an one as myself, frail indeed, and my days fast numbering to a close: but the strength of Israel is sufficient for all things required at our hands, and if we are faithful, I am persuaded, that as our day is, so shall our strength be.

12th. "From the lightness of the wind, and the adverse set of



the current, at sun-set last evening we had nearly drifted to the bay of Kailua. The wind having freshened and become more favourable, we are this morning in sight of Towaihai Bay. In the forenoon we anchored as near the coast as seemed prudent, with a heavy swell setting into the bay. With the help of *Sugar-Cane*, our pilot, a native was procured and despatched to the missionary station at Waimea, with a letter to make arrangements with Dwight Baldwin and Lorenzo Lyons, the resident missionaries, for collecting the people together as early as might be, in order to expedite us on our way to Hilo, in Byron's Bay, situated at the southern extremity of the island of Hawaii, and that our vessel might be no longer exposed than was absolutely needful, to the risk of encountering, what are called by the islanders, Moomookoo. These are furious blasts which rush between the two lofty mountains, with irresistible force, turning the surface of the sea into a white foam, and blowing a vessel entirely away from the coast, and though perhaps not producing any serious results, yet it may require several days to get her back into the place from whence she was driven. As the distance over the mountains from the coast to Waimea is more than fourteen miles, our messenger cannot be looked for back again till to-morrow morning. On reaching Kalakakua Bay, several days ago, we were informed that the station of Waimea, near which we now are, is vacant, the missionaries having sailed away for their annual meeting; so that there seemed a probability we should have to pass by it: but at Kairua we learned that the vessel they were in had met with such boisterous weather, that she was compelled to put back again, and the indisposition of one of the parties prevented their making a second attempt at that time. On inquiring of a native this morning through the pilot, this report was found correct, and that the two families, had again returned to their station at Waimea, and were now there. This evening the master of the missionary packet came on board, and said he was to proceed towards Hilo to-morrow, to bring away the missionaries: that he was to call here on his return for the two families at Waimea, and then to call at Kailua for the family resident there, but that he could not execute the order he had received, as there were five families at these places, and he had only accommodation for three families. I told him, that if the missionaries at Waimea could stay to render me the needful assistance here, I should then proceed immediately to Hilo, and after I visited the people of that place, would then transport the two families from thence to the island of Maui, from which place they would have no difficulty in getting to Oahu, as vessels are frequently passing to and fro between those two islands. To-morrow it is probable this matter will be decided; standing resigned to whatever is the will of my heavenly Father, which ever way it is, it must be right, believing it will not be required of me to go to any part where there is no one capable of interpreting be-



tween myself and the natives. From what we have seen of the people here in the course of the day, they appear to be more haughty, and more exorbitant in their demands, than at either of the two bays we have anchored in before; owing perhaps to their having had more intercourse with foreigners, and more frequent communication with Oahu. Charles and myself sat down together in the forenoon as heretofore, and I believe shared together in a long, heavy, lifeless season; but I humbly trust that I have, in some degree, learned in all states to be content, and desire to bear cheerfully every dispensation of the Divine Will; a knowledge of which when moving along in the counsel thereof, is at once the strength of my life, and food administering consolation and comfort to the wayworn traveller."

---

### CHAPTER XIII.

Waimea—native meeting—sail for Koala—cascades—letter of introduction—volcano—Byron's Bay—a Tabú—native meetings—cascade of the rainbow—sail with the mission families for Maui—marriage on board—parting interview between the natives and missionaries—Island of Maui—anchor at Lahaina—proceed to Wairūkū—school—native meeting—meetings at Lahaina—high school at Lahaina Luna—sail for Oahu—landing of the missionaries.

13th of Fifth month 1836. "The messenger despatched yesterday to Waimea returned at an early hour this morning, bringing a letter from Dwight Baldwin, (a missionary with whom we became acquainted when at the Georgian Islands last year,) which contained a welcome message, and stated that a horse was sent down for my son Charles, and a sufficient number of the natives to transport myself upon a sort of litter to the station; at the same time informing us, that a meeting might be held with the people in their district the same evening, if we left the coast in good time after receiving the letter. This being ascertained, we hastened to the shore, taking with us Sugar-Cane, the pilot, who from his knowledge of the neighbourhood could point out a landing place most free from the breaking surf. Having accomplished our purpose in safety, we soon found the natives who had been engaged as burden bearers, and there seemed every probability of our setting forward without delay; but when all seemed ready and I had taken my seat, some demur began to show itself on the part of the natives, and we began to discover, that nothing would satisfy them but the sight of the cloth, which they were to have as payment, and a knowledge of the quantity that each man was to receive for his labour. Supposing that these matters had been fully arranged for us by the missionaries as had been requested, we were quite unprepared to answer this demand, and as far as we could under-

stand, the parties were determined not to proceed without it was complied with. As the affair could not be adjusted I left my seat again, expecting to have to return on board. A number of the natives by this time gathered round us, and amongst them was an American sailor, and finding that he understood a little of the language, I requested him to inquire whether any other persons then about us would undertake the work. After much debate some consented, and being informed that whatever the missionaries decided upon as their wages, they should be fully paid, a sufficient number came forward and we soon began to move on in earnest. The sun by this time had become very hot, and the journey altogether extremely fatiguing from the road passing over mountain after mountain with continual ascent nearly the whole distance of fourteen miles. I was desirous to lessen the labour of the people as much as was in my power, and walked perhaps more than was prudent for a stranger in such a climate at noon day. It was late in the afternoon when we arrived at Waimea, and on reaching the mission-house were kindly received by Lorenzo Lyons, and Dwight Baldwin and their families. Feeling much exhausted with the heat and the harassing journey, I should have rejoiced if the meeting had been appointed for the next morning, but found on inquiry that the people would soon begin to collect, and that if postponed until to-morrow, but few persons would be able to attend, as they would necessarily be widely scattered in collecting food for the first-day of the week, so that they might have nothing to prevent their attending the places of worship. I was informed, that on *first-day* the meeting would be larger if the weather proved fine, but if wet, the people would not come. These things considered, it seemed best to take the opportunity which now presented, rather than by delay to run the risk of faring worse, if not losing my labour altogether. After some refreshment we repaired to the meeting, which proved quite as large as was expected.

“The senior missionary thought it unnecessary to do more than explain the nature of my certificates, and this in a brief manner, but perhaps sufficient for the understanding of the people. When he had finished, I stood up in great weakness, desiring that we might endeavour to draw nigh unto the Lord in humble reverence of soul. The people were very solid and attentive, and although I do not remember having felt less ability to minister or to have less matter in prospect, as I proceeded, strength sufficient was mercifully and timely afforded, to endeavour to turn them from darkness to the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus in their own hearts—that they might know Him to be a Saviour indeed, to save them from their sins; that so He might be theirs, and they might be His, through the never-ending ages of eternity: it is He who bringeth unto God the Father, and raiseth up at the last day. I stood long among them, and though to myself the life never seemed to rise and spread, as at some favoured seasons, and my own ex-

hausted state of body was sensibly felt; yet I afterwards found from the testimony of others, that the power of the blessed Truth had been felt amongst them: let the Lord be glorified and let them rejoice: but the feelings and the sentence of the unprofitable servant most certainly were mine.

“Spent an agreeable evening with the two families. From the vast quantity of rain which falls on this side the island of Hawaii, the dampness of every thing in and about the houses is extreme: the bed we laid on would have been very justifiably considered in England, not fit for those who have any regard for their health, but we had no alternative, and after using all the means we possessed to prevent being injured, we ventured to risk it, and were favoured to witness no ill effects in the morning, though our clothing was as if it had been hung in the midst of steam during the night. We were, however, glad to see the light of the returning morning to liberate us from the consequences which threatened.

14th. “Being desirous of returning to the coast as soon as circumstances would allow, we rose early in the morning, and after breakfast it was concluded by the missionaries (who had the option of directing the movements of the ‘Missionary Packet’) that instead of proceeding round the southern part of the island to Byron’s Bay, where Hilo is situated, she should sail immediately for Kai-rua and Kalakakua Bays, and return with the mission families from those stations back again to Kowaihai Bay, when, if the two families residing here were ready, they would accompany their brethren to the island of Oahu, to be in readiness for the approaching annual meeting of the whole mission about to take place.

“By this measure the missionary families at Hilo were left entirely at our disposal, which at once removed every doubt of being able to speak to the people. How bountifully are we dealt with by Him who ‘openeth his hand and satisfieth the desire of every living thing.’ At nine A. M. taking leave of Waimea we made the best of our way to the coast, expecting to put to sea the same evening, but the night proving rainy and rough, it seemed best for us to remain under the shelter at present afforded by the projecting land in the neighbourhood of Koala.

15th. (*First-day*.) “From the state of the weather, it is probable if we had remained at Waimea but few of the people would have attended the meeting to-day. Twice in the course of the day our seamen were assembled for devotional purposes, as we had no communication with the shore; although I thought if an interpreter had been present some of the straggling natives might have been collected together. At sun down got under weigh, and proceeded towards Koala with a light breeze, but on opening the mouth of the passage, between the islands, we found great plenty both of wind and sea. We stretched off the land until two o’clock in the morning, and then stood towards Hawaii again, under double-reefed canvass, anticipating that before we could possibly reach



any of its stupendous crags the day would have sufficiently dawned to expose them to our view.

16th. "Employed through the day endeavouring to beat through the passage formed by the islands of Hawaii and Maui, about twenty miles wide, with rough blowing weather, and the trade wind directly opposed to our course. Maintained a central position between the islands during the night, but gained very little ground.

17th. "Early in the morning stood in for Hawaii—the weather rainy through the day; at six o'clock, P. M., stood off again for the night. Torrents of rain appeared to be falling all the day upon the mountains of Hawaii: twenty-six different cascades were counted at one time rushing towards the ocean down the rocky cliffs: every part of the island which we have seen seems to consist of huge masses of volcanic substance, and the leeward side, in appearance, is truly dreary and barren.

18th. "After beating to and fro through the night the weather became more gentle, but the wind was so fickle that there seemed no probability of our rounding the point that forms one side of Byron's Bay, at the bottom of which, stands the village and missionary station of Hilo. In the course of the day, made several advantageous tacks close in with the shore, there being no appearance of broken water on the margin of the coast. The weather proved much more bright and favourable than we had anticipated, in consequence of having heard a well attested fact related to us at Oahu by a missionary who had formerly dwelt some years at Hilo, that while residing at that station there were only six days wholly without rain during the space of two years, as by record duly kept of the weather. Fifty-six cascades of water pouring off the land into the sea were in sight at noon to-day. At eight o'clock, P. M., moderate breezes from the eastward with a considerable swell of the sea from the northward. This evening, whilst under feeling of poverty and weakness, I was reminded, that this day the Yearly Meeting of Friends at large sat down in London. This brought afresh my dear brethren and sisters who are endeavouring to do the will of our heavenly Father, very near to me in the covenant of life and peace; and a belief that we ourselves shall not be forgotten by some who compose that large assembly, when drawing nigh in spirit to the footstool of mercy and love, is very precious and animating though removed from them almost as far as the east is from the west. But although thus outwardly severed from each other, we have a never-failing source of comfort and consolation in knowing, that the one great and heavenly Parent of the universe is equally near unto us all, that in Him we live, and move, and have our being, and that his tender mercy is over all his works; of which my only earthly treasure, and my all on the solitary plains of Shoosharry, form a part. May the blessing of the Most High be felt through the power of the Holy Spirit to rest richly upon us all; then shall we be in that glorious unity which inherits

life and that for evermore, from which nothing can separate, because it is in the love of God, in Christ Jesus our Lord.

"Having had of late a number of letters handed to us by way of introduction from one missionary to another, in order to procure the needful aid from station to station, I have thought it might afford satisfaction to others, to know how we stood in their estimation, after having sojourned nearly five months within their borders on the Sandwich Isles. As they are all of the same tenor, a copy of one may suffice for the whole."

"Copy, dated April 23d, 1836. Rev. David B. Lyman, Titus Coan.

"Dear Brethren,

"Allow me the pleasure of introducing to you our friends, Daniel Wheeler, a minister of the Gospel, of the Society of Friends, and his son Charles Wheeler, who, on an errand of benevolence to the dwellers on the isles of the Pacific, have visited this quarter, to co-operate in the work of our Master, in turning men from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God. I have had the pleasure of interpreting repeatedly the warm, earnest, and evangelical appeals of Daniel Wheeler to our people, and presume you will feel it a pleasure to assist him in a similar way, for the furtherance of his object, and otherwise facilitating their intercourse with the chiefs and the people, and cheering their toil in a long and expensive voyage.

"Affectionately your brother,

"HIRAM BINGHAM.

"Honolulu, Island Oahu."

19th. "The wind continuing still unfavourable, kept us plying to get to the eastward, as diligently as circumstances would permit. Towards midnight, the flashes from the great volcano illuminated the atmosphere, and at times had the appearance of a stationary light on that part of the coast. At three o'clock, A. M., it visibly spread and increased its light, but was eventually lost sight of in the beams of returning morning. Having made a successful in-shore slant during the night, at breakfast-time weathered the northernmost point and edged away for Byron's Bay, the wind now shifting more and more in our favour. At half-past two o'clock, P. M., dropped an anchor in seven fathoms water, behind a small reef, which affords a good shelter from the swell occasioned by the usual trade-wind, which though constantly blowing in, during the day, through the wonderful provision of an all-wise and all-merciful Providence, never is permitted to blow hard for, at least, nine months out of the twelve, which seasons are pretty well ascertained. During the intervals of unsettled weather, no vessel would be warranted in attempting to seek shelter here. In

the afternoon, a double canoe came off from the shore, and returned again loaded with stores which our vessel had received from the 'Missionary Packet' at Kowaihai Bay, and collected at other places since leaving Oahu. Taking our pilot Sugar-Cane for a guide to that part of the strand the most free from surf, Charles and myself landed and made our way towards the mission-house, meeting with David B. Lyman and Titus Coan before reaching their abode. Both the families assembled at David B. Lyman's, where we partook of some refreshment.

20th. "This morning the principal chief and his wife came on board to breakfast, and staid our reading. This chief is descended from the late Tamehamēha, and certainly, if bulk and weight can add dignity to high birth, this female is a first-rate chiefess, and we are told that her rank is considerably higher than that of her husband. On leaving us, she very uncourteously took to herself the power of proclaiming the 'Henry Freeling' under 'Tabu,' when the natives who had come on board with shells, eggs, &c., to barter, immediately sprung into their canoes, and pushed off from the vessel. Through the medium of Sugar-Cane, we were made to understand that all traffic could now only be carried on at a sort of market upon the shore. On inquiry made afterwards, it appeared that this woman had not the power of preventing the natives from trading, and that she had ventured to usurp this authority, in the hope of monopolizing the whole traffic to herself. It happened, however, that we were not in want of many supplies, some hogs and vegetables only being required, we not intending to recruit our stock of fuel at this island, on account of the extra risk to the vessel which delay might incur in such an exposed roadstead, particularly as we were not in immediate want. In the afternoon, David B. Lyman and Titus Coan came on board; we returned with them to the shore, and after a walk to an old crater not far distant, took tea at Titus Coan's, where the other family joined us. At nine o'clock in the evening, the flames of the volcano gave the atmosphere an unusually bright tinge of light.

21st. "This morning the circumstance of the vessel being 'Tabu'd,' was fully ascertained to be enforced, with a view to exclude the natives from a share in the traffic, and no other than an unauthorized violation of their privileges, against which, we thought it right to make a stand. A person who could speak a little English came on board, at an early hour, with a present of a fowl and some potatoes from this said chiefess. I told him it was a pity she had been at the trouble of sending them off, as presents were things we did not accept, and therefore, must pay for what he had brought with him. It seems this man was told to inform us, that if we accepted the present, it would be considered that the chiefess was entitled to furnish what supplies might be wanted; but if these terms were not acceded to, and the present was declined, he was then to return to the shore to know its value, and



the price was to be sent off by a native then upon the deck, who was pointed out, that he might be known again by us: this man soon brought us word that the price was a quarter dollar, which was paid forthwith, to preserve peace and put an end to the matter. The man who brought off the present was highly gratified at our declining the terms altogether, and there is no doubt but the affair soon gained publicity, as canoes kept coming through the day with fowls, turkies, cabbages, bread-fruit, pine-apples, water-melons, &c., in an undisguised manner. We afterwards fully ascertained that this arbitrary proceeding was a violation of the laws of the island, no person whatever, but the governor, John Adams, alias Kuakini, having the power of interfering with the traffic carried on by the inhabitants; yet such is the servile state of these poor people, from having been trained from infancy to view their chiefs as a superior race of beings to themselves, that they would patiently have borne this act of oppression, if it had met with our sanction. Drank tea at David B. Lyman's, who has kindly undertaken to accept the office of interpreter between myself and the people to-morrow. Notwithstanding I have now stood before so many thousands of these islanders on both sides the Equator, yet the prospect of to-morrow is formidable in my sight, and if the weakness of human nature was not thus witnessed and felt, there would, I believe, be a danger of our not sufficiently and devotedly seeking after, and imploring the strengthening influence of that power, without which 'we can do nothing,' but with it all things. May the Lord be our helper, and cause his own works to praise him, to the glory of the riches of that grace which came by Jesus Christ.

22nd. (*First-day.*) "This morning felt as has uniformly been the case, when about to meet the first time with a large body of the people at a fresh place, but was comforted from believing that we should be remembered by some at a time and 'place where prayer is wont to be made,' where the Lord is in the purified temple, the earthly nature silent, and the heavenly Intercessor's only availing help experienced. Attended the meeting at the time fixed. Sat as one that had lost all strength, until David B. Lyman had nearly finished reading the morning meeting's certificate, when I seemed ready, and only waiting the termination of the concluding paragraph to stand upon my feet, with my mind centred and the fear of man banished far away. After the people were requested to settle down in stillness, and endeavour to draw nigh unto the Lord with humble reverence, I was strengthened to declare amongst them the way of life and salvation, in the word of the truth of the Gospel, in the love of which my heart was greatly enlarged. Repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, the only way to obtain forgiveness of sins that are past, and freedom from the thralldom of sin in future, were largely pointed out, and the light of the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus, which

shineth in every heart, as the only blessed medium by which this path is made manifest, by reason of the darkness which prevail-eth in man, while held in a benighted, carnal, and unregenerate state, in bondage to the power of Satan, the prince of darkness. The burthen which rested upon my mind was, that the people might be delivered from this power of darkness, and translated into the kingdom of the dear Son of God, through the shedding of whose precious blood our redemption is sealed, even forgiveness and remission of sins that are past, and an interest mercifully granted to us in that Holy Advocate, always present to plead with our heavenly Father, the weakness and infirmity of our nature, for the time to come, for all those who, in belief and obedience, are willing to come unto God by Him. Such, and such only, are turned 'from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God,' the judge of all, through the blood of Jesus Christ his Son, which cleanseth from all sin.' The meeting was not so large, we were told, as at some other times, but the people were very attentive, and bowed down under the mighty hand of Him whose power reigned over all. After the meeting broke up, we attended a 'Sabbath School' for Bible scholars, of all ages and both sexes. It commenced with a prayer by a native teacher, and finished with another from one of the missionaries.

"We partook of some dinner with Titus Coan and wife, as I felt an engagement to attend the native meeting again in the afternoon. It began at three o'clock, and I had again to testify of the Gospel of grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ, and that of his fulness we have all received, and grace for grace, from which, such is the universal love of God, none are excluded.

23d. "By a canoe that came paddling round the vessel, it was ascertained that the *tabu* was still enforced, and the natives though invited on board, thought it safest to keep aloof. Before noon a person was sent to inform us that sundry articles were in the market for sale; but it being found they belonged to the chiefess as before, he was told that nothing would be purchased belonging to her, at the same time it was stated, that if the natives had anything to sell, we would buy from them what was wanting. In the afternoon landed, and visited a magnificent and stupendous waterfall, called the 'Cascade of the Rainbow.' The sun was hot and the walk fatiguing, but the exercise was needful before again putting to sea, as from the wetness of the weather since anchoring in the bay but little had been obtained. We passed by three distinct craters, situated in a line stretching inland from the shore, apparently at exact distances from each other, and the same size and shape in every particular, all declaring the wonderful works of the one same Almighty power. The cascade of the rainbow exceeds the description given of it, and at once excites wonder and admiration, exhibiting a mighty torrent of foaming water in perpetual roar, rushing down a perpendicular steep of more than one hundred

feet into a basin of sufficient magnitude to receive this never-ceasing deluge. At the back of the fall, towards the bottom, a large arch is formed probably by the rushing torrent; and the enormous weight of water falling such a depth, causeth a mist to arise two-thirds of the whole height of the surrounding cliffs, and which, with the sun in a certain position, gives birth to the name of the cascade, by displaying a beautiful rainbow. While Charles was engaged in taking a sketch of the outline of this sublime spectacle, I placed myself on a stone in its front, surrounded by nine of the natives, who seemed not fully satisfied without being so near as to touch me occasionally in huddling together. One of the oldest of these, took no small pains to make me understand that in former days, when there was *plenty, plenty* of water, (probably after great rain) little native children were hurled by their parents into this rainbowed gulph to check the increase of population. Afterwards, on mentioning to the missionary, Titus Coan, what I supposed this native meant, describing, as well as I could, some of his actions and words, he said, that the construction I had put upon them was correct. Not feeling any thing to detain me further upon this island, we look forward to leave this interesting bay to-morrow night, when the land-breeze comes off the mountains, for the island of Maui, and expect to take with us the two missionary families so far on their way to their annual meeting at Oahu. They will probably escape a portion of sea-sickness by not coming on board until near the time of sailing, as the motion of our vessel is incessant, from the constant swell of the ocean, which ranges round the reef into the bay. It compels us to keep every thing secure nearly as much as at sea.

24th. "To-day, procured what supplies were needed. In the afternoon took exercise on shore, and towards sun-setting the baggage was embarked in a double canoe, which, with the assistance of our boat brought off both the families and ourselves, with two native servants. About eight o'clock, P. M., the mountain breeze sprung up, when the vessel was got under weigh, but the wind soon became lighter and lighter, and the great wash of water off the land, and out of the rivers, combined to sweep us towards the reef: before ten o'clock the water began to grow shallow, and diminishing from ten to three fathoms, obliged us to anchor for the night. The hollow ground swell upon the edge of the reef caused violent and constant rolling, without a possibility of preventing it while confined in that position.

25th. "Soon after eight o'clock, A. M., the sea-breeze made its appearance, but before setting in, a canoe came paddling off in great haste to reach the vessel with a couple who were desirous of being married before the departure of the missionaries from the coast; but having neglected to obtain the permission of the principal chiefess, this could not be accomplished. There was no alternative but that of returning again to the shore about three miles



off to obtain the needful sanction, and having been told that we should not wait for them if the wind should spring up in our favour, they paddled off again with all the speed in their power. Before the wind was strong enough to warrant the risk of getting under weigh and clearing the reef, this canoe was seen again returning to the vessel from the shore. They would gladly have been married in their canoe, but the motion was so violent that the parties could not possibly stand upright while the missionary performed the usual ceremony. They were then taken on board, and to make it easy to both parties, were brought down into the cabin, where the rite was performed by one of the missionaries demanding answers to several important questions, and the other offered up a prayer. The captain, mate, and ourselves, were witnesses of this curious exhibition, the vessel rolling about in such a manner that they were forced to hold themselves by the table and each other, when they stood upon their feet: they were both drenched by the sea that had washed into the canoe, that measures were necessary to clear the cabin floor from the quantity of water upon it, after the ceremony was concluded. The husband was clothed with a European shirt, and a belt round him, and his wife with a loose cotton robe, which reached nearly to the floor, which comprised the whole attire of the parties. I felt a degree of satisfaction at what had transpired, and to myself, our detention last evening was accounted for. Nothing short of a fear let in by some on board of losing the vessel upon the reef, would have induced a willingness to anchor for the night to avoid the apparent danger that seemed to threaten. There was a fresh breeze about midnight, but from the quarter it blew the risk was too great to make it available, from our nearness to the reef at the time. On looking over all the circumstances of the case, there seemed a providence in it that these poor people might be saved the temptation of violating the laws of their country by an illegal procedure, without waiting the return of the missionaries, which might be most of two months. A marriage thus consummated upon the mighty waters, is not an every-day transaction, and especially, as I humbly trust it may be said, in a place of worship, which the cabin of the 'Henry Freeling' has been in many instances, as well as a place of prayer and praise, from whence the spiritual sacrifice has, we hope, at times acceptably ascended unto God through Jesus Christ, though we be as nothing in his sight, and in our own, utterly unworthy of the least of all his tender mercies.

"We witnessed last evening a scene, in the embarkation of the two missionary families, both affecting and highly interesting.—As the moment for their leaving their habitations approached, the natives crowded into their houses to take leave of them. As the train proceeded towards the beach, the company increased to a large number, perhaps hundreds. When arrived at the edge of the cliff, there was a solemn pause and a prayer was eventually

offered up by D. B. Lyman; after which, the final separation took place. The people seemed to consider us also as their friends about to leave them, and extended their good wishes, shaking hands very freely as we retired to the boat. Some of them assisted us to launch into the surf, and I have no hesitation in believing, would have risked their own lives to save ours. How different the present state of things, to what they were when these shores were visited by the first navigators of the Pacific: but what might the situation of the simple hearted natives have been at this day, if only men of Christian principles had trod their soil, instead of the wicked and barbarous crews of our shipping, who have committed every possible excess and outrage, shameful and brutal, upon these helpless islanders, to the lasting disgrace and infamy of the white skin. After the married couple left our vessel, we sailed from Byron's Bay, with a delightful breeze in our favour for the island of Maui.

26th. "As we lengthened our distance from Hawaii the breeze freshened, and we made rapid progress through the night, with a strong south-east trade-wind upon the quarter and a following sea. At day-break, passed the small harbour of Wairûkû, in the isle of Maui: the missionary families were entirely laid aside with seasickness from the time of their coming on board. In hauling round the point of the island, the wind became light, but a fresh breeze springing up from the south-west, enabled us to stem the current and reach the roads of Lahaina, soon after twelve o'clock, and anchor near to the American ship Newark, a whaling vessel put in for fresh provisions and vegetables. The smooth water having recruited our passengers, the men went on shore, but soon returned, bringing with them the resident missionary, William Richards. The captain of the whaler coming on board at the same time, kindly made the offer of his boat, which conveyed all our passengers on shore at once, with ease. In the afternoon, Charles and myself landed and remained at the mission-house until sun-down. It appeared that William Richards and family had intended to leave Lahaina on the evening of the following day for Oahu, in a small schooner lying near at hand, this being the only opportunity likely to offer for their conveyance to that island in time for their annual meeting. Although I had not disclosed what was upon my mind to any one, yet I had long believed that I should not be clear of the Sandwich Islands, without making an attempt to see the whole of the missionary families when collected together for their annual meeting at Oahu, and it now sprung in my heart to tell William Richards, that if he would consent to remain at Lahaina, and assist me over the approaching *first-day*, I should feel myself bound to convey himself and family in time for their meeting at Oahu, if practicable, in the 'Henry Freeling.' These terms being accepted, it was with me to inquire whether the missionary at the station of Wairûkû, on the south side of the island, had sailed for Oahu; and

finding there was considerable probability of his being still at his post, it seemed best to make the necessary arrangements for proceeding thither without delay. A messenger was forthwith despatched with a letter, requesting that the inhabitants of that district might be collected to-morrow, at the place of worship, as early in the day as was compatible with the local circumstances of the place. This being done, a whale-boat was procured from the governor, Opèli, as the conveyance best calculated to accomplish our object in contending with the wind and weather to be encountered in rounding one point of the island, where strong blasts prevail from the set of the trade winds during the greatest part of each year. In the evening returned on board the 'Henry Freeling.'

27th. "By two o'clock A. M., the whale-boat manned with a native crew came alongside, and at the cock-crowing as agreed upon by all parties, we left the vessel properly equipped for the journey. The morning was serene and beautiful, and when the day broke, the wind began to rise and to increase as the day advanced. On reaching the most critical point, the wind was so strong and the water so rough, that for a time it seemed doubtful whether the strength of our rowers would hold out: they succeeded however in getting under the shelter of the coast, but, not without all of us being well drenched by the spray of the sea. By eight o'clock, we reached the boundary aimed at, beyond which, the boat was of no further service, and here we landed and hauled it up, and the men corded the oars to a chain we had purposely brought with us. I was speedily furnished with a land conveyance, and Charles being mounted upon a horse, appointed to attend at the place by the missionary at Lahaina, we pursued our route towards Wairûkû, about eight miles distant, alternately walking and riding for the relief of the bearers, as well as for a change of position. We got to our destination about noon, and were kindly received by the missionary family. While some refreshment was preparing, we visited the school, consisting of a large number of children of both sexes. The meeting gathered at three o'clock, which we attended accordingly: myself, in much weariness, and emptiness, but I was strengthened to stand up shortly after the reading of my certificates, and remind the people that we were in the presence of the Most High God of heaven and earth; before whom 'the nations are as a drop of a bucket,—He taketh up the isles as a very little thing:' He not only seeth all our actions, but knoweth the most inward thoughts and imaginations of every heart. I was carried forward to unusual length, and without any prospect of drawing to a conclusion, the blessed truths of the Gospel unfolding in continued succession to the view of my mind for about an hour and a-half; and I afterwards found that the meeting had kept increasing far beyond what was anticipated. It was to me a very memorable season, the Lord's power was over all, and I humbly trust His name was honoured and exalted, and the king-



dom within proclaimed to the dear Redeemer's praise. The desire of my heart was, that the Gospel message might be 'glad tidings,' indeed, 'of great joy' to these people, through 'repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ,' wrought by believing in the appearance of his Holy Spirit in the heart, and by the operation thereof cleansing and purifying from every thing that is offensive in the Divine sight; that thus they might be made meet to be partakers of the inheritance with the saints in light, in the everlasting kingdom, of endless praise to the Lord God and the Lamb. My mind felt peaceful and refreshed, and the fatigue of the journey was remembered no more. We had to shake hands with a large body of the natives between the meeting-house and the missionary's dwelling. After spending some time with the family and the night drawing on, we were compelled to renew our travel towards the place where the boat had been left in the morning, and though it soon became dark after leaving Wairûkû, we succeeded in getting to the right spot. After the people had rested themselves, the boat was launched, and we were favoured to reach our little vessel about half-past one o'clock in the morning. It was to me a memorable day of goodness and mercy, and the more so, because the anniversary of my dear William's birth, which did not fail to kindle in my heart towards our heavenly Father, renewed desires for the welfare of my precious family.

28th. "Engaged on board until afternoon, then landed and arranged with the missionary to meet the people at nine o'clock, on the following morning, at the prospect of which, I felt as a worm and no man; but whither could I look for help but unto Him, who hath so often covered my head in the day of battle, for his great name's sake.

29th. (*First-day*.) "Got some rest in the night, but was awakened early by the remembrance of the great weight of responsibility resting upon me, but the voice of my supplication was heard, and my prayer was not permitted to return again into my bosom in the hour of trouble. At this place we found a noble meeting-house, teeming full of people, both in the galleries and upon the ground-floor, more in number than two thousand, according to the missionary's statement: the will of the creature was laid low as in the dust, but I felt the comforting influence of that power whose 'strength is made perfect in weakness,' to be nigh, though the earth trembleth and shaketh at the presence thereof. Though a stranger to the language of these people, I was sensible that my kind and willing interpreter took more than ordinary pains to impress their minds with a belief that I had brought with me well attested letters of recommendation; and as the name of 'William Ellis' was well known and remembered among them, he took care to state that I had a letter from him also, among others;—and his competent knowledge and fluent expression of the language, while

it at once commanded attention, raised a degree of confidence, both in them and myself which was of a strengthening tendency.

“On standing up I told them, although for the most part we were strangers and unknown to each other, yet we were all of one blood and members of the same great human family, and in the presence of the Almighty and everlasting Parent of the universe, ‘who seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart;’ pointing out the necessity of our endeavouring to get into an humble waiting frame of mind, and be still; that His power might be known and magnified and felt as a crown of solemnity over us. That I had come amongst them in the love of the Gospel—that same love of which the great Apostle spoke, when he said, ‘the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead: and that He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him, which died for them, and rose again.’ Strong desires were raised in me and expressed, that these people might be brought to an acquaintance with the Holy Spirit of Him, ‘who thus gave his life a ransom for many:’ that they might not only know and witness the preciousness of this Divine gift, but also the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who in love and mercy gave it; who ‘gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.’ I had to lay open some of their besetting sins as a people, and to point out the only way for their deliverance from the power of darkness by which they are bound, which is to believe in the light of Christ Jesus, which shineth in every heart, for this indeed is He, by his Holy Spirit, who speaketh unto them, and telleth them all things that ever they did—that convinceth the world of sin, and by his light makes manifest every evil deed—every evil thought, and word, and leadeth man to repentance, whereby he is strengthened to forsake sin, and live unto Him, who died for us and rose again. It was with me to tell them that the day of their visitation was come; and that salvation by Jesus Christ was freely offered to them that believe and receive it, and open the door of their hearts that the King of Glory by his Holy Spirit may enter in. Ability was richly afforded to exhort, warn, encourage, and beseech them to turn from darkness to that light which would show them their sins, bring them unto God the Father, and raise them up at the last day, to an inheritance with those that are sanctified by the like precious faith in his beloved Son. It was indeed a high day, a day of light, and joy, and gladness of heart, as when the Bridegroom’s voice is heard. The meeting held long, and when over, we were invited to attend an English service to be conducted by Titus Coan, which I was most easy to decline, and return forthwith on board the ‘Henry Freeling,’ to collect our own sailors. Some of the seamen of the American whaler were present, and my mouth was again opened to

speak of the way of life and salvation by Christ Jesus, unto this little gathering. Soon after three o'clock P. M., we again returned to the shore, to attend the afternoon native meeting. Not more than half the number of the people were present who had assembled in the morning. I had again to minister unto them; but the current of life was weak in comparison to what had flowed so freely and strongly in the first meeting. The 'Gospel of the kingdom,' was again declared to them, and I trust the great name was magnified, by the praises of his own works, to his glory. After taking some tea at the mission-house, we again removed to our vessel for the night; as to myself, under the feelings of the unprofitable servant, being lamentably deficient and behind-hand in too many instances, in having done that which was my duty to do.

"Blessed be the Lord God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things. And blessed be his glorious name forever; and let the whole earth be filled with his glory; Amen, and Amen.

30th. "In the forenoon, landed to purchase fruit, vegetables, &c., in the market appointed for the sale of these articles. Made a present of a small sized telescope to governor Opèli. William Richards having kindly furnished a light wagon, Charles and myself proceeded to Lahaina Luna, where the high-school is established; we were kindly received by the principals of this institution, who are missionaries,—specimens of the books which have been printed here, charts of the Sandwich Islands, and a general atlas, (the plates which these were taken from, being the work of the native scholars at this school,) were presented to us. The buildings were undergoing alterations and repairs during the vacation, on which account the scholars had been dismissed some days previous to our arrival. Returned on board soon after noon, but had some difficulty in getting safely through the surf, which had greatly increased since the morning, owing, perhaps, to its being about the top of the tide. At four o'clock P. M. the missionary families came on board, consisting of William Richards and wife, with eight children; David B. Lyman and wife, and two children; Titus Coan and wife, and an unmarried female in the employ of the mission, who, with the native servants and their wives and young children, amounted to twenty-three in number: the whale-boats of the American ship were procured for their embarkation.

"At five o'clock the 'Henry Freeling' left the island of Maui, and after reaching the Morakai channel, the breeze forsook us, and we were left to tumble about all the night in a heavy swell. Nearly the whole of our passengers were sea-sick; several of the females had with them sofa-beds, which were fixed upon the deck, and in which they remained the greatest part of the time they were on board.

31st. "Having the advantage of a fine trade-wind in the course of the day, about five o'clock P. M. we anchored outside the reefs at Oahu in ten fathoms water. Having previously announced by



a white flag at the mast-head, when passing Diamond Hill, that missionaries were on board, a fine double-canoe belonging to the king soon reached the vessel, sufficiently large to convey all our passengers to the shore at once, with their luggage, besides a number of the natives who worked the paddles, and had been employed on the occasion. Just after this canoe left, a shark from eight to nine feet in length was taken by our sailors; a large portion of this fish was sent on shore by the pilot, Sugar-Cane, for the use of his family. These islanders are so fond of the flesh of the shark, that it will always fetch a high price in the Oahu market, when offered for sale.

---

#### CHAPTER XIV.

Oahu—death of Captain Russel—annual meeting of the missionaries—meeting at Eva—meeting with the members of the mission—addressed by the senior missionary—sail for Tauai—native meeting at Koloa—sail for Hanarei mission station—native meeting—Waimaea—purchasing supplies—oppression of the natives—final departure from the Sandwich Islands—letter from the missionaries—address to the missionaries.

1st of Sixth month. “Early in the forenoon, the British Consul came on board in a whale-boat, and conveyed us to the shore, as our own small boat was in such a shattered condition from exposure to the sun, as scarcely to be fit to trust to for so considerable a distance, as from our present anchorage without the reefs to the town of Honolulu. After landing, proceeded to the missionary establishment, and had an interview with the three missionaries from the island of Atooi, or Tauai, about ninety miles to leeward of Oahu, who had arrived yesterday in the ‘Missionary Packet.’ Our situation was fully explained to them, and it was, I believe, understood, that unless one of them would kindly accompany us to that island, our making an attempt to visit the people would be useless. We remained on shore, until near dark, but were favoured to reach the vessel without difficulty, she having displayed a light as a beacon to guide us. Whilst on shore, we were informed that the neighbourhood of New Zealand had been visited, in the first month last, with an awful tempest, in which much damage had been done to the shipping; that Captain Russel, of the American ship *Zone*, with whom we were personally acquainted, and to whom we were much attached, in endeavouring to save one of the sailors, had himself been washed overboard and lost. We met with him last year, at the Society Isle Huahine, and were much pleased with his serious and steady deportment. Several books and tracts were furnished by us for the use of the crew of his vessel, by whom he was much beloved. We were informed by the missionary family, that he had been much interested at the meeting that was held with

the natives, which he had attended on the first-day morning. He had determined that that should be his last voyage, and so it has proved. I humbly trust he has safely entered a haven of eternal rest, where storm and tempest cannot come, nor pain, nor sorrow find place.

2nd. "During most of the day I had to struggle with discouraging circumstances, all perhaps needful, and conducing to keep the creature in its proper place. In the afternoon landed with a view to ascertain from Hiram Bingham, whether one of the Tauai missionaries had consented to accompany us to that island as interpreter. Hiram Bingham said an adjourned annual meeting was about to assemble, and it would afford a good opportunity of getting to know what had transpired on that subject. The bell soon rang, and we repaired to the meeting. At a vacant opportunity the subject was brought forward by Hiram Bingham, but nothing came of it, as several of the parties were absent. I was afterwards informed that one of the Hawaii missionaries was kindly disposed to accompany us, which I rather viewed with regret, from being aware that he would expect to be brought back again by our vessel. Our suspense was at last relieved by a proposition from one of the Tauai missionaries to go with us, and an assurance that he would be ready to depart before the final conclusion of the annual meeting. Although this might occasion two or three days delay, yet the saving of time would be considerable, when compared with the first offer, which would involve our having to return again to Oahu, against a relentless trade-wind, the effect of which had been fully tried. The circumstances of the case in all its bearings considered, it seemed prudent to take the 'Henry Freeling' again into harbour, rather than risk her any longer outside of the reefs. It is no small trial to be thus delayed, but as it is not to gratify self that we linger on the way, the Lord knoweth, I trust we shall yet be able to redeem this apparent loss of time, and be favoured to improve the future to his praise.

"Although the prospect which had been spread before the view of my mind, for some weeks previous to our return to Honolulu, of seeing the whole of the missionaries and their families when collected at their General Meeting, still remained strongly with me, yet the time did not seem come for me to take any steps to accomplish the same, until we had fully ascertained that the whole of them had arrived. Those who were present at the opening of this General Meeting, concluded I was detained until an interpreter was ready to accompany us to the island of Tauai, and in a very kind and brotherly manner invited us to attend the several sittings of that meeting. The manner in which the affairs of the mission to these islands is conducted, could not fail to excite much interest in our minds, and although well aware that in our attendance at the meetings, we should be subjected to witness many things that we could not join with or unite in, yet as they had

always allowed us to do that which was most easy to ourselves, without a single remonstrance, or the slightest appearance of dissatisfaction on their part, I was not satisfied to let such an opportunity pass away, however painful it might prove, or whatever portion of suffering we might have to endure, without availing ourselves of it; at the same time, the unmortified part would gladly have been excused altogether.

3d. "This morning, one of the Tauai missionaries came on board to say, that he hoped to have his business in such a state of forwardness, as to enable him to return to that island before the final conclusion of the General Meeting. A light breeze having sprung up from the southward, soon after breakfast, the 'Henry Freeling' got under weigh and made sail for the harbour, and before ten o'clock anchored off the fort. Being desirous of going to the mission-station at Eva, next first-day, application was made to know whether a missionary would return thither to meet the natives on that day; but it appeared that the whole of them will remain at Honolulu, on account of its being the usual time for the celebration of what is called the 'Lord's Supper.' We were informed that so few of the natives would remain within the compass of their own station, that a visit would be better deferred until next week. In the evening attended one of the General Meetings, and had to wade through a painful season therein.

4th. "A leak before alluded to, (see page 195,) in our vessel still continuing, although considerably lessened since our getting her into still water, it was deemed prudent that such parts of her should be well calked, as were supposed to be implicated in the cause of her requiring so much pumping, while at the same time the needful repairs of the sails and rigging were going forward, in the expectation of again crossing the Equator, when altogether clear of these islands.

5th. (*First-day*.) "Remained on board through the day with our own people. In the evening repaired to the mariners' place of worship, where a time of suffering was my lot.

10th. "Since first-day, my time has been pretty fully occupied in attending the different sittings of the General Meeting of the members of the mission, as they came in course, and in procuring the supplies needful for the vessel, in exchange for such articles of barter remaining in our possession, as were most in demand.

"Having deferred going to Eva last week, as no interpreter could be procured, to-day, I went in search of the missionary belonging to that district, and found that he had procured a large canoe, with the intention of setting forward to-morrow morning at the proper time of the tide to enable us to pass in safety over the shallow places near the shore, and thus preclude the necessity of our being exposed to the swell outside of the reef.

11th. "In the afternoon, left the vessel and proceeded towards the Pearl river, at the head of which lies the station of Eva; we



were favoured to reach it in less than five hours, though our progress was for some time impeded by the giving way of the outrigger, but the natives soon sprung overboard and put it in order again. At this place, a prayer-meeting has been instituted among the natives, and sixteen of them collected in the evening in the place where we lodged: by what transpired, it appeared that this station has been but recently organized.

12th. (*First-day*.) "Having retired early to rest last evening, we were seated at the breakfast table by six o'clock this morning. The horn was blown in good time to collect the people, and at ten o'clock we met about seven hundred of them in a shed open on every side, there being as yet no place of worship erected. I had largely to declare among them the glad tidings of the Gospel, turning their attention, as ability was afforded, to the just witness for God in every heart. Although under feelings of great weakness as to myself, yet the deportment of the people afforded an encouraging evidence that the Great Master was near to own the work. The afternoon meeting was not quite so numerously attended, but it proved even more solid than that in the morning. In this meeting I had to turn them from the teachings of men, to that Power, which alone can save. For 'none of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him.' But the Almighty Father of love and mercy hath amply provided for the salvation of all mankind by his Son Jesus Christ, who came into the world to save sinners, and was 'made sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him,' who died to obtain for us the Holy Spirit, that we might live and come unto God by Him. The countenances of many of these dear people, spoke louder than words what they felt; but weakness and poverty were my close companions, and yet I was favoured with peaceful tranquillity of mind.

"Not being willing to wait until the next afternoon for the highest time of tide to carry us over the shallows, and our interpreter wishing to return to his brethren assembled at Honolulu, it was concluded that by setting out at an early hour, we might venture with safety outside of the reefs, as the trade-wind seldom blows strong enough to occasion a sea until the sun gets hot. We left Eva at three o'clock this morning, the 13th instant, and got well on our way an hour before day-light, through the narrow rushy channel, which in places is overhung by the spreading boughs of large trees. Although there was very little wind, we were annoyed by the swell of the Pacific, but were favoured to reach the 'Henry Freeling' by eight o'clock. It had been to me a time of favour and a day to be remembered among the memorable ones of my chequered life, and the more so, when on looking back, it was discovered according to the time of England, to be a date on which I had more than once had to record the tender mercies of the Lord,

for signal and crowning loving-kindness bestowed upon a poor unworthy creature.

“In the course of the day it was ascertained that the last of the missionary families had arrived to attend the General Meeting in a small vessel from Wairûkû, and that the other family residing at Waimea, on the island of Hawaii, were prevented from attending by an increase of family since we were at their dwelling. The time was now fully come for me to request an opportunity with the whole of the members of the mission, and in the evening I stated my case to the senior missionary, who appeared quite disposed to make way for it, by consulting his brethren at a meeting then about to collect, to which we repaired. Most of two hours elapsed before a suitable opportunity presented to spread the subject before the meeting, but when once understood, my request was immediately granted, and the next evening at half-past seven o'clock, was fixed for us to meet together.

14th. “Employed on board through the day. In the evening, called upon Hiram Bingham who accompanied us to the meeting. I was shown into the moderator's seat, and the company was soon gathered together. After some time in silence, it was with me simply to state, that on leaving Honolulu a few weeks ago, I had no expectation of returning to it again, but some time afterwards I found that I should not be clear of these parts without endeavouring to see the whole of the missionary establishment in its collected capacity. At that time it seemed difficult to comprehend how it would be brought about, but I felt a willingness and resignation on my part towards its accomplishment: He that causeth his wind to blow, and the waters flow, directed our steps and brought it to pass. As it is probable (I continued) that all are present that will be on the occasion, I would suggest that we now endeavour to sink down in humble reverence of soul before ‘the Judge of all the earth,’ to wait for the counsel of His will; and, if graciously favoured therewith, endeavour to do it, to his praise and to his glory. The meeting then settled down in silence and remained for a considerable time under a solemn covering, until I had to speak of the order in the church of Christ, and of the preparation of heart which every member must pass through by the operation of the Holy Spirit, before he can become a part of this glorious body, that is without spot or wrinkle; and the necessity of our individually knowing for ourselves the hope of our high and holy calling. It was afterwards with me to state, the opportunity I had had of seeing them in their different, distant, solitary and secluded allotments, and of witnessing their patient endeavours to promote the work in which they were engaged. Having myself dwelt amongst those whose language I could not understand, I was the better able to feel for them on this account with brotherly sympathy; and I was no stranger to the many obstacles thrown in their way, and the numerous difficulties that they had to encounter; and that their

only refuge was Christ Jesus the Lord; but if He was with them, they had nothing to fear, though 'the heathen should rage, and the people imagine a vain thing, the kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed.' 'He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision.' I had no desire to discourage any, but while beholding the vast importance of the work they had taken in hand, I was ready to tremble at the awful weight of the responsibility which rested upon them. It was not for me to judge whether they had been called and chosen for the work, or not. I knew that our Lord had declared, 'this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.' Their being called or not called to the work, rested with themselves. But there is a possibility for a man to have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge; and while earnestly endeavouring to lend a hand of help to others, he may be neglecting the all-important duty of coming to the knowledge of the Lord for himself. I believed that many of them were truly and earnestly desirous to know the Lord for themselves, and I wished to encourage such to follow on to know Him: to seek Him, and not to rest contented until they found Him, who said, 'seek and ye shall find.' 'The Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the Lord of Hosts. But who may abide the day of his coming, and who shall stand, when he appeareth?' Nothing that is of man, or in man, that is earthly, sensual or unclean, can stand before Him: the heart must be cleansed and purified from every thing that defileth, before it can become the temple of a holy, pure, and just God; and none is sufficient for these things but He, unto whom all power in heaven and earth is given, who, the prophet declares, is 'like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap, and He shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver.' This heart-searching process we must all pass through and witness; and by yielding in meekness and submission to the baptizing operation thereof, we shall in due time be given to know and to feel it to be the 'messenger to prepare the way of the Lord' before Him, who will not dwell in the defiled temple of an unclean heart. This ordeal all have to pass through in a greater or smaller degree, before they come to that knowledge which is 'life eternal,' even the knowledge of 'the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent;' who once visited the earth in a body that was prepared for Him, but who now visiteth by his Holy Spirit the heart of man: who is indeed the heavenly messenger of the covenant to all that seek him, and delight in him, and whose coming is sure, because the Lord hath promised. But to those who are called and chosen to speak to others in the name of the Lord, and to proclaim the glad tidings of that Gospel which 'is the power of God unto salva-



tion, to every one that believeth,' a larger portion of the 'refiner's fire' is often needful, to purge them as gold and silver, and prepare them for the great work of declaring 'the truth as it is in Jesus,' from their own blessed and sensible experience. Just in proportion as the Lord's messengers are qualified and taught of Him, when commissioned to go forth in his name, may we expect that the people will be benefitted: if our eyes are not first opened, vain is the attempt to open the eyes of the blind, and turn them from darkness to light. I was largely drawn forth to speak of the vast importance of the work in which they had engaged, and to arouse them to a sense of the responsibility it involved; recommending them to take counsel of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, for the same shall judge us at the last day. I had much to express to them in great plainness of speech, under the overshadowing power of that love which maketh not afraid—reminding them of the many blessed seasons we had been permitted to witness together, on the different islands, when the Divine presence was as a crown and diadem over those large assemblies of the people. In the course of the time, that 'faith which works by love,' and the true supper of the Lord, were largely held up to their view.

15th. "Taking the necessary measures to prepare the vessel for sea.—In the evening, met the whole of the missionary establishment again; when the senior, on behalf of his brethren and himself, delivered an address, on the subject of our visit to these islands, in which he expressed their satisfaction in terms of applause, perhaps, better forgotten by us, than remembered. I was silent among them, but when the meeting broke up, I told the speaker, I could have added 'Not unto us,' &c.

16th. "In the morning, Charles and myself took an early opportunity of sitting down together and were favoured to get into the quiet, although all was bustle around us. In the afternoon went on shore to settle our affairs and take leave of those with whom we had now been several months acquainted, and for whom an earnest solicitude was felt. Soon after returning on board, we embarked the baggage of Peter J. Gulick, the missionary who had engaged to accompany us to the island of Tauai, and who resides at the station of Koloa, he, his wife, and five children, with the British consul and the master of the free school, were our passengers. The trade-wind being fresh in our favour, and having our pilot Sugar-Cane in readiness, at five o'clock we quitted the sheltering harbour of Honolulu and stretched well into the offing, in the hope of a permanent breeze, a good distance from the land. Having only ninety-four miles to run, an expectation was raised of our being in the roads of Koloa by ten o'clock the next morning, but the wind forsook us before midnight, and the island of Tauai was not discovered until too late for its accomplishment.

17th. "Got sight of the island at three o'clock, P. M., and at six o'clock, anchored in the open roadstead of Koloa, just in time

to land our passengers before the night came upon us. Our vessel being observed approaching towards the roads, a large canoe belonging to the missionary, was sent from the shore, which, by making three journies to and fro, succeeded in carrying the family, and the major part of their baggage, in safety to the land. Peter J. Gulick, with his wife and five children, remained on board, until their luggage was sent off, and were at last placed in the canoe, which, from the rolling of the vessel, and the incessant swells of the ocean, was no easy task to accomplish. The father having one of the young children to care for, could not render his wife the slightest assistance: the child cried, and he seemed very anxious lest an accident should happen: but his wife, (while hanging suspended, watching for the right moment, when the canoe coming up, borne by the swell, should rise high enough for her to get foothold sufficient to induce her to let go all hold of the vessel,) calmly cried out to him, 'we must be patient my dear.' After two or three efforts, she ventured, and was received in the arms of two of the natives, and placed in tolerable security. The youngest child, which had for some time been held by the rough grasp of one of our sailors, was now, unconscious of the risk to which it was exposed, handed, with smiling face, over the side of our little reeling bark, in safety to its mother. Although this appeared a hazardous enterprise, demanding the utmost care, yet, I believe they were all safe, as in the hollow of the Divine hand.

18th. "Landed on the island of Tauai and made our way to the missionary station. Having made the needful arrangements relative to meeting the people of this district to-morrow, I left my certificates with Peter J. Gulick, who kindly undertook to convene the natives. After visiting a sugar plantation in the neighbourhood, conducted by Americans, we returned on board.

19th. (*First-day.*) "Repaired in good time to the shore, having two miles to go to the native meeting, in the heat of the sun. By nine o'clock, about eight hundred of the people were assembled in an open shed. I was poor, and under feelings of great weakness amongst them; but after reminding them of the solemn purpose for which we were brought together, (when the missionary had finished reading the translation of my certificates,) the way was opened for me largely to declare the glad tidings of great joy, to all people that repent, believe, and obey the Gospel; and to make a solemn appeal to the just witness for God in every heart. I felt an earnest engagement to turn the attention of these dear people to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, which would discover to them 'all things that ever they did,' set their sins in order before them, and save them from sin with an everlasting salvation, &c. The people were very attentive, and under a solemn feeling the meeting broke up; when they flocked round us in the usual manner. I found that on account of the weak state of the health of the missionary, no afternoon meeting was held, but the school was largely attended: on this

occasion, however, the people were again assembled for worship, at three o'clock, P. M. I felt but little on my mind towards them, but was fearful of withholding that little, and stood for a time under much discouragement; strength was, however, in due time graciously afforded, and I was enabled, to my admiration, to set before the people, 'life and good, death and evil,' and to encourage them not to be overcome of evil, but to overcome evil with good. 'Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity,' and 'live unto him who died for them, and rose again,' and who now by the grace of His Holy Spirit, bringeth salvation to all men; hath appeared unto all men, and teacheth all men, &c. Although the number of persons present was less than in the morning, yet the meeting was no less solemn. Returned on board before dark to lessen the risk of staving the boat against the vessel, as the constant swell of the sea renders access and egress at all times difficult, but much less hazardous by day-light.

21st. "Yesterday and this morning pretty fully engaged in procuring vegetables, Indian corn, &c. In the afternoon went up to Koloa, to take leave of the missionary's family, he himself being to accompany us to Hanareï, a station on the other side of the island. Towards evening the needful supplies were obtained, and Peter J. Gulick, Richard Charlton, (the consul) with three or four natives were already embarked. At seven o'clock we loosed from the roads, and stretched away into the offing for the night, with a fresh gale, but directly opposed to the course we were desirous of steering.

22nd. "On approaching the land again this morning, it was found that but little had been gained through the night, and unless the wind veered a little in our favour, there seemed no probability of our rounding the head-land which obstructed the passage to Hanareï. Employed in plying to windward all day, and by midnight our position was such, that day-light only was wanted to sanction our taking the advantage of the bending of the coast to steer for the entrance of the bay. But when our object was nearly accomplished, the wind died away, and a strong current set the vessel so rapidly to leeward, that for a time there seemed no prospect of our getting in at all: the breeze, however, rallied again, and helped us round the point of the reef, and by nine o'clock, A. M., an anchor was dropped in ten fathoms water in the midst of heavy rain.

23d. "As vessels seldom touch here, our arrival soon brought off a number of canoes, and a supply of fresh fish; butter and milk were quickly furnished from the estate of Richard Charlton, who had sent an overland messenger from Koloa, to keep a good lookout for the vessel, and have these articles in readiness on our arrival. After breakfast, our kind interpreter, Peter J. Gulick, went on shore to examine into the state of the people, their own missionary and his family being absent at Oahu, attending the general



meeting of the mission. Some of our people were employed on shore in the forenoon, slaughtering a bullock from the stock of Richard Charlton, kindly provided for our accommodation in the expectation that the 'Henry Freeling' would return towards the Equator before many days.

24th. "Our missionary friend came off from the shore at an early hour to inform us that the natives would be collected about half-past nine o'clock. We landed with him in a large canoe, conducted by skilful natives, which carried us comfortably through the surf. As we approached the strand, the people collected in a body, and watching the return of the roller which bore the canoe a sufficient height for their purpose, it was placed in a few moments very safely out of the reach of the breakers upon dry ground. The conch-shells were immediately sounded, and after waiting some time at the missionary-house, we proceeded to the meeting.—Here we found, perhaps, seven hundred people, all squatted upon the ground in stillness, (as no seats were provided,) waiting for the strangers. After a time my mind was opened to declare amongst them 'Christ Jesus the Lord,' the light of the knowledge of whose Holy Spirit visiteth every heart, to give the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ, and restore man from a state of sin and death, to holiness and newness of life, if believed in, and walked in. Strength and ability were richly afforded me, to testify the love and the mercy of God in Christ Jesus to the children of men; and the people were exhorted to turn to this light, whilst the day of their visitation was extended, lest they should be overtaken by that night, wherein no man can work, &c. Although the people were very attentive, and great solemnity prevailed on the occasion, yet after the meeting broke up, as was the case with those held at Koloa, the sentence of death in myself was my only portion: at its conclusion they flocked round us in the usual way, many of them, I believe, with love in their hearts. At least one hundred and fifty accompanied us down to the strand, and saw us safely launched again into deep water.

"In the afternoon, landed on the other side of the bay, and had full opportunity of witnessing the very low state of these poor degraded people, and the filthy abodes of several of them. I exchanged needles and fish-hooks for any thing they could furnish, even for broken shells, as they seemed to have nothing to part with, to purchase such articles as they stood in need of, and which they were very desirous to obtain.

"At six o'clock P. M., prepared for sailing, and at seven o'clock departed from the bay, and made sail to the eastward with a fair breeze, and heavy showers of rain falling: towards midnight less wind.

25th. "In the course of the day, much baffled with variable winds and strong currents—towards sun-set, anchored in five fathoms water, in the road of Waimea, opposite a fort, formed some

years ago by the crews, &c. of a Russian squadron. Soon after arriving, Peter J. Gulick went on shore to arrange for a meeting with the people to-morrow. In the evening, some milk was sent off from the missionary station; its occupants, Samuel Whitney and family, are now absent at Oahu, with the rest of the mission.

26th. (*First-day.*) "Landed in good time to attend the meeting. Richard Charlton undertook to conduct us through the surf with the natives, having acquired their language from long residence among these islands; we soon met with Peter J. Gulick, and proceeded to the meeting together. By nine o'clock, about one thousand persons were collected, who filled every part of the house, except a narrow gallery intended for singers, at the lower end of it. I felt as one stripped of every thing, but a sense of utter weakness and inability, which has been the case for several seasons of late; and although the Lord was again pleased to try my faith, that my trust and confidence might be centered in Him alone, He again condescended to clothe me with strength and power to declare amongst the people, the unsearchable riches of Christ. Soon after Peter J. Gulick had read my certificates I stood up, and having awakened their attention and directed them to Him, unto whom the cattle on a thousand hills belong, I told them, I had no desire to multiply words amongst them, lest I should be found darkening counsel, but that my desire was to turn them from words, to the power of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, in their own hearts. My tongue was loosed to declare freely the things relating to the Gospel of the kingdom, for upwards of an hour. No people could be more attentive,—and my prayer is, that many of them may be enabled to say, from heart-felt living experience, 'Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world:'—unto whom be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. After the meeting was over, I found that my interpreter was greatly exhausted by the fatigue he had had to pass through, although he offered to attend again in the afternoon; but added, that the number of people would be much reduced, as no afternoon meetings are held, in the absence of the resident missionary; and when at his post, the Bible class system is usually adopted. I told him, that if I came with a view to see the people again, I should take care to be on shore in time in the afternoon. The surf had increased since our landing in the morning, but we were assisted as before, by experienced and skilful managers. The weather becoming wet in the afternoon, seemed to decide my remaining on board, having been informed that the islanders do not like to go out in the rain themselves, nor do they expect strangers to do it; but more especially from not feeling it binding upon me to return to the shore again that day. On looking at the subject after the time had passed by, although in poverty and depression, I did not feel as one that had held back. Had there been a probability of a

meeting being held, I was scarcely fit to attempt a second landing, from pain in my head. In the afternoon, read portions of Scripture to our own crew. Late in the night, made a fair copy of a short address to the members of the mission, in the Sandwich Islands, at the same time, acknowledging the receipt of a joint communication from them in their general meeting capacity, signed by all the members; which will be hereafter noticed.

27th. "Engaged procuring yams, pumpkins, with other vegetables, and live stock, in the prospect of again steering towards the Equator. Found it expedient to hire from the natives a strong canoe, to assist our operations, as our own jolly-boat is now old and very crazy, and altogether unfit to contend with the surf upon this side of the island, even when in her best condition. On landing, we found a considerable body of the natives collected together, with a prodigious quantity of various sorts of vegetables, fruits, fowls, &c., intended as a present to our vessel. The missionary being present, there was no lack of an interpreter betwixt us. I told him that we could not accept of any thing as a present from these poor people, and even if we could, that the quantity before us upon the beach was greater than our vessel could take in with convenience; at the same time I would not object to take what might be useful to us, provided they would allow us to make a suitable return.

"It appeared from the statement of the missionary, that the people were intending to build a new meeting-house at Koloa, by voluntary contribution, and that as this was the case, the difficulty could be at once surmounted by the appropriation of the amount of the supplies which might be taken by us, to that purpose. To effect this, the articles we wanted were to be valued in dollar money, which enabled us to pay for them in such commodities as could be used in the building in question, as materials, or in the payment of workmen employed in erecting it.—Articles of clothing were much in demand for the latter purpose. The people, particularly the females, brought with them on this occasion many of the simple native productions of the island; with small quantities of shells, and other ornamental trifles in use among them in the days of grossest idolatry, but now laid aside. These articles were intended as presents from individuals then present, so that each person received an equivalent for what they had to offer on the spot, and care was taken that an ample return was made to each of them. Needles, fish-hooks, and pocket combs, were eagerly sought after in exchange. Some native dresses were bought, in the shape of a morning robe for a female, made from the bark of the paper mulberry tree, and with thread of their own manufacture: this circumstance accounted for the brisk demand for large sized needles, to enable them to use their own thread, while a very small quantity of our thread was taken. These dresses were mostly purchased for scissors, but knives, combs, and other articles were in demand



for native cloth of stained colours. Returned on board to avoid the hottest part of the day, as the heat was extreme, and the reflection from the white sand on the beach almost insupportable. As the sun declined, we landed again and pursued our barter trade until the natives began to retire from the shore for the night.—Crossed the river by canoe opposite the fort. Some years ago, the chiefs of this island had been prevailed upon by the Russians to place themselves under the protection of that nation, and on that score had ceded one-half of the island over to them. After this, the fort was erected; the step altogether was found to be obnoxious to some other powers, and the Russian government disclaiming the action, as having been committed without any sanction on their part, the scheme was abandoned altogether, and the blame cast upon its supposed projectors. Be this correct or not, the fort is still in existence. Cannon of other nations are to be seen in it, besides those of Russia, and several may be distinguished to have come from England, by the G. R., &c. It is probable these may have been procured by the chiefs, or their own king, with a view to strengthen this place for the security of the island.

28th. “To-day, for the most part employed in embarking yams, sweet potatoes, water melons, goats, &c., which had been purchased with barter goods. Some molasses had been spoken about to a Chinaman engaged as an agent here to an American master residing at Oahu, but finding that this article was entirely the gain of oppression, we declined taking it on that account.—A few gallons were purchased at last from an American who had produced the sugar cane by his own labour, which wholly removed all difficulty on this head. On this island, it is said that the poor natives are more oppressed by the chiefs than on any other of the Sandwich group. The introduction of two establishments for making sugar, in which the chiefs are connected, it seems probable will eventually be the cause of promoting a state of slavery as oppressive as that which has existed in the West Indies: the population, from this, and other much to be deplored causes, is rapidly decreasing, which is the less to be regretted, when the present state of suffering and oppression is considered. These sugar plantations were set on foot by two Americans. In one instance, the chiefs find all the labour, and have one half of the profit,—in the other, the pretext is more plausible, as the natives are paid a small pittance for their labour, but the chiefs are compelled by contract to furnish a sufficient number of labourers for their share of the profit, for the sake of which, the contract is more rigidly enforced. This was spoken of as being conducted upon a fair principle, but we told them, nothing compulsory could be just. The missionary having left us and returned to his family at Koloa, we found the kind assistance of the British consul very useful in our transactions with the natives.

"At the edge of dark, we had all on board, and only waited the land-breeze to waft us from the island. At nine o'clock, P. M., Richard Charlton left us, into whose hands were committed our letters for England, to be forwarded from Oahu, by the first eligible conveyance which might offer after his arrival there.

"Our pilot, Sugar-Cane, was now paid off, and all things being settled, we took a final departure, and stretched off a south and by east course, from these interesting isles of the ocean, amongst which, more than half a year of our time had been expended. The best welfare of the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands will be an object ever near and dear to my heart, and which, however distantly separated as to the body, my spirit will earnestly crave.

29th. "There being no probability of further intercourse with the natives in these parts of the globe, we now return to the true time of England, from which we digressed on our arrival at Oahu, to prevent mistakes: but the log book of the 'Henry Freeling' underwent no alteration, and is now dated the 30th of Sixth month, 1836. (*Fifth-day.*) This morning, being fifty miles from Tauai, the loom of the island, under a bank of clouds, was but just discernible.—Cloudy weather, but a wind that enabled us to steer a steady course to the south south-east.

"When on the point of leaving the harbour of Honolulu, at Oahu, when there could be no further communication between us and the parties concerned, a letter was received from the General Meeting of the American mission, signed by all the members, of which the following is a copy. I have subjoined it for the perusal of my dear friends, trusting that they will not permit its contents to transpire into improper channels.

*Copy, dated Honolulu, June 16th, 1836.*

"Daniel Wheeler,

"Dear friend,

"We, the missionaries of the Sandwich Islands, feel ourselves happy to have the opportunity of reciprocating the kindness and sympathy which you and our young friend, your esteemed son Charles Wheeler, have manifested to us and our families during the period of five and a half months, while you have sojourned and laboured with us. We have hailed your arrival in this country with gladness, and welcomed your visit to our stations with much pleasure. We have read your credentials from York and London with care, and have been cheered by the Christian spirit which they breathe. We have been refreshed by your interesting account of the origin and progress of your enterprise, and by your earnest and repeated evangelical appeals to our people. You have seen with what readiness of mind we have interpreted your dis-

courses to the people and endeavoured to facilitate your work. And we now tender you our thanks for your kind co-operation in our work, with which you have been enabled, by the great Head of the church, to favour us. Your design to preach 'the unsearchable riches of Christ' in the isles and on the shores of this great ocean, for an indefinite but protracted period, at such a remove from the comforts of home and all you held dear on earth, must, we are aware, (for we are acquainted with the nature of the service,) be attended with sacrifices, toils, and cares, in which none but the Divine arm can sustain you. But this arm Divine has thus far sustained you. For this we would unite with you in thanksgiving 'to the Father of lights, from whom cometh down every good and perfect gift;' and with you would we rejoice in the assurance that it will sustain you still. Take courage, dear friend, and go on with your good work. Do what is in your power to pour the light of the sun of righteousness upon the people which sit in darkness, upon the tribes on whom the star-light of nature nightly shines, and upon the isles over which the day-star of grace has arisen. Accompanied and aided by your own beloved son, sustained and guided by the adorable Spirit of God; may you be enabled to do much to dry the fountain of intemperance and licentiousness which threaten such desolations in every quarter of the globe, and to hasten the universal diffusion of revealed truth. We bid you God speed, while you proclaim to perishing men the glad tidings of salvation through a crucified and exalted Saviour; while with self-sacrifice and devotedness to Christ you labour 'to turn men from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God.' Pray for us, that we may be found faithful in this work, and that the Gospel may have free course and be glorified. And now, as you are convinced that our Master calls you to leave us to prosecute the service you have to perform for Him in other isles and coasts, we bid you and your son an affectionate farewell, and part with you as with valued friends whom we hope to meet in peace, when the sacrifices, and toils, and trials of a missionary life are ended. 'The Lord bless thee and keep thee. The Lord make his face to shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee. The Lord lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace. Not unto us, but to God be the glory.' Your affectionate friends,"

Signed,

ASA THURSTON,  
HIRAM BINGHAM,  
SAMUEL WHITNEY,  
WILLIAM RICHARDS,  
LEVI CHAMBERLAIN,  
ARTEMAS BISHOP,  
LORRIN ANDREWS,  
JOHN SMITH GREEN,  
PETER J. GULICK,

EPHRAIM WESTON CLARK,  
GERRIT P. JUDD,  
DWIGHT BALDWIN,  
REUBEN TINKER,  
HENRY DIMOND,  
SHELDON DIBBLE,  
TITUS COAN,  
HENRY H. HITCHCOCK,  
JOHN S. EMERSON,

DAVID B. LYMAN,  
EPHRAIM SPALDING,  
RICHARD ARMSTRONG,  
COCHRANE FORBES,  
WM. P. ALEXANDER,  
EDMUND H. ROGERS,  
LOWEL SMITH,  
BENJ. W. PARKER,  
EDWIN O. HALL.



*Copy of a Note annexed to the above letter.*

"Dear friend, it gives me great pleasure to assure you and your esteemed son, Charles Wheeler, of my cordial concurrence with the members of the mission at these islands, in the expression they have made of their feelings toward you and the work in which you are engaged.

"Affectionately your friend, JOHN DEILL,

"Seamen's Chaplain, Sandwich Islands.

"TO DANIEL WHEELER."

An acknowledgment of the receipt of this document was sent to Oahu by the British consul, Richard Charlton, as before hinted at, a copy of which now follows, with the substance of what quickened upon my mind to the members of the mission.

*"To the Members of the Mission at the Sandwich Islands."*

"Dear friends,

"Your joint communication, replete with the expression of brotherly kindness and regard, was put into my hand just as we were quitting the shores of Oahu. Although utterly unmerited on my part, yet I feel compelled to accept it, from a belief in the purity of those motives by which it was dictated, while at the same time, the feeling is awakened that to me belongs only 'blushing and confusion of face.' I rejoice in the opportunity so soon afforded me to acknowledge its receipt, and more especially because I had felt my mind drawn towards you, before I saw its contents, desiring more and more that you may individually become acquainted with the binding influence of that love, which many waters cannot quench, 'unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.' I desire for you, my friends, all that you can possibly desire for yourselves, believing that your principal desire is to be true followers of Him who said, 'If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.' These are the express and explicit terms of discipleship, to which unqualified obedience is required; and from which all reservations are inadmissible: let us examine then how far these indispensable conditions are submitted to on our part. If we profess to follow the great and heavenly example of 'Him who died for us and rose again,' in which all the graces of earthly perfection are combined, in all our actions before men, let us, my friends, be complete, and do it also in all our words: let our language to and before men be like His. Surely we ought to be content to use the language which he himself uttered and accepted of men. His words are pure words: they are wholesome words: and we ought to consent to the words of our Lord Jesus Christ. Then let us be willing to follow the Lord of life and glory: if we

carry his example fairly out, our speech will bewray us and show that we are his disciples indeed: we shall find that this brings us at once to the foot of the cross; the daily cross: without this we are strangers to the self-denying holy cross: and if we do not bear the cross, we can never wear the crown. Then let us not fear to confess our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, nor be ashamed of Him and his word, before men, remembering the awful declaration which bears upon all and applies to all, 'Whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven;' and 'whosoever shall be ashamed of me and my words before this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.' This has been put into my heart in love towards you: in the same love it is written, and in which I trust it will be received, from your affectionate friend,

"DANIEL WHEELER.

"My son Charles unites with me in an assurance of grateful acknowledgment and regard for your kind remembrance of him.

"P. S. The oppressed condition of the natives of this island is truly affecting, and prompts me to remind my constant friend, Hiram Bingham, of the address that was presented to the king, Kinau, &c., at his house, to whose care the printing of it was committed.

"*'Henry Freeling,' in the road of Waimea, Isle of Tauai,  
27th of Sixth month, 1836.*"

---

## CHAPTER XV.

Re-cross the Equator—Hervey Islands—land upon the Island of Roratogna—friendly reception—school—native meetings—the three mission stations—kindness of the natives—increase of population—remarks on leaving the Hervey Islands—letter from a native scholar—sail for the Friendly Isles.

"Without entering into the particular details of the voyage, (which can be but of little interest to those on shore,) we directed our course towards the Equator, endeavouring as much as circumstances would permit, to keep to the eastward, in the hope of fetching the island of Roratogna, one of the Hervey Isles, which lies in latitude  $21^{\circ} 31'$  south of the line, and longitude  $160^{\circ}$ . After witnessing the usual variety of changes in the winds and weather, and the thunder-storms to which these latitudes are subject, we were favoured to cross the Equator about three o'clock in the morning of the 19th of Seventh month, in health and safety, and at noon were in latitude forty miles south; longitude by lunar observation  $160^{\circ}$  west. Not a single vessel was seen during the whole pas

sage; and although we must have passed near several of the islands scattered upon the surface of the ocean, both north and south of the line, yet none of them were sighted until first-day, the 31st., when at day-break in the morning, the island of Roratogna was discovered about seven leagues to windward of us. The morning was then calm, but at nine o'clock, A. M. we stretched away to the E. N. E. with a light breeze, there being no alternative but that of endeavouring to beat up to it, although it was a little mortifying to perceive, that the settled trade-wind blew directly from it. Having by dint of exertion gained ground, one of the missionary stations could plainly be discerned to leeward of the island on second-day afternoon. This was known by the appearance of a large building, which, with some others about it, was white-washed, and had a neat appearance. We then stood to the southward until the other missionary station was visibly open to our view, and near enough to observe a number of the natives upon the look out, who had no doubt descried the approach of a strange vessel to their shores. As the wind still blew strongly against us, we could not get sufficiently near the coast to entice the canoes to come off before the night closed in; so we hovered within a short distance of the island until the next morning, the 2nd of Eighth month: when, at an early hour, a boat was seen coming from the shore from the first station observed yesterday, which in due time reached the 'Henry Freeling.' We were enabled to understand from our visitors, that we were off the station of Charles Pitman, the missionary, with whom and with his wife, we became acquainted at the island of Tahiti, last year. They were at that time in a weak state of health, and it seemed very doubtful whether they would ever be able (particularly Charles Pitman,) to return to the island of Roratogna. It was very satisfactory to find they were restored to their duty in improved health, more especially as our way seemed at once fairly opened to enter upon this new scene of labour, by the means being thus marvellously provided, as there was no other resident missionary at that time upon the island. I sent a note back by the boat to say, we were now permitted to greet them from the very edge of Roratogna, and only waited information, as to the practicability of our vessel finding a place of safe anchorage, &c. This boat was soon discovered to be again coming off, and on near approach, Charles Pitman himself, proved to be on board of her. We had scarcely time to congratulate each other after he had reached the deck, before he became sea-sick from the tossing of our vessel. As he was unable to converse, we concluded to return to the shore with him immediately—he remained in the air while we threw off our sea-garments, and we then put off together for the shore. He began to revive as we got into smoother water, and after landing, soon came round again. As we drew nigh the strand, it became densely covered with an innumerable host of children, who at once



hailed us as their friends: it was with difficulty that we could pass along for them, as these delighted little naked fellows completely choaked up the avenue through a grove of bananas, which leads to the mission-house, struggling who should first get hold of our hands; and if but a finger could be laid hold of, it seemed quite to satisfy them. This banana grove was of Charles Pitman's own planting. Soon after reaching the house, the floor was studded over with natives squatted on every side, the elders of the people coming forward to salute us, and welcome us to their island. After some consideration and inquiry had taken place, it was concluded that the people should be generally convened to-morrow morning in that district, and a meeting held at eleven o'clock, A. M. The afternoon, towards sun-down, would have been preferred on some accounts, but this would unavoidably have thrown us into the dark, and thereby rendered our return to the 'Henry Freeling' doubly hazardous. After partaking of some simple refreshment, we looked round the village of Gnatagnia, and then prepared to return to our vessel. When leaving her in the morning, we took with us an English Union Jack, for the purpose of hoisting upon a lofty bamboo, or cocoa-nut tree, as a signal for Captain Keen to stand in as close to the reefs as was prudent, on seeing this flag displayed upon the shore, to save the labour of the people in the boat, and to afford us every chance of smooth water. When this flag was put up, we were told that it was the first time the English flag had been planted upon the island of Roratogna; very peaceable possession had been taken of the island on the occasion, at any rate, and one in which a most cordial reception was strongly evinced, in a degree of that love which casteth out fear from every breast, and makes every man a brother. We were favoured to get well on board, and then purchased a few fowls and vegetables of the native crew, more with a view to please, than from a want of fresh provisions, &c., on our part.

"Our meeting with the natives to-morrow is now entirely dependent upon the elements, a shift of wind may compel us to seek safety, by flying from the island before the returning morning; but having done our best, we must cast all our burden and all our care upon Him, who alone can bring it to pass, before whom my mind is humbled and bowed down, imploring help and strength; that the righteous cause may not be tarnished in our feeble hands, but rather that the Lord's name may be exalted and glorified, and the Gospel of the dear Redeemer's spiritual kingdom faithfully declared to these people, until the thanksgiving of many shall redound to the glory and praise of the riches of that all-saving Grace and Truth which came by Him, bringing salvation unto all mankind the world over.

3d of Eighth month, 1836. "The morning was beautifully fine, but having crept a long distance from the island during the darkness, and the breeze now being very light, our progress shoreward

again was very slow. Although about one-half of our masts only could be seen above the horizon when the day broke, yet the natives had the sagacity to perceive by the position of our sails, that we were steering towards the shore, and immediately put off with Charles Pitman's boat. Our own boats had been too long in a dry state, to be trust-worthy, and as there was no harbour that could be entered with prudence, for shelter, all our hands were required on board, as the vessel was liable to be blown off to sea at all times. Charles Pitman's boat, although a clumsy one, was therefore regarded as a privilege and addition to our comforts. From our distance in the offing, it was nearly nine o'clock, A. M., before this boat got to the vessel, but desirous of rendering every assistance in his power, Alexander Cunningham, a person whom we had known last autumn at Eimeo, now endeavouring to establish a sugar plantation on his own account at Roratogna, came off in her; having some knowledge of the language, he came principally to interpret between us and the natives, should occasion require it. While the breeze freshened a little, and the vessel was enabled to steer towards the mouth of the channel through the reef, we kept on board, but on approaching the coast the wind began to die away, and we then proceeded more rapidly in the boat. On landing we were met by several hundreds of the natives, (a large proportion of them boys,) and after remaining some time at the mission-house, we looked into the school for the least scholars; some of whom read to all appearance very readily. In the large school we heard several of the boys and girls read verse after verse alternately in one of the Evangelists, and were informed that fifteen hundred copies of the Four Evangelists, had been recently received from England, via Tahiti: some of these were read audibly, and we were told correctly. After some further examination by catechising, a hymn was sung, and the schools then broke up in an orderly manner, and proceeded towards the meeting-house.

"While a silent spectator in the schools, the love of the Divine Master flowed in my heart towards these dear children, an encouraging and sealing evidence, that strength and ability would not be wanting to proclaim the glad tidings of his Gospel, in his time. The house was filled, and held upwards of two thousand people. We remained upon the floor of the building, whilst Charles Pitman read my certificates, and explained to the people the nature of my visit, I believe to the utmost in his power. During this time it was very evident, that if Charles Pitman had been speaking by my side, half of the people at least could not have heard him, and therefore I thought it best to promote his remaining in his pulpit by joining him there. I remained quiet, however, until he had thoroughly finished, and then went up and stood in silence by his side, for a short interval, when it was with me to turn the attention of the gazing islanders to the 'God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,'

that the great object of our thus being permitted to assemble together, might be fully realized and fulfilled, and the blessing which prevailed to the utmost bound of the everlasting hills, might rest upon us. After this, I had largely to declare the things which belong unto their peace, and to turn them to the 'Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world,'—that they might know Him to be so indeed from blessed reality, by believing in the light of the Holy Spirit which shineth in every heart, as a light in a dark place—that by believing in this light, and taking heed thereunto, they would be made sensible of the darkness of their own hearts; and the exceeding sinfulness of sin would be plainly set before them, until that sorrow would be begotten, which worketh repentance, never to be repented of, because the salvation of the soul is its end. It was for this the Saviour died, that mankind might no longer walk in darkness, but in the light of life; that as sin hath heretofore reigned in us unto death, so now might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord. It was a solemn season, the power of the Lord reigned over all, and his own works rendered living praises unto Him and the Son of his love. After the meeting broke up, sometime was occupied in noticing the people, who remained in crowds about us. It was agreed with Charles Pitman, that the people at Aaron Buzacott's station, about eight miles distant, should that evening be informed of my intention to visit them to-morrow, and that the meeting should be requested to gather at an early hour in the forenoon, to allow sufficient time for my return to the vessel. While we rested and refreshed, the preconcerted signal was made, and the 'Henry Freeling' coming pretty close to the island, we got safely on board before dark.

4th. "Having an overland journey to perform, I repaired to the shore in good time, and with the assistance of eight stout natives, to bear me alternately four and four upon their shoulders when wearied, this journey was accomplished with comparative ease. The great heat of the sun when it shines, renders the exercise of travelling on foot too fatiguing to the European constitution, and highly imprudent to be persisted in beyond short distances. At this station (Avarua,) we had a fine meeting, more than 2500 persons were present. My certificates were read as usual, and I had largely to publish the glad tidings of the everlasting Gospel amongst them, to my own peace. Although at first standing up I was much depressed, as one that had no might and ready to faint, yet as I endeavoured to keep close to my heavenly guide, strength proportionate to the day, and confidence, were graciously extended to my humble admiration. Many blessed and encouraging truths were given me to spread before the people, to the exaltation, I humbly trust, of the Most High God,—and his name and power was magnified, who in the greatness of His love and strength came to seek and to save that which was lost, by the



cleansing and purifying operation of His Holy Spirit in the heart of man, if believed in, looked for, and yielded unto in the obedience of faith. The meeting held late, the people were very solid and attentive, and my feeling, sympathizing and faithful interpreter, could not help acknowledging the blessing with which we had been favoured as a crowning evidence that day. The people seemed reluctant to separate, and many of them followed us to the dwelling of the absent missionary, where we partook of a repast, which had been kindly prepared for our accommodation. The king, or principal chief, Makea, joined us; he was desirous of making a present of supplies for the vessel, this however was declined, and his kind intention acknowledged with gratitude. This chief's sister, once dined on board the 'Henry Freeling,' with Pomare, the queen of Tahiti, when we were lying in the bay of Paapeete, at that island a year ago, and was mentioned in the Extracts, &c., of my Journal of that day, as the sister of the king of Roratogna. She was at the meeting, and came to me in a very kind and agreeable manner before it commenced, and after it was over; Charles Pitman gave me a pleasing account of her stability of conduct and example.—Several questions were put to us on religious subjects, through Charles Pitman, by Makea and others, who attended, and I had an opportunity of telling them what great things the Lord had done for them, and the principal work they had to do in return, was to labour in the vineyard of their own hearts, &c. We got back to Gnatagnia station before sun-setting, and I then for the first time found that there was an out-station twelve miles distant on the other side of the island, the people of which had not been at either of the meetings that had been held. I rather shrunk at the receipt of this information, but principally I believe owing to the continued exposed situation of the vessel; and, perhaps, the weak state of my Charles might throw an additional weight into the scale of discouragement on the occasion. Without making any remark, I concluded not to stop over the tea which was then ready, but return immediately on board, under a faint expectation of being on shore again to-morrow, and perhaps getting to the out-station in question, called Aroragne, on the seventh-day, and be in a state of forwardness to leave the range of the island altogether, late in the evening, if that was permitted, and which, on many accounts, appeared desirable at the moment. I was favoured to reach the vessel at the edge of dark. As the evening advanced, blackness and darkness began to gather to the southward, incessant lightning followed with distant peals of thunder, at the same time the wind began to freshen from the westward, a very unusual quarter, as the regular trade-wind almost constantly prevails from the south-east, over all others. It was now apprehended that this unexpected change in the weather, and the wild appearance of the atmosphere, would prove the forerunners of a heavy tempest, and the captain thought it advisable,

under these circumstances, to haul away from the island under a press of canvass, which would at any rate remove every apprehension of suffering from its crags and reefs. We passed a very rugged night, and at four o'clock in the morning, were assailed with a tremendous squall of wind, which seemed to dispel in great measure the most threatening indications of the atmosphere.

5th. "Heavy rain and rough weather ushered in the new morning, and when the day was thoroughly established, we were found to be so far off the island, as to render the whole length of day insufficient for us to resume our former position, so as to have the usual intercourse with its inhabitants. This being conclusive, the day was expended in preparing and collecting many of our commodities wanted as presents, and to purchase supplies of some articles the most needed, and also in searching out a stock of clothing and materials, for the purpose of relieving the wants and sufferings of the poor naked children, who were often shivering with the present cold. The climate of this island is stated to have become much cooler within the last three or four years than it was formerly. The heat of the sun is excessive during the day, but the nights and mornings are chilly, and the dews very heavy.

6th. "After a very tossing and almost sleepless night, I felt much cast down at the situation of things around us, and seemed inclined to lay aside every attempt to effect a landing upon the island to-day, although we had got into an eligible position for the purpose during the night: I did not feel clear of this out-station at Aroragne, and yet there had been no opportunity for an arrangement to be made for it, or the needful notice given of an intended meeting; but before getting up, the way was made plain before me that would lead to peace and tranquillity of mind, to insure which, I found that I must land to-day at Gnatagnia,—attend the meeting here to-morrow, and on second-day go off to the out-station at Aroragne: to this I felt resigned, and then told Charles, that this was the only way for me to proceed with safety. Every exertion was made to push the 'Henry Freeling' within the range of tolerably smooth water, and the natives who had been anxiously watching our motions, on seeing these movements, launched the boat and put out to sea to meet us. The health of my Charles was so favourably restored, as to allow him to accompany me, and having got our stores, &c. safely into the boat, we again pushed off for the shore, and on landing, were welcomed by the cheerful countenances of the islanders as usual. On reaching the missionary dwelling, I told our kind host and hostess, that we were now come to take up our abode with them in earnest. On explaining the prospect then before me, Charles Pitman expressed much satisfaction at the probability of the Aroragne people being visited. I left directions with Captain Keen, to stand close in with the island once every day if practicable, and when ready to embark, the flag should be hoisted by us as before agreed upon. The remaining

part of the day was fully occupied among the people, in making trifling purchases and bestowing rewards, &c.

7th. (*First-day.*) "After breakfast this morning, the Bible was laid before me, according to the usual practice of giving preference to the stranger, who at once undertakes to read a chapter, and afterwards to go forward with a prayer. When I had finished reading, we remained in silence. I had a secret hope this circumstance might lead into serious consideration at a future day, as to the practice of Friends on these occasions.

"The time of the native meeting now drew nigh, at the thoughts of which my mind was greatly humbled and cast down, and yet I felt a sustaining confidence that my being here was in the right ordering; for if my own inclination could have been gratified and followed, we should have been this morning out of sight of the island altogether. Charles Pitman might have observed my sunken condition, for previously to setting out for the meeting, he seemed desirous to ascertain whether I should speak to the people or not. I told him this was very uncertain, but from the manner in which this thing had been brought about, which was certainly not in mine own will, it was by no means improbable but that I might have something to say to them. The house was well filled when we reached it, and Charles Pitman at once ascended the pulpit, but I remained upon the ground floor, as one having no part to take or lot in the matter, and, I trust, in a state something similar to that of passive clay, willing to be anything or nothing, to do or to suffer in secret with the suffering seed. Charles Pitman went on with the usual services, as if he had little expectation of any interference on my part, but when the second singing was concluded, the way seemed at once to open for my going to him. On my getting into the pulpit, such was my blank condition, that I told him we must proceed slowly, for I should have to look well for the stepping stones to get along with safety. We stood some time in silence together, when my mouth was opened with our blessed Lord's declaration, 'there is joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons that need no repentance.' Such is the everlasting mercy, and boundless love of God, to his creature man, that he willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all should repent, forsake the evil of their ways, return unto Him, and live for ever. For this the Saviour came; not to condemn, but to save a guilty world. Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners from the wrath to come—that we might have life, and that we might have it more abundantly. He purchased for poor, lost, finite man, the unspeakable gift of the Holy Spirit, by the sacrifice of Himself, on the blood-stained cross, 'the just for the unjust, that he might bring us unto God,' who 'so loved the world, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.' But none can be benefitted by the coming and



sufferings of the Lord Jesus, without an implicit belief in him. A mere belief in the outward fact of His coming in the flesh upon the earth, will not suffice.—How many in this our day, fall short of coming to the knowledge of the only ‘true God and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent, which is life eternal,’ through an evil heart of unbelief! When the Saviour of men was personally upon the earth, and men beheld his glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth; his mighty works were few in some places, because of the unbelieving hearts of the people, and he had frequently to upbraid the doubting, unbelieving multitude, for their hardness of heart; and there were found among his own disciples, that were slow of heart to believe respecting Him. ‘Except ye see signs and wonders ye will not believe,’ was his language on one occasion, ‘but blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.’ Great indeed was my desire that these simple-hearted islanders might not be faithless, but believing; that joy, unspeakable, and full of glory, might be theirs.

“For about an hour and a-half, I was drawn forth to plead with these dear people, in the love of the Gospel, that they might be reconciled to God, for Christ’s sake, for their own souls’ sake, and ours also, because of the truth as it is in Jesus. It was indeed a glorious meeting, and ought to be commemorated with humblest gratitude and praise.

“My faithful interpreter was almost overcome with the sense of the working of the Lord’s Almighty power. When the spring was closed up, he spoke to me in allusion to my having said, on first going into the pulpit, that ‘I should have to look well for the stepping stones to get along with safety,’—saying, that he soon found I had got upon good ground from the feelings he experienced; but the sentence of death was mine; and though I have truly nothing to boast of but weakness and infirmity, both of late, much and evidently increased, yet how can I do less than cause the voice of the praise of my God, to be heard by faithfully testifying to that loving-kindness, which is better than life; his work is honourable and glorious—his righteousness endureth for ever. I sat down in nothingness and weakness; the creature was laid in the dust, as one that owed unto his Lord, far more than ‘five hundred pence,’ many times multiplied, and had nothing to pay with; self-convicted, and as one to whom all which had been spoken most fully applied. Although the meeting had held long, before I took any part in it, and was then prolonged to an unseasonable length, the people retained their seats, as if fearful of disturbing the covering which was permitted to overshadow us; and they continued in stillness, after we came down upon the floor to them; but on my remarking to Charles Pitman, that the people did not seem willing to go away, he said a few sentences to them, after which they quietly withdrew.

8th. “Rose at the earliest cock-crowing this morning, and pre-

pared to set forward for Aroragne. The night having been squally, and the morning opening with showers of rain, it was thought the exposure and fatigue would be more than my Charles could support, as the present state of his health rendered any thing bordering on risk, unwarrantable; it was therefore concluded best that he should remain at Gnatagnia. Charles complied with this determination rather reluctantly, being desirous of rendering assistance in any way within his power, and not liking to be so separated from the scene of duty. Charles Pitman and myself moved forward, he on horse back, and myself in the usual way, with a body of natives, ten in number.

"The rain made it cooler for the work, and seemed to make no impression, as it fell on their well-oiled skins: the burning and dazzling white sand on which we travelled, was nicely cooled by the showers, and retained a refreshing temperature while the atmosphere remained cloudy; but on our return in the afternoon, the sun was burning hot, and the weather totally changed. Notice having been timely given, we found the people prepared to receive us, and the meeting was soon collected, to the number of 1500 persons. Being a stranger on this side the island, my certificates were read as usual, at the commencement; an arrangement always preferred by myself, from having so often witnessed it to bring the people into stillness and attention, and also to renew a fresh feeling of the precious unity and sympathy of my dear brethren and sisters far away, and the remembrance of them, under these circumstances, in the love and fellowship of the Gospel, brings strength, while it softens the heart. I remained upon the floor, with a crowd of natives squatted about me, and having now no one near me, that I had ever seen before, I felt like a stranger indeed. When the time arrived, I went to Charles Pitman, and eventually broke the silence by reminding the people of Him who knoweth our down-sitting and up-rising, and understandeth our thoughts afar off: yea, there is not a word in our tongue but He knoweth it altogether: 'all things are naked, and opened to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.' None of us can by any means redeem his brother, or give to God a ransom for him,—that our salvation must be wrought out by ourselves, and that with fear and trembling. But sinful and impotent as we are, the means for the accomplishment of this great work, are mercifully placed within the reach of all through the unutterable love of God, in Christ Jesus, our crucified, risen, and glorified Lord. In order to partake of this, so great and universal salvation conferred upon mankind, by the 'God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,' we must come to the experimental knowledge of Him, who is the eternal author of it all. He tasted death for every man, and by the awful sacrifice of himself, not only procured for a guilty world the remission of sins that are past, but the unspeakable gift of the Holy Spirit—'I am the light of the world,' said Christ, 'he that followeth me

shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.' Those who believe in this light, and walk in this light, who bring their thoughts, words, and deeds to it, and obey its manifestations, are they who love Christ and keep his commandments, for Christ is the light; and in thus doing they love God, for God is light; 'I, and my Father are one.' 'If we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.' The spring of the everlasting Gospel flowed freely to this people, and in its authority I was enabled to appeal unto themselves, and make them their own living witnesses to the in-shining of 'the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ' in their own hearts;—that although it was their lot to dwell in a remote part of the globe, on a small spot in the midst of the ocean, they were alike the objects of everlasting and redeeming love, with those who inhabited every other part of the Lord's earth, and for them the precious blood of Christ was shed, as for me, and mine, and all mankind. The people were invited to repent, believe, and obey the Gospel, and they would find it to be the power of God unto salvation, through the power of the Holy Spirit. And as they came to enjoy the blessedness of those that believe in Jesus, and walk in His light, in obedience to its discoveries, their hearts will be changed, and become more and more turned towards their dear children, than is at present the case, that they also might with them partake in the joys of God's salvation. It was a memorable season, and I trust will not soon be forgotten.

"After noticing the people we repaired to a native teacher's house, and partook of some cooling refreshment of which we both stood in need. On our return to Gnatagnia, we stopped to examine a new place of worship, sixty feet square, which is building of coral, or agglomerated sand and shells, and nearly complete to the roof. This structure is carried on under the direction of A. Cunningham. We reached the mission house too late to embark, on account of there being several matters yet to attend to, though the 'Henry Freeling' was hovering at the time pretty near the southernmost end of the island.

9th. "Several articles being now wanted from the vessel, in order to discharge the debts contracted, and yet to be incurred, for hogs, vegetables, and labour in the overland journies and in the boat, &c., it was concluded that Charles should undertake to go on board to procure these things, while I, with the assistance of Charles Pitman, endeavoured to procure what was wanting, and make every arrangement calculated to forward my intention of quitting the shores of Roratogna towards evening. I cannot omit mentioning the kind behaviour of the natives last evening after our return from Aroragne. They were probably aware that the time was at hand for our final departure from the island, and the house of the missionary was like a fair the whole time—they seemed to



vie with each other in doing any thing they thought would please—several of the young women applied, through Charles Pitman, for permission to rub my feet, and legs, and knees, in the manner in which they are accustomed to perform the operation upon the persons of their chiefs, when greatly fatigued—saying, that I had had a very long journey that day, and must be weary, and in need of what they could do. I was not very partial to this method of relief, but did not like to appear to slight their simple offer; but I was afterwards surprised to find in how short a time all aches and pains of weariness, were entirely removed by their persevering diligence—several of them were at work at the same time, and trying who could do the most. Upon this island we had the satisfaction to see a great increase of population, the children swarmed about its shores like bees, and I think Charles Pitman said, the schools are attended by 3000 of different ages and both sexes. The houses of the natives are mostly constructed with some degree of uniformity, neatly white-washed, with roads of broken shells made up to many of them for a public road for travelling upon, and the people seem to live generally in a state of enjoyment. The fruit and vegetables usually found upon the isles of the Pacific abound, as the island is like a well-watered hot-bed. The lofty mountains in its centre, obstruct the passage of the clouds, and cause an abundant supply of rain. But what conduces most to the comfort and real happiness of the people, and causes an increasing population, is the circumstance of there being no good harbour for shipping; they have, consequently, very slight intercourse with the English and American sailors, and are therefore free from that dreadful disease, the blasting influence of which, is fast depopulating every other isle which our footsteps have traversed: to this truth, may be added another originating in the same cause,—there is no rum dealer upon the island; ardent spirit is a curse entailed upon most others by these scourges of the human race, either publicly or privately introduced by the shipping. The remains of the wreck of the *Charles Doggett*, an American vessel, was lying upon the reefs of Roratogna—it appears that no lives were lost—the cargo was saved by the natives, consisting principally of pearl shells, and cocoa-nut oil, the crew had been happily shipped off by another vessel that touched there shortly afterwards. This vessel we met with at Tahiti last year, she put in twice, and was then in the very act of diffusing her rum, muskets, and gunpowder, amongst the islands, for cocoa-nut oil, pearl shells, arrow root, &c. She was now prosecuting another voyage, and had been fitted out at Sidney, New South Wales, where her owners, one or more, reside, and where many others reside who are accumulating wealth by a traffic which promotes the destruction of their fellow-men.

“After discharging all our debts, and affording as many supplies to our friends, and for the benefit of the dear children, as we could spare, we took our last meal with Charles and Elizabeth

Pitman, and bade a final adieu to the shores of Roratogna, and its swarthy tribes, as to the outward, but to memory lastingly precious, though as far distant as the east is from the west.

"The 'Henry Freeling' anticipated our movement, and stretched in upon the coast, when the boat made its appearance; and we were favoured to get safely on board at half-past three o'clock in the afternoon. A——— M'Donald, and Alexander Cunningham accompanied us, and returned with the boat again to the shore. We got in our numerous articles without being materially injured by the spray of the sea, and at four o'clock filled our sails and bore away to the westward; cleared the southernmost point and its crags before dark; and at midnight, were at least fifty miles from this interesting and highly favoured little island. There are four small islands inhabited, which comprise the Hervey group besides that of Roratogna, but not one missionary amongst them all. Our friend, Charles Pitman, feeble as he is, would, I have no hesitation in believing, have freely devoted his remaining strength to our service, and united in a visit to them with us, had his fellow-missionary, Aaron Buzacott, been at his own station at Avorua, but the absence of the latter, deprived us of an interpreter, without which, such a visit would have been in vain; I think I should not have been satisfied to pass them by, could one have been obtained. The names of these islands are, Magnaia, Atiu, Aitutaki, Mitiaro, or Mauki; their population is estimated at 5,900 people. These islands are now and then visited by a missionary from Roratogna: such a circumstance must, however, be very rare, as they have no means of travelling within their reach, it can therefore only occur when a vessel comes down from the Georgian or Society group, to range amongst them, to collect cocoa-nut oil, arrow root, &c.; there are, however, some native teachers distributed among them from Roratogna. This group was first discovered by our countryman, Captain Cook, and was afterwards named the Hervey Islands. It is with much satisfaction I have learned, that our valuable interpreter, Samuel Wilson, who accompanied us round Tahiti, in 1835, is now an appointed missionary by the London Society to the station of Aroragne, on the south side of Roratogna.

"Our visit to Roratogna cannot, I think, on various accounts, be soon obliterated from our minds, or pass away as a tale that is told: the retrospect of the highly favoured seasons, so condescendingly permitted to crown the different assemblies of the people, only brightens the more as the days are increased, which throw the scene of such love and such mercy still further and further behind. The circumstance of the 'Henry Freeling' having to beat about during the whole time that occupied, rendered it doubly hazardous on her account, as well as made our different trips to the shore much more difficult and protracted; the boisterous state of the weather and the trade wind coming round both ends of the island, and then meeting, placed the boat and ourselves in a pre-

carious situation, when getting in or out of the vessel, and the wet necessarily encountered, in passing to and fro by boat, are occurrences, which, although at the time somewhat irksome and hindering, when over, are not worthy to be recorded, because of the peace, and love, and sweetness that flowed from the everlasting fountain and source of all our sure mercies, even exceeding the hundred fold promised to those that leave all for Christ's sake, and his Gospel, to the praise of Him whose faithfulness faileth not, be it spoken. Before leaving Roratogna, I received several letters from some of the most capable scholars in the school at Gnatagnia, which were literally translated to us: one of which I subjoin as a specimen, which will suffice for the whole, as they are nearly in the same strain. It is from Tekori, a boy of about sixteen years of age.

“This is my speech to you, Daniel Wheeler—read it, that you may know great is our joy in seeing your face, and in knowing your speech of God's great kindness to you. Attend, I will relate to you the coming of God's word to us. We were heathens formerly—we did not know the living God Jehovah. At that time the devil was our God—we worshipped him, and did that which is agreeable to his will—that was our true condition formerly, Daniel Wheeler. Attend, then arrived the season in which the word of the great God came to us—even of Jehovah, and the word of God spread among us in that season—still listen—God sent his servants to us, to inform us of the true way. Then the light sprung up in the midst of us. The word spoken by Isaiah, the prophet, was then fulfilled, chap. lx. verse 1. ‘Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee.’ Behold, the light of Jehovah came to this land, and the light of Jehovah dawned upon us. Then the word of God spread on this land. The children know the word of God. Pitman taught us unweariedly, and in this likewise, behold the love of God to us. Our friend and brother, Daniel Wheeler, I think of the kindness of God in conveying you from your land—from Britain. You have been directed by God, to this land and that land—you have witnessed his loving kindness—you have seen what has occurred in the deep—the mighty power of God. He will not forsake those who put their trust in Him. Friend, when you go to visit this land, and that land, we will pray to God, that he may safely conduct you to the land, whither you wish to go, and that He may carry you safely to your own land. Friend, now go, we have met—you have seen our face in Roratogna, and we have seen your face. Observe, one thing yet remains.—When we shall be assembled with the word of God, of the blessed—in that world of joy, the good people of Britain will know those of Roratogna, and the good people of Roratogna, will know those of Britain, and then will be known the true state of that land, and this land. This is a little speech of com-



passion toward you—may you be preserved in your voyaging.—And now, may the grace of God be granted to us—even so—Amen.

“From Tekori, that is all I have to say.”

16th. “Since quitting the neighbourhood of Roratogna, our course has been directed, when the weather would permit, towards the Friendly Islands, which lie in a westerly direction from the Hervey group, at a distance of from eleven to twelve hundred miles; but having now to traverse near the edge of the trade latitude, the winds became much more unstable—sometimes directly opposed to our proceeding, and often boisterous, with as much sea as our little vessel could at times well bear. Nothing material occurred on the passage from Roratogna; our devotional duties were attended to as usual, and though Charles and myself had much to contend with, from the heat of the climate, and our narrow limits in the cabin, during our endeavours to draw nigh unto the Lord—yet, there is ample encouragement, notwithstanding human weakness and frailty, and the hindering things to which these poor bodies are subject, for all to persevere in wrestling for the blessing, with the humble resolution of the Patriarch, ‘I will not let thee go, until thou bless me.’ It was expected, I believe, by all on board, that we should steer for the island of Tongataboo, but a variety of circumstances operated upon my mind, to produce a determination to aim in the first place at the northernmost island, Vavau: this was so fixed with me, that I told Captain Keen, before we lost sight of Roratogna, the conclusion I had come to, and he made arrangements accordingly to accomplish the object in view. At noon, to-day, it was found from accurate calculation, that the island of Vavau, was only distant about 102 miles. As we were now making rapid progress towards our destination, rolling away before a strong wind and following sea, it was thought that the distance was too short, to warrant running on through the night, and the more so, as the moon was too young to afford any light, when that would be the most needed. Our canvass was accordingly reduced, and at nine o’clock, P. M., we hove too for the night.

17th. “At five o’clock, A. M., bore up and made sail to the westward. At nine o’clock we were cheered with a sight of the island, and immediately stood for the northernmost bluff, with a fresh trade-wind in our favour. At noon, were abreast of the bluff, and hauled round the different headlands as close as was prudent, with a good look out from the mast-head for the breakers. Although furnished with an ample number of nautical charts, yet none afforded specific directions for approaching these shores; and it was perplexing to find that a rough sketch printed by Mariner, (who long resided among the Tonga Isles, and published a history of them,) in our possession, disagreed in toto with two

first-rate charts we had on board, and yet this imperfect sketch furnished to all appearance, the best directions for entering Port Refuge, although certainly never intended as a seaman's guide. On reaching a head-land which we expected would form one side of a spacious bay, in which we were hoping to find shelter, it was found on rounding it, to our great consternation, that island after island began to show itself, until every prospect of finding a port seemed closed up: it remained to be determined, whether we should run out to sea again, or risk an attempt to find shelter, by working into the heart of the group at a venture. Every precaution was used to avoid sunken rocks and shoals, and the colour of the water was our faithful guide. In the course of a few tacks, we seemed to be completely embarrassed amidst this host of enemies, looking in vain on every side for an opening to the place which we had before anticipated to find without any difficulty. There seemed at last no chance of our success, or option left, but that of our taking refuge at sea instead of in the port that bears the name of Refuge, as the sun was rapidly setting. Our captain would gladly have relinquished this hazardous pursuit, and made off while there was day-light to see the way out again; but, we had still some hope left, that the design would be accomplished, and when nearly exhausted, as the day-light receded, and hope sickened within us, the sight of a ship at anchor renewed it again as a charm, and stimulated to more persevering exertion. A second ship was now soon discovered near the first, and seeing an English Jack flying for a pilot, they both displayed the American flag. It soon became dark, but there was as yet no anchorage, we had sounded in vain, and though surrounded by islands on every hand, there was no bottom to be found. The place where these ships were seen, was now our aim, and at length we succeeded in getting near enough to hail the 'Pacific,' of Nantucket, at anchor in twenty-eight fathoms water, but by running a little nearer the shore, we found a sandy bottom, with sixteen fathoms upon it, which, after tumbling about for two months since leaving the roads of Waimea, at the Sandwich Isle Vauai, was accepted with thankfulness. What shall we render unto the Lord Most High? whose goodness and mercy still follow us in the way that we go.—Yea, He delivereth the poor and him that hath no helper. What shall we say, or what shall we do, but wonder, admire, and adore in humble prostration of soul, the fulness and extent of that love, which no tongue can set forth or declare.—It is boundless as His everlasting mercy, filling all space, and unfathomable as the ocean we traverse."

## CHAPTER XVI.

Friendly Islands—*island of Vavau*—Wesleyan missionaries—appearance of the natives—native meetings at *Neiafu*, *Feletoa*, and *Haalaufuli*—appointed meeting for seamen—visit to the island of *Otea*—native meeting—lofty cavern—*King George*—meeting at *Hihifo*—earthquake—meetings at *Matika*—at *Neiafu*—embarkation of the mission families—sail for *Lifuka*.

18th of Eighth month. "This morning the natives began early to visit us, flocking on board with their simple articles of shells and vegetables for barter. Although we usually hold our little meeting on this day of the week, yet the unsettled state of our affairs compelled us to relinquish the attempt, from the confusion around us, produced by the novelty of our vessel, and the unfitness of our own minds. At noon, left the vessel in quest of the missionary station. On reaching the head of the bay, two missionaries were observed coming towards us in a canoe; and, on seeing our boat they returned again to the shore, to point out the most suitable place for landing, and to conduct us to the settlement at *Neiafu*. These were *Stephen Raybone* and *John Spinney*, who had lately arrived from England, via *Sidney*, with their families. In a short time we reached the habitation of *John Thomas*, the senior missionary, who has been for several years engaged upon these islands. Here we met with a kind and friendly reception, and the same offer of assistance which had been extended towards us at other places. We found the whole mission belonging to the Wesleyan Missionary Society exclusively, and these individuals are the first of its members whom we have met with in the Pacific. I left my certificates with *John Thomas* for translation, and, after having been cheered by hearing of our dear friends *James Backhouse* and *George W. Walker*, and of others whom we had known two years ago, both at *Sidney* and *Hobart Town*, at which places the recently arrived missionaries had spent some time waiting for a conveyance to the Friendly Islands, we returned on board.

19th. "Notwithstanding the weather was so wet as to confine us on board, yet the deck was crowded with the natives from morning until evening. Small hogs, vegetables, and abundance of shells seemed to be the whole of their saleable property. They are a fine manly race of people, of the most perfect form we have yet seen; and having as yet had but little intercourse with foreigners upon this island, they are not the victims of wretchedness and disease, which the seamen, every where introduce. Their skins are clean and well oiled, and, in general appearance, they are healthy. The length and roughness of their hair, which is uniformly black, gives them rather a wild and ferocious appearance, until accustomed to be among them; but they are in reality as



gentle and docile as little children. With the exception of an apron of long wiry grass about the waist, they are mostly naked. Taofaahau, on whom the title of King George has been conferred by the missionaries, is now absent at Lifuka, one of the Harbai Islands. He is spoken of very highly, and declared to be a preacher of the Gospel to the people, and the queen, Charlotte, fills the station of class-leader among the female part of the community. It is said, the whole population of the group Haafuluhau, (pronounced Haah-foo-loo-how,) of which Vavau is the largest island; of the Harbai group, of which Lifuka is the most considerable, and a part of Tongataboo have embraced Christianity; the remainder upon this last island are still called heathens. John Hobbs and William Allen Brooks, missionaries from the station at Feletoa, came on board this afternoon to make our acquaintance.

“The object in landing this evening, was principally to inquire at what time I could see the people collected to-morrow morning, my mind having been turned towards a meeting with them. Finding no difficulty in the way, and having the promise of John Thomas to interpret for me, we returned on board. The evening proved wet with thunder and lightning, and the vermin which have greatly increased since we have been in these hot climates, being joined by a fresh supply of mosquitos from the shore, annoyed us extremely, so that there was but little rest to be obtained, to prevent which, the prospect of having new ground to move upon, did not fail to contribute.

21st. (*First-day*.) “Got ready in good time this morning, and taking the mate and four men in the boat, proceeded to Neiafu. On reaching the meeting-house, it appeared that the native worship had commenced much earlier than usual to allow of more time for what might succeed it. We remained outside the building, lest our appearance should tend to confuse, until it was finished, when John Thomas came out and took me to his seat.

“After my certificates were read and explained, I had, after a pause, to turn the people to the great Teacher of all mankind—Christ Jesus, who, when on earth, spoke as never man spoke, and taught as never man taught: the light of whose glorious Gospel bringeth salvation to all that believe in it and obey it. I had been induced to leave all to bring them the glad tidings of this Gospel, which is the power of God unto salvation from sin, that the fulness of this heavenly blessing in all its riches, might be theirs for ever. I was abundantly strengthened by the might of my ever gracious Master, to proclaim to these noble islanders, who form but a small portion of His ‘inheritance,’ the grace and truth which came by Him. Under a feeling of great solemnity their attention was riveted, while listening to the endeavours of a way-worn stranger, to turn them from darkness to the light of Christ in their own hearts, and from the power of Satan unto God, whose mercy endureth for ever. At the close of this meeting another commenced

for the English people, and we had to remain the whole time, as I did not like to take away our four men and the mate, who I supposed had been invited to attend: this circumstance made us late in returning to the vessel.

22nd. "In the forenoon, John Thomas, Stephen Raybone, and John Spinney came on board, and the afternoon turning out very rainy, we could not get on shore. By their coming, however, arrangements were made for attending a meeting at Feletoa about noon to-morrow. This evening we were informed that the 'Active' schooner, a vessel well known to us, had been wrecked upon a reef among the Fiji islands. The captain and three others escaped with their lives, but the remaining four who were saved from the wreck, were afterwards stripped and murdered by the natives. Their destruction appears to have resulted from the harsh and imprudent conduct of these unhappy men towards the islanders, which produced this dreadful catastrophe. They are said to have been four very wicked people. The Fiji group is considered as part of the Friendly Islands. This vessel was in the employ of the Wesleyan Mission, and had brought out missionaries from Sydney to this place but a short time before we arrived, and from hence proceeded to land missionary stores at the Fiji Islands, and was expected to return again shortly to Port Refuge. This dreadful circumstance will tend to stagnate for a time the affairs of the mission, as regards their supplies, not only on these islands, but possibly retard the establishment of an intended one at the Fiji group.

23rd. "This morning John Hobbs arrived in good time, bringing with him two canoes with six natives, who were to paddle the 'Henry Freeling's' long boat to Feletoa for the purpose of conveying us to the intended meeting to be held there. We were late in reaching our destination, owing to a strong current setting against the boat. John Thomas was preaching to the people when we arrived, and when he had finished we went into the meeting and sat down. When John Thomas had finished his explanation of my certificate, I stood up in great weakness and fear, and solemn silence prevailed over the assembly, which was large. I had to declare unto them the truth as it is in Jesus, even in Him who in due time died for all, that all might live: the same blessed Jesus who came on earth in the greatness of his love and strength, to seek and to save that which was lost; who once taught the people in a body of flesh, but now teaches all mankind by his Holy Spirit of grace, and is the Saviour of all that believe—the life and light of men; mighty to save the soul from sin, and lead it up to God the Father. I seemed to have little or nothing before me but the supply of the moment, from the time of standing up to the end. After dinner and spending some time in the family of John Hobbs, who has five children, we returned to the boat which was left a mile off, but the declivity of the foot path was much worse to de-

scend than I expected, though its ascent had been hard work in the morning. All the missionaries, except John Thomas, accompanied us down towards the bay, but were put on shore before we came in sight of the shipping. On arriving at Port Refuge, we were cheered by the sight of an English flag, on board a vessel coming in from sea, which proved to be the 'Lady Wellington,' whaler of Sidney, out three months on a whaling cruise.

24th. "The weather having turned out very rough and wet, we went up to Neiafu to ascertain whether the holding of a meeting would be affected by this circumstance, as the natives had to collect from three distant meetings to attend one to be held in the centre of the three, which it had been agreed should take place to-morrow.

27th. "Most of yesterday was engaged in bartering with the natives. The king's brother, who is a useful man to the missionaries, dined on board with us. To-day, cloudy weather; heavy rain fell in the night with strong squalls from off the high land—the 'John Adams,' of New Bedford, drove from her anchorage, and was compelled to let go a second anchor. Our vessel was moored with two heavy anchors. The afternoon again showery. The natives brought several hogs in the course of the day, and a tolerable supply of yams and cocoa-nuts. Having been confined on board several days by the state of the weather, which of late has precluded the performance of any distant visits, and nothing having arisen in this immediate neighbourhood, it has been a time something like resting at the oar.

28th. (*First-day*.) "Long before daylight my mind was engaged to examine whether there was any particular track for me to move in as regarded the natives' meeting on shore, but felt, as the morning opened, a poor forlorn creature, enfeebled and ready to droop by the way, as one that fainteth, though without having any defined prospect in view; but abiding under the humbling influence of that power which softeneth the flinty rock, I have found to be a place of safety, and one that prepares the tribulated mortal to partake of a blessed portion of that strength which is perfected only in weakness, while it prompts to watchfulness and resignation to the Divine will. For the last two or three days, while most on board are gladdened with the hope of soon seeing the coast of New Holland and entering again the port of Sidney, I cannot discover the probable time of our leaving this place, nor what may be our next destination; on which ever side I look, obstacles of no small magnitude present themselves, but I am desirous to leave all to Him, who alone can make me quick of understanding in his fear. 'My soul wait thou upon the Lord.' Spent the day on board with our own crew, in the usual way.

31st. "Yesterday arrived the American ship 'Wiscasset,' of Wiscasset, Captain Macey, from a whaling cruise, to secure her oil by coopering, &c. In the afternoon, some steps were taken to-



wards prosecuting a visit to one of the smaller islands, which the weather had prevented our attempting last fifth-day. We found to-day, that John Thomas had ascertained from some of the most intelligent natives, that the tide would flow to-morrow, sufficiently early to allow us to pass over the flats and reach the meeting in seasonable time: we were also informed that general notice had been given to the people of two other stations, viz. Tanea and Eueiki, to assemble at the central station of the three, called Haa-laufuli, where the meeting is appointed to be held.

1st of Ninth month. "Left the vessel before sunrise, and called upon John Thomas, who accompanied us through the journey. We proceeded across a neck of land to a sandy bay, where two canoes were soon in readiness to convey us forward; but as the wind blew strong and against us, the natives very kindly suggested the propriety of a third canoe being procured to divide the weight more equally, and by rendering the canoes lighter, to lessen the danger of our getting wet by the feather tops of the little waves blowing on us from the stroke of the paddle; this occasioned some delay, but was no doubt a saving of time in the end. At length, however, we were equipped, and proceeded with three skilful natives in each canoe, which contained one of us: the canoe with John Thomas leading the way. The first object was to cross an arm of the sea to obtain the shelter of a high bluff on a headland which we had to pass; with numerous islands on our right, which broke off the swell of the ocean almost entirely from our route: some of these islands were inhabited. About ten o'clock A. M. we landed again on the island of Vavau, after a very circuitous passage, but the only one by which the extremity of this island can be got at from Neiafu. We were soon met by the principal chief, Daniel Afu, and several of his people, who welcomed us to their neighbourhood; and after spending a short time at the chief's house, the meeting was assembled by the sound of heavy strokes upon a hollow piece of wood, a sort of native drum, which may be heard at a great distance. The people were soon collected, and after John Thomas had opened the meeting in the usual way, and read one of my certificates, all became silent; and I had largely to declare amongst them the 'unsearchable riches of Christ,' the beloved Son of God, and Saviour of men; whom all men are commanded to hear: whose Holy Spirit speaketh in every heart to bring us to repentance and amendment of life, in the fear of God. To this heavenly Teacher I was concerned to turn them, and to exhort them in the love of the Gospel to 'believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and be saved;' to believe in the power of His Holy Spirit in their hearts, and wait for it there: we were favoured with a solemnity which nothing short of this irresistible power can produce. Many of the people came to us in a loving manner when the meeting broke up, and hung about while we remained in the neighbourhood.

"The people were this day turned to the teachings of that grace in their own hearts, by which all such as happily take heed to it, will learn to 'worship God in spirit, rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.' May the Lord hasten the dawning of that day when true spiritual Gospel worshippers shall abound in the earth to the glory and praise of Him, who is alone worthy to be worshipped in spirit and in truth; when living spiritual sacrifices shall ascend, acceptable unto Him by Jesus Christ; and in every place incense shall be offered to his ever great and excellent name—even the sacrifice offered in the 'beauty of holiness and newness of life,' from the pure, contrite and humble heart, produced by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus. After meeting we partook of some refreshment at the chief's house, in true native style, upon the floor on mats, with the milk of the cocoa-nut as a beverage, and the pulpy shoots of the banana tree bruised between our fingers, to answer the purpose of washing the hands: some native cloth from the dress of the chiefess served for a towel. This was found very needful and an agreeable part of the entertainment, having had to tear the food literally to pieces with our fingers. When it was finished we took leave of the chief and his family and others present, and returned to the sea side, resumed our seats in the different canoes, and were safely paddled back again to the sandy bay near Neiafu. On the way from the canoes to the missionary-house, we called at the king's habitation—his daughter, called the princess Charlotte, was at home—a young woman about sixteen years of age, with an intelligent countenance; she was seated on the floor in simple native attire—her brother, a boy, perhaps twelve years old, was playing about. When returning to the vessel, it occurred to me that some of the ships now in the harbour would soon be ready for sea, and I felt as if I should not be clear of the crews, without endeavouring to collect them together next first-day forenoon: to this I stood resigned, in hopes of feeling some further impression in the morning, if it should be required.

3rd. "Yesterday, the subject of a meeting with the seamen still rested upon me. On awaking this morning I endeavoured to watch over every thought that arose; and after remembering my great Creator in humble gratitude for the mercies of the past night, my mind seemed as a blank until the prospect of holding a meeting with the seamen of the fleet came before it, not a little in the cross to the unmortified part, which seemed now ready to shrink. I kept the matter close until after breakfast, and then told Charles that I believed it safest for me to appoint a meeting for worship to-morrow, at eleven o'clock A. M., to be held in the native chapel at Neiafu, if that could be obtained. On stating this to John Thomas, he said that a missionary was coming down from Feletoa, to preach at the hour proposed for holding our meeting, but that he had no doubt of his being willing to accommodate me. In that

case, I told him that I should give notice to the shipping that they might know what to expect, as the meeting would be held after the manner of the Society of Friends, and would not commence with singing—but we should sit in silence to wait for the influence of the Holy Spirit upon our minds, before we could move. In the afternoon a sufficient number of written notices were prepared and distributed amongst the shipping, leaving the result to Him who knoweth all things, desiring that his great name alone may be exalted, and the Gospel of the heavenly kingdom in the heart of man proclaimed, to the Saviour's praise.

4th. (*First-day.*) "This morning much cast down and a poor creature, but as one bound to the work of the dear Master from which I dared not hold back, however human nature might be ready to shrink as the hour of trial approached. Landed in good time and proceeded to the mission station at Neiafu. We then repaired to the meeting-house and I took a seat on the floor in front of the people. I had to sit long in silence, but eventually stood up with those instructive expressions of our Lord to his disciples—'Herein is my Father glorified that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples: he that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, for without me ye can do nothing.' From this I was enabled to show that without the blessed influence of the Holy Spirit of the Son, we can do nothing—much less be capable of bearing that fruit by which the Holy Father is glorified; and the impossibility of performing that worship which only is acceptable in the sight of Him, 'who is a Spirit,' without the help of the Holy Spirit; and therefore it is indispensable, in order to the performance of true spiritual worship, to wait in reverential silence for a renewal of that strength, which is 'mighty through God to the casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God—to the bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;' to the obedience of the Spirit of Truth in our hearts, without which, none can worship God in Spirit and in truth. It is this influence which can alone prepare our hearts to worship, praise, and glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ—who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in Spirit and in truth. I had to set forth the admirable adaptation of the glorious Gospel dispensation to the condition of man the world over, and the blessed superiority of true spiritual worship, in the inner temple of the heart, over that which is left in the outer court to be trodden under foot. My mind was particularly turned towards those 'who go down to the sea in ships, and do business in great waters, that see the mighty works of the Lord, and his wonders in the deep.' Although such may often feel as excluded from their fellow-men, and shut out from every opportunity of religious instruction, and destitute of the 'means of grace,' this is evidently not the case, but a delusion of the great enemy of God and man, although it may be



often held out by those who have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge, of whom the great apostle speaks; for notwithstanding it is the lot of seafaring men to spend their days in roving upon the mighty ocean, yet the only true and blessed means of grace are still within their reach—even that grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ, which hath appeared unto all men, and teacheth all men that believe in it. No class of men have a better opportunity of attending upon the means of salvation; and although their allotment may be thought solitary, yet they are saved from many temptations, and out of the reach of the contaminating example of wicked men, to which those on shore are daily exposed. They have less to draw their attention aside from the great work, and more time to work out their souls' salvation, than many of their fellow-mortals:—their nightly watches may be turned to everlasting account in waiting upon the Lord, in looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearance of the great God and Saviour, by his Holy Spirit of grace. No men have greater need to acquaint themselves with God and be at peace—they are in jeopardy every hour, which plainly bespeaks the necessity of their being prepared to meet their God, as with their lives in their hands. Thus they and the whole bulk of mankind are left without excuse—for 'That which may be known of God, is manifest in them; for God hath showed it unto them.' The meeting held long, but proved a searching solemn season, and although at first a gloom seemed to hang over it, eventually every cloud, or feeling of this kind, was scattered by that power whom winds and waves obey, and it ended well. A considerable number of seamen from the different ships with their captains attended—the whole of the missionary families here, and one from Feletoa, with many of the natives, and also some New Zealanders who were connected with the shipping and understood English pretty well. Two of the ships in the harbour had intended sailing this morning, but were prevented for want of wind. The crews of both were furnished with an ample supply of tracts and Friends' writings, with two Spanish Testaments, for two men of that nation employed on board of them.

7th. "Notwithstanding the security of the harbour in which we are privileged to ride, yet the scanty supply of fresh water is a serious inconvenience—there is none to be obtained nearer than four miles, on an island where the empty casks have to be rolled up half a mile, and when filled, which requires much time to accomplish, they are rolled back again to the water's edge, and towed on board as a raft. Having had no opportunity to procure any of this most necessary article since leaving the last of the Sandwich Islands until to-day, the stock on hand is very small, and can only be recruited by small quantities once in the day. Since first-day, we have been engaged on board arranging for a visit to the two congregations at the island of Otea to-morrow; it

being agreed that they shall meet at the same time under the same roof. May the Lord be graciously pleased to go before and open the way in the hearts of these people to receive the ever blessed truth in the love of it, and through the workings thereof, bring forth fruit that shall lastingly remain to his praise and their own peace.

8th. "As our vessel was anchored in the track from Neiafu to Otea, we waited the coming of John Thomas, who arrived before ten o'clock, bringing with him John Spinney and six natives, who were then taken from the canoe and placed in our boat with their paddles, for the better accommodation of the whole party. On landing at Otea, we proceeded towards the other side of the island where the meeting was to be held. In crossing the sandy beaches, two of which were in our route, exposed to the full blaze of the sun nearly at noon, the heat and glare of light were almost insupportable, and the want of air when passing through the bush was still more oppressive. We staid a short time at the house of the chief, whose name is Lazarus, a steady going man among the people; and when cooled a little, proceeded to the meeting, where the natives were assembled in readiness. Exclusive of the pulpit, there did not appear to be a seat in the whole neighbourhood except upon the floor; some of the people at last brought part of an old canoe into the building, for Charles and myself to sit upon. I felt in a very low and feeble condition, both as to body and mind, but when my certificates were read, I stood up with a salutation of love in my heart to the people, which having expressed, I had to turn their attention to Him 'Who seeth not as man seeth,' but who is a spirit and looketh on the heart. He searcheth all hearts, and understandeth every imagination of the thoughts, and to this man will He look, even on him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, that trembleth at his word. The Christian religion is a heart-felt work—it is in the heart we must work out our own salvation with fear and trembling, through submission and obedience to the power of the spirit of the Lord Jesus, which dwelleth in the contrite and humble heart, without respect of persons or of the colour of the skin. 'Cease from man whose breath is in his nostrils, for what is he to be accounted of.' Man cannot save his own soul, nor blot out a single sin, and how then can he do the work for another, which he cannot do for himself? My heart was greatly enlarged towards the people; and they listened with apparent attention. After remaining some time at the house of Lazarus to refresh and rest, we again crossed the island, and resumed our station in the boat: we proceeded round the northern part of the island, and visited a splendid cavern, into which we rowed with the boat, having a canoe to lead the way, conducted by Noah, one of the chiefs of Otea, and two chosen natives, also well acquainted with the position and entrance to this wonderful place. The great height of the vaulted arches above our heads, which are almost of

gothic shape, from which are suspended a variety of huge spiral masses of ponderous weight, apparently ready to fall—the amazing depth and clearness of the water under us, together with the dark and deep recesses, which could not be explored for want of a light, exhibited a sublime and magnificent spectacle and a specimen of those great and marvellous works, incomprehensible to mortal man. Fish of large size swam about beneath us, without the least appearance of being disturbed by the boat, so great was the depth of water between us and them.—In knocking off some of the spiral crags within our reach to bring away with us, the echo produced was alarming, and as if the whole roof was in danger of falling upon us.

9th. “King George having arrived from the Harbai Island Lifuka, this morning paid us a visit: a Saul-like man in truth, being higher than the rest of the people perhaps by the head and shoulders; he was naked, with the exception of some native cloth round his waist. His moral character is highly spoken of, and the great prosperity of the Christian profession here, is said to be owing to his promptness in the due observance of its rites and ordinances: the laws are declared to be good, and he insists upon their being executed with rigour. If any disobey or in any way are guilty of a misdemeanour, they are severely punished. In the afternoon took exercise on shore until dark—Capt. Macey of the ‘Wiscasset,’ a serious man, drank tea with us.

10th. “In the afternoon, called at the mission-house, and found that John Thomas was likely to be at liberty to proceed with us in our projected visit to a distant station next third-day.

11th. (*First-day.*) “Spent a peaceful day on board, collected the crew both fore and afternoon for devotional purposes—none of them seemed disposed to attend the meeting on shore.

13th. “Yesterday, sailed the brig ‘Lady Wellington:’ previous to her departure, the crew were furnished with a set of Friends’ tracts, and a summary of our principles. This morning, John Thomas came on board at eight o’clock, A. M., when we immediately proceeded down the harbour in the usual way, and landed on the western coast of Vavau. The meeting was to be held at Hihifo, about a mile from the landing-place, whither we went, and met with the chief, Solomon, at his own habitation; and as soon as the people were collected, repaired to the meeting-place. The places of worship at the distant stations from Neiafu are like large sheds, standing upon props, and open on both sides, but the ends are made tolerably close with coarse matting. As there was no seat in the meeting, I remained near John Thomas, who occupied a considerable time in the native language, before reading my certificates. When he had finished we stood by each other in silence, and the people seemed unsettled as if they did not know what to expect next, or to whom they should hearken, first looking upon one of us, and then upon the other—until it was with me



to caution them against a dependence upon the creature, but to endeavour to fix the attention of their minds upon the Creator, who is a Spirit and knoweth all things. The darkness hideth not from Him—the darkness and the light are both alike to Him, before whom the night shineth as the day. My desire was that nothing might be permitted to beguile them from the simplicity of the Gospel of Christ,—that they might not rest satisfied with a mere hearsay knowledge of his name, as a Saviour, but come to the knowledge of his Holy Spirit in themselves, and know for themselves His Gospel to be the power of God unto salvation. It was with me to query, what a profession of the Christian religion had done for them since they embraced it? There had been time for some of them to have witnessed something like fruit to be brought forth in themselves; for without a change of heart is known, their religion will profit them nothing. I felt an earnest engagement of mind to turn them to the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus in their own hearts, which would, if believed in and obeyed, cleanse them from sin, create in them a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within them. After spending some time with Solomon, the chief, who spread a table plentifully for our refreshment, according to native custom, we repaired to the boat and proceeded forthwith to the ‘Henry Freeling.’

15th. “It was with difficulty that an opportunity could be found, on account of the increased number of natives upon the deck, to sit down together, notwithstanding which, the way opened to our comfort. We have latterly understood that earthquakes frequently occur among these islands—at times so violent as to stop the clock at the mission-house. On First-day last, whilst in the meeting appointed for the seamen of the fleet, and before standing up amongst them, a considerable shock was sensibly felt by the missionary families then present. Of this, I was not myself aware, although the frame work in the roof of the building we were in was heard to make a cracking noise at the time. Last second-day evening, about nine o’clock, another shock was witnessed at Neiafu, but was not perceived by us upon the water: we are told, however, that they are sometimes felt on board the ship, and occasion a grumbling noise, as if the vessel was passing over a rugged rock; sufficiently loud to alarm all the crew.

16th. “Remained on board the fore part of the day, while Captain Keen and Charles, accompanied by Philemon, an intelligent native, ascended Talau, a considerable hill on the island of Vavau, to form a plan of Port Refuge, for the benefit of those who may follow us at a future day. From this point they were enabled with sufficient accuracy to describe the position of this group of islands, which are said to be one hundred and two in number, known by the name of Haafuluhao, so that any stranger may direct his course to Port Refuge in perfect safety, by keeping a good look out, which is of course one of the means dictated by common pru-

dence in such cases. The depth of water varies at the anchorage from sixteen to thirty-six fathoms, with holding-ground of sand and coral. From the direction in which the trade-winds usually blow, a vessel has generally to beat against it as soon as she comes round the southernmost bluff upon the main land of Vavau. The deepest water appears to be on the left hand, the whole way up to the port; the distance from the entrance point, from ten to twelve miles with ample room for the largest ship to work, with common care. In the evening went on shore to consult with John Thomas on the subject of leaving our cook, Pedro Nolasko, a Spaniard, who is desirous of getting to the Fiji Islands, having heard of the probability of meeting with a vessel bound to Manilla, his native place. As he is a man of good character, and not likely by his conduct to injure the natives, and there being no objection in the minds of the missionaries, and the authorities of the place, there seems no good reason for refusing to discharge him, agreeably with his wishes; more particularly, as we have just taken on board a sailor, William Davenport, one of the survivors from the wreck of the 'Active' schooner, among the Fiji group: this man was intended to work for his food while with us, but he will now come in for regular wages, by filling up the vacancy which the discharge of Pedro Nolasko will occasion.

19th. "On Seventh-day, with the exception of taking exercise on shore towards evening, we were employed on board through the day; yesterday (*First-day*,) remained on board all day with our own people, having no attraction to the shore. It was a season of self-abasedness and poverty, but however humiliating, I trust not altogether unprofitable, and one that I have found to precede, and perhaps prepare for further service in the Great Master's time: for which the prayer of my heart is, that I may be ready, confiding in Him, whose power can raise up from utter weakness and make strong for His use. To-day sailed the American ship 'Wiscasset,' Captain Macey. This vessel was supplied with tracts and the writings of Friends, viz. John Woolman's Journal, Thomas Chalkley's Journal, Bates's Doctrines, Hugh Turford's Grounds, &c. This evening it seemed best to arrange to attend a native meeting at Matika, a few miles from hence; the greater part of which distance can be performed by boat. As John Thomas was not likely to be at liberty, John Hobbs kindly offered to supply his place as interpreter; but the situation of the neighbourhood is such, that the weather must be consulted in the first place.

20th. "The weather apparently likely to answer for our going to Matika, but the coming of John Hobbs, a little uncertain, as he had a long distance to travel, and might not be able to procure a sufficient number of natives, at an early notice, to paddle our boat. This suspense was soon removed by his arrival with a suitable crew of natives, and by nine o'clock we proceeded on our way, and landed at Feletoa, before eleven o'clock, A. M. Here we got

a cool resting place, and after an early dinner, proceeded to Matika. Feeling unwell soon after, I was not in very good trim for moving forward in the hottest part of the day, nor for attending the appointed meeting, but I well knew that He who had sustained me thus far on the way, could strengthen me at his pleasure, to stand before the people for His great name's sake. Having now an interpreter, to whose abilities and qualifications in the native language, I was a stranger, it seemed like venturing upon untried ground. I soon found that I had no cause to fear on this head, but rather to dread the quickness with which he at once comprehended the drift of what I had to say, and interpreted it to the people; however, although every sentence as soon as uttered, was rapidly followed, and conveyed to them without hesitation on his part, yet with thankfulness I can say, that I never felt less difficulty in getting on. I had to caution them particularly, not to be deceived in looking without, for that which is only to be found within, that so they might come to the knowledge of Christ, the light of whose Holy Spirit shineth in every heart, and is 'the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world,' and that they might believe in it to the saving of the soul, that so Christ may dwell richly in their hearts by faith—that He might be theirs, and they might be his, in His Father's kingdom for ever. It was a comfortable meeting, and ended well. Great is my desire for these people, that their hearts may be directed to the love of God, and to the patient waiting for Christ. How great the responsibility of those who take upon themselves to introduce the religion of Jesus, amongst a simple-hearted people, lest its beautiful simplicity be hid from them, by forms and shadows of their own invention!

21st. "This morning the 'Mary Anne,' of London, a south-seaman, sailed for the whaling grounds; sundry tracts were furnished for the crew, also a French Testament for a native of France, one of her sailors. A few days ago a native offered amongst other articles for sale, a copy of the Holy Scriptures in English. I found on examining it, that it had been given by the Seamen's Bible Society, in London, probably to some ship's library. I purchased this book for about eightpence, merely to show the necessity of not only inserting the donor's name, or that of the institution by which it had been bestowed, but the name of the person to whom it was originally given, or to the ship's library to which it belonged; it would, I think, help to deter from such a misapplication of such books. It is very probable that this Bible had belonged to the library of the 'Mary Anne,' of London, but this was not specified, or it might have been returned to that vessel before she left this port, and have served to prevent a similar occurrence from taking place in future. We find that sailors, our own not excepted, do not hesitate to give articles for a shell or two, far exceeding the value of them, regardless of the future; they will part with a woolen jacket, as a thing perfectly useless to them, because being at



that particular time in a hot climate, it is not wanted; and the natives will accept of almost anything for their shells. If books of a pernicious tendency in the English language are found in the hands of the natives, such are immediately destroyed; and books of various kinds fall into their hands when bartering with the shipping; they are pleased when they can obtain writing-paper, pen and ink, or a pencil.

22nd. "Although many natives were on board, we were enabled to set aside our bartering to sit down, to wait upon the Lord, but it required firm struggling to get into a quiet state of mind; towards the end a little of that strength was witnessed, by which only the foes of a man's house can be cast out, and himself left in peaceable possession.

24th. "Yesterday, with the exception of taking the needful exercise on shore, as the sun declined, engaged on board getting things into train, with the prospect of shortly sailing for the Harbai group of Tonga isles. To-day, employed as yesterday putting things in their places. Since it has come to my knowledge that the strength of these islands is to be assembled at Lifuka with King George of Vavau, and Josiah Toobow, the king of Tongataboo, I have not seen the way open for me to move in any direction but to Lifuka isle; and the more I have dwelt upon this subject, the more it appears to be the right track for me to pursue. Owing to the existing circumstances connected with persons and places, it doth not seem practicable for me to complete the object which brought us to Vavau, of visiting the people, before the end of this month; and allowing that it could be satisfactorily accomplished at an earlier period, it would be useless to sail for Tongataboo, as those competent for the important office of interpreter will have left the island to join their brethren at the general assembly about to take place at Lifuka. My earnest desire is to be found in the counsel of the will of our heavenly Father, to be preserved in faithfulness and humble resignation thereunto, and favoured to possess my vessel in patience to the end of the race. Could I have contrived for myself, I should certainly not have selected Lifuka, as the Harbai group is a dangerous archipelago, consisting of small islands, shoals, reefs, &c., without any secure place of shelter from every wind that blows, and not the least dependence can be placed on the published charts of it. But if 'He that bloweth with his wind, and the waters flow,' is graciously pleased to direct our way amidst the lurking dangers of the deep which await a stranger vessel, who hath so mercifully and so often in appalling seasons said in effect, 'It is I, be not afraid,'—and this too accompanied with an evidence so indisputably strengthening, that a poor helpless mortal could exclaim, in that humble faith and confidence, which condescending heavenly love alone inspires, 'It is the Lord,' all fear is then cast out, except what is filial.

26th. "Yesterday (*First-day*,) spent the day on board. Col-

lected the sailors twice in the course of the day for devotional purposes. Engaged the fore-part of to-day on board, and in the afternoon went up to Neiafu, to endeavour to arrange for visiting the natives upon the North shore. The weather being sultry and rainy, the clay soil of which the neighbourhood of the landing-place is composed, being almost impassable, I found the steep descent down to the boat extremely difficult and unsafe.

27th. "Much rain during the night and this morning, which prevented my going on shore; Charles landed for a short time opposite the vessel, but was compelled to return from the rain continuing to fall. About nine o'clock this evening a shock of an earthquake was sensibly felt on board by the trembling of the vessel—Captain Keen stepped upon one of the chain cables, by which we were riding at the time, when the shock was more evident, from the connection of the anchor with the earth at the bottom of the sea. This is the fourth shock that has been felt since our arrival at Port Refuge. Would that the earthly nature in the hearts of all around us, yea the world over, were so shaken, that that only which cannot be shaken might remain to the praise and glory of God.

28th. "Still rainy weather. John Hobbs called on board to-day, with whom an arrangement was made to visit a native meeting to-morrow afternoon, should the weather permit us to proceed and the people to collect. We learn from John Hobbs that the shock of the earthquake last evening, was the most severe he had known since his coming to these islands; it was felt on board the American ship 'Russel,' quite as strong as on board the 'Henry Freeling.'

29th. "In our solitary sitting this forenoon, we were favoured to witness a degree of strength sufficient for the day, to wrestle for the blessing. Soon after three o'clock, John Hobbs and ourselves set forward in our own boat, with six able natives to paddle; on account of the falling tide we landed at a place much more distant from the meeting to which we were going, than would have been necessary, if the water had been rising. It was however much safer for the boat, with which it behoves us to make use of every precaution, to enable her to hold out to the end; she is now leaky and much worse for wear, and was not a thorough good one when new.

"The heat of the afternoon made the extra walking very fatiguing, and the current of air to which I was afterwards exposed, occasioned considerable pain in my head, but such was the engagement of my mind, that this bodily annoyance was little regarded. After resting awhile at the house built for the special purpose of accommodating the teachers, the meeting commenced; and although I was as an emptied vessel, while the translation of my certificates was read, yet shortly after the reading concluded, my mouth was opened to turn the attention of the people to that Al-

mighty power who 'is not far from every one of us,' dwelling in our hearts by his Holy Spirit, except we be reprobates, 'in whom we live, and move, and have our being.' He that abideth of old—with whom a thousand years are but as one day, and one day as a thousand years; from everlasting to everlasting, he is God, and changeth not. My desire for this people was, that they might become wise in heart, by seeking after that knowledge which is life eternal, even the knowledge of the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent into the world to save sinners—that through the operation of his Holy Spirit, which shines in every heart, they might inherit glory, and be numbered among those that shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and with them that turn many to righteousness, as the stars for ever and ever; and the fear of God is the way that leads to this blessedness. The Gospel of the everlasting kingdom was freely preached to these dear people. It was a memorable season, and yielded peaceful relief to my mind. We reached our vessel soon after dark. What, indeed, can we render unto the Lord for all this! being nothing, and possessing nothing, but what we received from Him, the God of love and praise.

1st of Tenth month. "Yesterday engaged on board most of the day, making ready for sailing for the Harbai. My attention has been drawn, at times, in the course of yesterday and to-day, towards again attending the native meeting at Neiafu to-morrow, and John Thomas and Stephen Raybone calling on board this afternoon, afforded me an opportunity of mentioning the subject. John Thomas kindly agreed at once to make way for it, and offered his assistance as interpreter. Although so often a partaker of heavenly help and goodness, I am still imploring more; being increasingly sensible of the want of it, when looking towards this meeting; that the name of the Lord Jesus may be exalted, to the glory of God the Father.

"Having now every prospect of bending our course towards Lifuka, I deemed it expedient, to make an offer to convey as many of the missionary families as inclined to go to the congress, telling John Thomas, that if they were willing to put up with the want of accommodations to which they would be subjected in our small vessel, the whole of them might go with us. He expressed a fear that such a number would put us to great inconvenience; but I told him, it was themselves that would have to suffer the inconvenience, and if they were willing to undergo it, they must not consider us, as they would have literally to stow as they could upon the cabin sofas and floor, and, perhaps, we might not be out more than one or two nights, which would depend upon the wind. The distance is sometimes performed in a few hours, when the trade-wind is strong and favourable. The shock of another earthquake was felt on the night of the 29th ultimo.

2nd. (*First-day*.) "This morning I felt a very poor creature,



both in body and mind, but 'knowing Him in whom I have believed,' and unto whom 'all power in heaven and earth is given,' prepared to attend the native meeting at Neiafu. We reached the mission-house before the bell rung, and accompanied John Thomas to the meeting in due time. I sat in a pew constructed for the missionaries for some time, and when John Thomas had finished speaking, as I thought, went and stood in front of the people, upon the base on which the pulpit is erected. John Thomas then came down to me, and a general silence prevailed over the assembly, which was large, until broken by myself with the words 'Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit ye like men, be strong.' The burden which rested upon my mind was, that these people might become the Lord's people; formed for himself, to show forth his praise, that they might become his children, and be taught of him, for all the sons and daughters of men, which form his church, are taught of the Lord himself.—'In righteousness they are established,' and great shall be their peace; that they might indeed be sheep of the one fold, and of the one great and heavenly shepherd, hear his voice, be known of him, and follow him. And thus be enabled individually to say, from blessed experience, 'The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures; he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul; he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.' But the sheep must first learn to know the voice of the great Shepherd, when they hear it, from the voice of a stranger, that so they may follow him with safety whithersoever he leadeth; and those that are the sheep of his fold know him, and are known of him. 'My sheep,' said Christ, 'hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand:' 'My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.' Thus, the security and blessedness of the Lord's children, which compose his church, are set forth by its Holy Head, the Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, and there is no other way for any of us to become of this happy number, but that of sitting under the teaching of his Holy Spirit, to learn of him, to know his voice and be known of him, and be his sheep, and follow him. He will teach us humility, meekness, and lowliness of heart. Such are formed for himself, do show forth his praise, and glorify him before men, by producing the fruit of the Spirit in the sight of those around them, openly declaring, by life and conversation, that the Gospel of Christ is the power of God unto salvation, even to those who beforetime were in darkness, hateful and hating one another. I was largely opened among them, and if it was possible to recapitulate all that was uttered, words would still fall short and fail to describe the heart-tendering solemnity which crowned the meeting. Towards the conclusion, when about saying farewell to these

dear people, as one never to see their faces again, that Almighty power, which alone can soften the heart was eminently conspicuous; tears could not be restrained, but silently and undisguisedly rolled down the swarthy cheeks of the sons and daughters of this isle of the ocean.

3d. "Early in the morning the 'Henry Freeling' unmoored and prepared for sailing by twelve o'clock: the whole of the missionary families, with their servants and luggage being on board, we left the well-sheltered harbour of Port Refuge, and retracing our steps through the maze of islands into the open ocean, stretched away from the shore of Vavau. A large number of the natives attended on board to the last, and hung round the sides of our vessel until compelled to let go their hold, evincing sincere regret at her departure. One of the chiefs of the island of Otea, named Noah, a noble man in person, with whom we were particularly acquainted, and whom we highly esteemed, wept aloud when he left us, and was heard when the canoe was at a considerable distance. He was affected by the whole circumstance of parting with all his friends, but principally on account of losing an adopted daughter who was leaving Vavau for Tongataboo: she had been for a long time an inmate of the mission-house. Our passengers consisted of John Thomas, wife and child; Stephen Raybone, wife and child; John Spinney, wife and child; John Hobbs, wife and five children, going to reside at Lifuka—William A. Brooks, and wife, with nine domestics. We had also William Bunubunu, nephew of the late Finau, the conqueror of these islands in former days, selected and approved by King George, as our pilot for the Harbai group. Soon after getting fairly out to sea, the whole of our guests, except two of the youngest children, became sick, and some of them remained so the whole time. The wind became unfavourable in the night, and prevented our seeing the isle of Aano, next morning, as was calculated upon.

4th. "When morning came, it was found that we had drifted towards the island of Kao, in appearance a lofty mountain of regular conic shape, rising out of the sea, and evidently a volcanic island. By ten o'clock, A. M., the island of Toofoa was fairly opened, and the operation of the volcano at the north end, plainly to be seen; vomiting clouds of smoke into the atmosphere, which occasionally burst forth with increased strength. It was soon ascertained that getting to Lifuka by night, as before anticipated, was now quite impracticable, as the wind baffled us during the day-time, and was strong through the night; but shifting two or three points after midnight, we fetched well to windward, and after making one short tack at the entrance of the reef, before ten o'clock, were favoured safely to anchor off the island of Lifuka, abreast of the settlement of Mua, in only three and a half fathoms water, on fourth-day, the 5th instant.

"Any vessel less manageable than the 'Henry Freeling,' might

easily have fallen a victim to the reef, the entrance being narrow and intricate, in the worst part of which she had to tack. It is probable that few vessels as large as ours ever anchored upon the same ground; and none, however small, ought to venture without a competent pilot on board. It is close to this spot that the 'Port au Prince,' was wrecked, perhaps thirty years ago: some of her remains are visible at this day, and are frequently dug out of the sand by the king's order, for the sake of the copper bolts, &c. Of recent date, the 'Snapper' was cut off by the natives and lost upon an adjoining reef, not far from Mua. Soon after we had anchored, Charles Tucker, the resident missionary at this place came off, bringing with him James Watkin, who had arrived the preceding day from his station on the island of Tongataboo. A double canoe was procured which took the whole of our passengers, and luggage, &c., at once to the shore. They were safely landed by eleven o'clock, to their great relief. The natives soon began to visit us, well pleased to see a vessel at anchor off the island, as it is but seldom that such a circumstance occurs.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

Island of Lifuka—native meeting—distribution of Bibles, &c.—visit of the king—meeting with the missionaries—native meeting—sail for Tongataboo—anchor off the settlement at Nukualofa—letter from the Wesleyan missionaries—distribution of clothing and medicines—a Kava party—visit to the heathen settlement at Mua—restraining influence of the missionaries—native meeting at Nukualofa—letter to the missionaries at the Friendly Islands.

6th. "This morning early, a turtle of prodigious size was sent on board as a present from Josiah Toobow, the king of Tongataboo, who had arrived here from that island. In the forenoon the weather became quite stormy, and the wind coming in from the westward, made it uneasy riding in the bay. Charles and myself sat down together as usual to wait upon the Lord, though in much poverty and weakness. At noon it threatened to blow strong, but shortly afterwards the atmosphere became more tranquil. There was not so much to be apprehended from the anchor and cables not holding the vessel, as from the danger of striking upon the rocky bottom, had the swell from the ocean been permitted to come in upon us. The hurricanes which we are told occasionally occur here, are very awful, levelling with the earth, houses, trees, &c., before their tremendous blast; and they generally, if not always blow from the westward, the only quarter from which we have any thing to fear at this anchorage, as the land and the reefs are a shelter on every side, but this: but the Lord's power is



the same here as in every other place—'Mighty to save and to deliver' out of every trouble and distress.

7th. "This morning the natives thronged our decks, with trifling oddments of shells for barter; but the poor creatures have but little in their possession to offer. The last violent hurricane with which they were visited, destroyed their bread-fruit trees, &c., to considerable extent, and materially injured their yams, upon which they are usually supported; and from this serious calamity they have not yet recovered. Many of them are now subsisting upon the fern, and tea-tree roots, but it is expected that in a few weeks from this time, the present complaints of famine will be banished by an abundant supply of yams, sweet potatoes, &c. In the afternoon, we visited by invitation the mission-house. While there it was with me to propose having an opportunity afforded of seeing the people, when collected together, at their morning meeting next first-day. On my inquiring about some one to interpret what I might have to say to the people, James Watkin, the missionary then present from Tongataboo, was proposed to undertake that part of the work, to which he kindly and readily assented. May the Lord be graciously pleased to magnify his power, and cause this stranger and myself to be faithful to him, in performing each his office, so that, 'that life and immortality which are brought to light by the glorious Gospel,' may be declared to the natives of Lifuka, and others assembled with them to our Maker's praise.

8th. "Engaged on board till late in the afternoon with the natives. It is probable that the meeting to-morrow will be very large, as the inhabitants from the different islands which compose the Harbai group, are now assembled at this place, besides a vast number from the Haafuluhau group, and Tongataboo. Oh! that the master of assemblies may be there. To him, who only knoweth the motive for my coming amongst them, I commend them and myself, humbly praying for help in the needful time, lest the cause of truth and righteousness should suffer in such weak and feeble hands.

9th. (*First-day*.) "Proceeded towards the shore at an early hour. We were met on landing by a swarm of young natives who appeared to be upon the look out for us. In half an hour the first bell rung to assemble the people: this bell might have been spared, as the large meeting-house was filled, and a multitude still outside, when we passed by, on our way from the boat to the mission-house: another extensive building was also filled not far from the largest. The natives were indeed gathered together to an extent, which we have not before witnessed in the Friendly Islands.

"James Watkin kindly conducted me, through the concourse of people into an enclosed place in front of the pulpit, on a level with the floor, which is only used on particular occasions. Here I remained until the interval arrived for me to take a station by the side of my interpreter, to be in readiness to minister to the people,

as way should open. I felt no hesitation in going up into the pulpit, believing that even when the most advantageous position was chosen, but a small portion of the people, in comparison with the whole collected about the house, would distinctly hear what was said; these buildings are open at the side, a circumstance which the nature of the climate requires, and which is a special advantage at these times, as before has been witnessed by us at Vavau. A general stillness now prevailed over this large assembly, which I thought might be occasioned in the first place, by the novelty of two persons appearing in the pulpit, both standing, and both silent. It was not long however before I had to turn their attention to Him, unto whom the cattle on a thousand hills belong, before whom, the secret thoughts of every heart are laid open. He seeth us as we really are, born in sin, and laden with iniquity, helpless, and utterly unable to do any thing for ourselves, of ourselves; for as men and mortals, we possess nothing, and are as nothing; and yet such is the love of God even to a guilty world, that of the fulness of His Son Christ Jesus, the Lord, have all we received, and grace for grace. 'God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.' Who among us can contemplate the wondrous mercy and utterable love, wherewith God so loved the world, without feeling a desire to pour forth a grateful acknowledgment of 'thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift,' even the gift of His Son Jesus Christ, by whom came that grace which hath appeared unto all men, by which grace alone 'are we saved' from sin and from the wrath to come, 'through faith,' and that not of ourselves, for we have nothing and are only sinners; it is through faith which cometh from the Son of God, who loved us, and gave himself for us, the unspeakable gift,—'the author and finisher' of the one true faith, which worketh by love, purifieth the heart of those who believe in its saving, cleansing power, and giveth the victory over the evil propensities of fallen nature, and over every temptation of the devil.

"My desire was, that these people might not rest satisfied with making an empty profession of religion, but 'believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and be saved.' Although at the close of the meeting I felt as if my strength was renewed for the work, I should, without such sustaining help, have been dismayed at the burden which still rested upon my mind. After the meeting broke up many of the people flocked about us; amongst others, I shook hands with an aged female of rank, considered by the people, higher than their king—called Tamaha. King George, himself, was one of those who helped to carry her on their shoulders—she being unable to walk any considerable distance. Her placid countenance, and manner altogether, bespoke that she had good will in her heart towards us; and the remembrance of the interview, though short, always brings with it a feeling of peaceful tranquillity in my mind.

11th. "Yesterday engaged on board, bartering for the commodities brought by the natives, of trifling value, we not being willing to turn them back, although what they brought was often almost useless. In the afternoon landed and conveyed to be deposited in the mission house, twenty-four English Testaments, six Bibles, ditto, six Spanish Testaments, six French ditto, and six Portuguese ditto; one French Bible was given to Charles Simeon, a native of France, now settled here. Whaling vessels and others not unfrequently, at the present day, fall in among the different groups of these islands; by some on board such, a copy of the Scriptures is often prized, as we have experienced; and also individuals are here and there to be found, of different nations, whose lot has been cast among the natives from a variety of causes, some by shipwreck, others by sickness, left by the ships to return if they can, or remain the rest of their lives among the natives, wandering from island to island; some marry and bring up children among them. If such understand a handicraft business, that of blacksmith or carpenter, ship or boat builder, &c., and there is no ardent spirit to be purchased, or otherwise procured, they generally fare well amongst the islanders. To-day the natives have furnished a supply of hogs, but it is almost impossible to procure food for them, except the ninita, (papaw) which remains but for a short time in a wholesome state. At present the poor people are very destitute of the vegetable food, which they are accustomed to subsist on, and frequently complain and make signs of being hungry, and yet it is out of our power to supply their wants; they never think of killing a hog for themselves, they are mostly reared for sale and for the use of the chiefs. In the afternoon went on shore with a present for King George, consisting of a large chest of tools, a cask of flooring nails, a ship's compass, with sundry articles for his queen, Charlotte. Some articles had already been given to Josiah Toobow, the king of Tongataboo, when on board the 'Henry Freeling.' To-day we took with us some things considered suitable for his queen, Mary, so that no difference or distinction might appear on our side, more particularly as Josiah Toobow is an older man, and much higher in rank. King George is however very assiduous in giving him the preference in every thing.

13th. "At two o'clock, P. M., Charles Tucker, the resident missionary at Lifuka, and his wife, accompanied King George and his wife Charlotte, on board to dinner; on taking our seats at the table, I told Charles Tucker that it was *our* practice to endeavour to feel a grateful tribute arise in our hearts to Him from whom all our blessings come; *they* were of course left at liberty; when Charles Tucker called upon the king to ask a blessing, he complied in a serious manner. The parties were greatly amused with seeing a set of William Darton's Scripture views, &c., and I believe were pleased with their visit. We landed towards evening and walked to the other side of the island for ex-



ercise; we found this part wholly enclosed by a coral reef, which enables the people to procure fish in almost any weather.

“When looking towards visiting Lifuka, I thought as the principal part of the Tongataboo people, with their ruler, would be assembled here, that I might not have to proceed to that island, but I do not find that this will be sanction enough for me to stay away from it, as it has dwelt much upon my mind for several days past, and therefore I believe it safest for me to go thither, however opposed to my own inclination; but if the Lord’s presence does but go with me, it is enough, for in His presence only there is life, and at His right hand durable riches and righteousness, yea pleasures for evermore. The desire and prayer of my heart, and I believe it may be added, my greatest delight also, is to be found labouring to exalt his great and adorable name, and to promote the extension of the blessed Saviour’s kingdom in the hearts of mankind. On returning to the boat in the evening, several of the missionaries were upon the beach, when I told James Watkin that I could not pass by Tongataboo, offering him a passage with us to his family at Nukulofa. Fearing to let the members of the mission separate without requesting a select opportunity with them, I told them that I should like us to have an hour or so together, in the presence of the Most High, before they separated; this proposal was accepted with openness, and every thing made to give way for bringing it about. To-morrow evening at six or seven o’clock was mentioned as the probable time for our meeting together. When we got on board I told Captain Keen, that as matters then stood with me, I saw nothing in the way to prevent our going towards Tongataboo, and that the water casks had better be filled up to-morrow, as the beginning of the ensuing week might be looked to as the probable time of our leaving this place. It is expected that the Vavau missionaries will return in two or three days from this time.

14th. “Engaged on board bartering with the natives during the fore-part of the day. A large canoe came alongside before dinner with a present from King George, viz. six spears, two bundles of native cloth, a large floor mat, and two cowries, which in days past were considered the most valuable ornaments worn by the rulers of these islands, and very rarely to be met with at present. The bearer of these articles is a Portuguese, but understands English; and he said that the king was desirous to obtain from me an English spelling-book. This token of the king’s good will was verbally acknowledged, and the messenger himself presented with a testament in the Portuguese language.

“My mind in the midst of many interruptions, attendant upon bartering with the natives, and other duties, had to sustain a heavy load of exercise, in the prospect of meeting the missionaries and their families in the evening, which to my view was no small matter.

“Landed in the afternoon and drank tea at the mission-house. About the time agreed upon, the whole of the families, except the wife and young children of John Hobbs, (whose numerous family could not be left alone,) assembled in a large room in Charles Tucker’s house, and sat down together in silence. I endeavoured to keep my mind stayed in humble dependence upon Him, who commands the morning, and causeth the day-spring to know his place; and after dwelling a considerable time in silence, it was with me to bow the knee in supplication unto Him who inhabiteth the praises of eternity, and ‘covereth himself with light as a garment,’ and to ask in the name of our Redeemer, that his life-giving presence might be near on the occasion, to subdue in us every thing that stands opposed to his righteous principle of light, life, and love, that his power alone may rule and preserve our hearts, &c. After sitting down again a quiet season was vouchsafed, though a further time of silence was to be passed through. There seemed much to pass through before the way was fairly open before me, to declare the indispensable necessity for each of us to know for ourselves the will of God, seeing that Christ has said, ‘not every one that saith Lord, Lord, shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven;’ that before we are in a state to be entrusted with the knowledge of the Divine will, the will of the creature must be laid low, and subjected to the will of the great Creator; our bodies must become living sacrifices, holy, acceptable to God; we must be altogether transformed, and our minds renewed by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, believed in, and operating in us, ‘that we may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God,’ as defined by the Apostle Paul to the Romans. Every thing depends upon this knowledge;—to know the will of God in the first place, and then to do it. ‘To obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.’ It is those only who do the will of the Father, that shall know of the doctrine of ‘His well beloved Son, in whom he is well pleased.’

“The whole of our Lord’s precepts must be regarded as binding upon His followers; we cannot choose for ourselves, by selecting some parts and leaving others. His example must be followed in every thing, in every part, to the denial of self in all things. ‘He that will be my disciple must deny himself, take up his daily cross, and follow me,’ are the terms which He prescribes; we must take up a daily cross to our own corrupt wills and inclinations. It seldom occurs, that the path chosen for us, or the thing required of us, is what we, as creatures, should choose for ourselves, or can very readily yield obedience to; it is against the nature of flesh and blood, it does not suit our inclination; if it were not so, and our will was consulted, there would be no cross to take up—it would be a sacrifice which cost us nothing. We must be willing to part with, and to suffer the loss of all things for Christ’s sake; and in

following the great example which he hath left us, we must in no part thereof deny him before men, nor be ashamed of him and his words before men, lest He should also deny us, and be ashamed of us, before His Father and the holy angels, according to his own awful denunciation against such unworthy followers.

"It was with me to urge the necessity of their being concerned above all things to know the will, and do the will of our heavenly Father, both male and female, for both are one in Christ, that so all might, by implicit obedience, know for themselves the will of God, to be unto them wisdom and righteousness, sanctification and redemption by the blood of Jesus.

"It was a solid and solemn season, the power of Truth was over all. Before leaving the shore, I mentioned the probability of my again attending a meeting of the natives, on the following first-day morning, to which no difficulty seemed likely to present.

15th. "In the afternoon we went on shore, with a view to getting things so settled as to insure no failure in my seeing the natives in their meeting to-morrow. James Watkin again kindly undertook the office of interpreter, and I returned on board satisfied with the arrangements agreed upon, and felt a little strengthened to look forward with some degree of humble confidence and resignation.

16th. (*First-day.*) "This morning, went to Charles Tucker's house, to wait until the natives were collected together. On the way was much gratified to learn that it was concluded to dispense with many of the exercises usually carried on by the missionaries themselves at their meetings on first-days. This circumstance had come about without my knowledge, although I had before time mentioned that the meetings lasted longer than the people were able to bear, densely stowed upon the floor, almost without a circulation of air, in a tropical climate.

"After I had taken my station by the side of James Watkin, a general silence prevailed over the multitude assembled on the occasion, and in due time my mouth was opened to revive in their hearing, that 'Whoso is wise, and will observe these things, even they shall understand the loving kindness of the Lord.' But the first thing to be done in order to partake of the Lord's loving kindness, which is better than life, is to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ; without this none can behold his wonderful works, nor praise him, for his great goodness to the children of men. When the Saviour of the world was on earth, and dwelt among the sons of men, he did not many mighty works in some places, because of the unbelief of the people. It is the same at this day, for unless we believe in the power of his Holy Spirit in our hearts, we can never witness any of his mighty works, to be done and wrought in us, or be able to call him Lord, by the Holy Ghost. There is no way unto God the Father, but by the Son; and we can never know the Son, to be 'the way, the truth, and the life,' without we



believe in his power to save to the uttermost, all those that are willing to come unto God by him. 'For he that cometh to God, must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.' Without faith it is impossible to please him, but how great is his goodness to the humble believer that feareth him; to them that wait for him, to the soul that seeketh him. Yea, eternal life is the reward of all those, who by patient continuance in well doing, thus seek the Lord with believing hearts. While tribulation, anguish, indignation and wrath, will be the portion of unbelievers, and of those who are contentious, who disregard the shinings of the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world, who obey not the truth, or the manifestations of the Spirit of Truth, which convinceth of sin.

"My heart was enlarged, and the way fairly opened before me, to proclaim amongst the people, 'the truth as it is in Jesus,' and to tell them that salvation was nigh unto them, that day—it depended upon themselves—it remained with themselves—to 'believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and be saved.' Not merely to believe that he came in the flesh, and died for the sins of the whole world, but to believe in the coming of his Holy Spirit into their hearts, to purge away their sins, and save them from the wrath to come, while the day of their visitation is mercifully lengthened out. In the same love which brought me among them, I bade them all an affectionate farewell in the Lord. Many of them with whom we were personally acquainted, flocked round us, to shake hands, amongst others, the king and his principal chiefs. And now believing myself clear of the island, we paid a short and final visit to the mission-house, and then returned to the vessel, having no other prospect before me but that of sailing in the morning towards Tongataboo.

17th. "Unmoored at the earliest dawn of day. Soon after we were ready, our passenger, James Watkin, came on board, with the whole body of missionaries then at Lifuka. Their stay was necessarily short indeed, scarcely longer than while they delivered up their letters and parcels, for not a few of their friends and connexions in Sidney and England. On their departure the anchor was weighed, and we immediately proceeded towards the opening in the reef, making all sail, if possible, to clear the principal dangers of the Harbai group, before nightfall. We had a pilot with us, a native of Tongataboo, appointed to escort us by Josiah Too-bow, the king of that island, by name Azariah, a man well acquainted with the different channels, but who could not understand many words of English. The wind became more opposed at sunset, and instead of our being in tolerably open water, we were entangled with the long and dangerous reef off the island of Anamookoo, and were at last compelled to run down to its leeward-most point, in order to get clear of its crags. When the sound of the breakers thundering upon the reef, could be heard, we were still

within its reach, but as the noise became fainter, we then considered ourselves beyond its outermost point, and ventured to haul up to the south south-east, for the night.

18th. "At day-break, found that we had lost considerable ground, during the hours of darkness. This morning the wind fresh, but not favourable, and our progress much impeded by a head swell of the sea. We beat through the day without appearing to gain much to windward.

19th. "This morning the wind strong, and almost directly against our course, but about ten o'clock were favoured to get sight of Eaueike, owing to a strong current, which had, during the night, hurried us away to the eastward, and the wind being strong, by noon the island of Tongataboo was distinctly to be seen, though the weather was thick and hazy. As we edged away towards the passage through the reef, the swell of the sea was brought more behind, and helped to hasten us more rapidly forward, so that by two o'clock we were abreast of the settlement of Nukualofa, and were favoured to anchor safely in fourteen fathoms water, in a well sheltered place, except when the winds blow from the northward and westward. The north side of this island is one mass of reefs, rocks, and small islands. Twenty-two of these islands are in sight from the vessel, and in several directions the surf breaks incessantly upon sunken reefs, which form the principal shelter between us and the main ocean.

"A brig under English colours, was entering the narrow channel from the southward at the same time as ourselves, but she took a different route from us, after passing Duke's Island, and anchored off a heathen settlement, several miles distant from Nukualofa: She proved to be the 'Guide,' a Sidney whaling vessel in want of supplies. Soon after having anchored, a canoe arrived, and carried off our agreeable passenger and companion, James Watkin, whose wife could be seen on the shore waiting for her husband. Having had but little rest for the two past nights, we remained on board, and the afternoon turning out wet, but few of the natives visited the vessel. It is indeed renewed cause of humble thankfulness to be again and again preserved amidst these dangerous and little frequented groups of the Friendly Islands, and particularly during our stay at Lifuka, where there were but few feet of water to spare between the rocks which were visible, and the bottom of our vessel. Had one of those furious hurricanes been permitted, which are occasionally witnessed by these islands, her destruction would have been inevitable. The very day after our arrival, (as before noticed,) the wind came in upon us, and the atmosphere assumed for a time a threatening and alarming appearance: but after having been shown our critical and helpless situation, and renewedly made sensible that there was no refuge, but in that power which winds and waves obey, the storm was hushed, and the wind gradually shifted to its usual trade-quarter again, and

the rod was no more lifted up during our stay of about a fortnight. Some of the missionaries, who well knew our dangerous situation, were perhaps more alarmed for us than we were for ourselves, who were comparatively ignorant of many of the local circumstances, peculiar to that neighbourhood; indeed, one of them afterwards acknowledged his not having been able to sleep on our account, when the change of weather took place, and the clouds gathered blackness in the stormy quarter.

"We find that a large portion of the inhabitants of Tongataboo still retain their heathenish practices, and hitherto could never be prevailed upon to cast away their idols. They keep those who have embraced Christianity in constant alarm, and cause them to keep up a strict watch and to live within strongly fortified places, as in a state of actual warfare.

20th. "A few of the natives came off this morning with some poor hogs and a few vegetables, but for these and for their shells, they seem to have learned how to ask very extravagant prices, which is owing, we are told, to their having calls not very unfrequently from our men-of-war, who purchase largely their hogs, yams, shells, &c., without regard to price. In the forenoon, Charles and myself sat down together in the cabin. It was a low season with me, as when the bridegroom is taken away; towards the conclusion a degree of strength was graciously afforded, although my soul's enemies were still felt to be lively and strong. At one o'clock, P. M., landed for the first time at the settlement of Nukualofa, but the tide being low we were compelled to submit to being carried over a part of the reef, the water being too shallow to float our boat. James Watkin, with two children, was on the beach, ready to conduct us to his house; and we spent an agreeable afternoon with his family. In the course of the time we were there, Abraham, the brother of Josiah Toobow, the king, came in to see us:—he seems a serious steady man, from forty to fifty years of age, and is considered a religious character.

"The settlement of Nukualofa is surrounded by tall trees, so thickly planted, that a man cannot pass between them, having several sally-ports or entrance gates, which are secured at night in a substantial manner. Outside this wall of trees, which have rails connected with them, is a very deep trench, the coral taken out of which, forms an additional barrier of defence outside the trees, and renders the approach almost inaccessible. It was pleasant to find that the missionaries have lived latterly entirely outside these fortifications, without any defence beyond a fence of slender cane-work. On returning to the vessel at sun-set, we found a large shark hanging to her side, which had been struck with a harpoon, by some whalers who had called on board, belonging to the 'Guide,' of Sidney."

The following are copies of letters received while at the Island of Lifuka, Harbai:—



*"Lifuka, October 10th, 1836.*

"Dear Sir,

"We, the Wesleyan missionaries, assembled at our inner district meeting, beg leave sincerely to congratulate you upon the hitherto successful prosecution of your missionary voyage, and to express the unfeigned pleasure we feel in seeing you in this part of the great missionary field; and we trust that your efforts to promote the knowledge of the true God, will have had the blessing of God; and that you will have the pleasure of seeing at the right hand of the Most High, many who, from among the Gentiles, have been turned from darkness to light, by your instrumentality.

"We beg leave too to offer you our best thanks for the kindness you have manifested in bringing five of our members, with our families, to this place; and we pray that, He who does not forget the smallest kindness done to the least of His disciples, may reward you with every needful blessing, both for soul and body, and finally grant unto you and yours, 'Eternal Life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.'

"Signed, on behalf of the meeting,

"JOHN THOMAS, Chairman,

"JAMES WATKIN, Secretary."

*"Lifuka, Harbai, October 17th, 1836.*

"Dear Friend,

"We, as Wesleyan Methodist missionaries, labouring in the Friendly Islands, beg leave at this our annual meeting, to express our sentiments to you, in reference to your visiting the various mission-stations in these seas.

"We admire the principle which induced you to sacrifice the blessings of civilized society, and quit the land of your fathers, in order to witness the glorious effects of the Gospel among heathen nations, and preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.

"We doubt not but you have been richly rewarded in your own mind for all the sacrifices you have made, and the privations you have been called to endure while prosecuting the great work in which you are engaged. We rejoice that the Lord has so signally blessed you hitherto in your undertaking, and pray that his kind Providence may still preside over you, and make your way plain.

"We have been very much gratified by your visit to this part of the great mission field. We hail you as a fellow labourer in the Gospel, and wish you God's speed.

"The very great kindness which you and your excellent son have manifested to us in a variety of instances, has produced a deep impression on our minds; be assured you will long live in our affection, and we hope, that your addresses and conversation will produce their desired effect.

"And now, as you are about to take your departure from this

place, we commend you to God, and take an affectionate farewell, until we shall meet in our Father's house above. We remain dear friend,

“Yours, affectionately,

“JOHN THOMAS.

JOHN HOFFS.

JAMES WATKIN.

CHARLES TUCKER.

WILLIAM ALLEN BROOKS.

STEPHEN RAYBONE.

JOHN SPINNEY.”

21st. “Landed in the afternoon and made our way to the mission-house, taking with us a variety of drugs, and numerous articles of clothing for children, for the use of James Watkin's family, with a quantity of dresses suitable for the native children. It is a great privilege, through the kindness of my dear friends in England, to be able to administer, in some degree, to the wants and comforts of those to whom I am most certainly very greatly indebted, and without whose kind and brotherly assistance, my mouth, in most instances, must have been closed, as regards declaring the word of Life in the different islands.

22nd. “In the morning some of the heathen part of the community came on board, and appeared pleased at the treatment they met with; some articles they brought, by way of gaining their good-will, rather than from necessity, were purchased. Abraham, the king's brother, spent a part of the day with us; after dinner he was presented with a broad axe. Landed in the afternoon and called upon Thomas Wellard and his wife.

“The missionaries at the late district meeting, held at Lifuka, have concluded it best for him to return to his friends at Hobart Town, Van Diemen's Land. The poor man, for whom I feel regret, has applied to me to give him and his wife a passage to Sidney; I can give no answer, it being at present uncertain whether a direct course to Sidney from hence will be a peaceful one; time must decide our future destination. All that man can do, is to endeavour to stand in the counsel of the Divine will, and in humble resignation wait for its unfolding to the finite understanding, and when once ascertained, then do it with all his might. Go thou and do likewise, with all thy might, whoever thou art, who may perhaps read these fragments, inscribed by one who has trodden the narrow path before thee, but who, however unworthy of the least of all the Lord's tender mercies, is at seasons comforted in believing that he is on the way to the heavenly city, none of whose inhabitants can say ‘I am sick.’ Finding the necessary arrangements had been made to make the way open for my seeing the people to-morrow, when collected in their place of worship, we returned on board, and found some of the poor despised heathen waiting with a quantity of cocoa-nuts for sale. These nuts are such as are only fit for hogs, being too old and rancid for the use of the people, who are very short of food at this time.

“On the — we had an opportunity of seeing a Tonga Kava party, which took place on the arrival of King Torban from Lifuka—where he had been attending the district meeting. He was accompanied home by King George, in honour of whom, probably, the entertainment in question was principally given. The Kava ceremony was performed in the open air, the heads of the islands only being under cover, and the strangers, if any were present. The people were squatted in regular order, forming three sides of a square, in front of their king and chiefs. The fourth side was an open building, on the floor of which sat Josiah Toobow, with three of his principal men on each side of him, and the admiral of the fleet directed the different proceedings of the meeting, but Taufaaahau mingled among those who were to prepare the Kava. As strangers, we were allowed to sit upon the floor of the building, with the rulers of the people, which afforded us full opportunity of seeing the whole process. The root of Kava was, after being well crushed with a heavy pole, separated into smaller parcels, and handed to different individuals, whose names were proclaimed aloud, as being chosen for having good, clean teeth, and sweet breath. When they had chewed a mouthful of the root sufficiently, it was placed in a cup, made from the banana leaf; these cups were finally collected, and their contents emptied into a large bowl, employed solely for the purpose. Water was then poured into the bowl, and when the chewed root was sufficiently saturated, a large bunch of very fine shavings, prepared from the puran bark was used as a strainer, and the liquor repeatedly passed through it, until clear of all apparent sediment. When pronounced ready, it is ordered to be served up, and every cup that is filled is retained, until the name of the person is declared unto whom it should be handed. We had to take a share of the nauseous liquid, but of course, a little served the turn. Many heavy burdens of baked food, each brought upon a pole upon the shoulders of two men, were laid in front of the king and chiefs, who directed to whom a basket should be given. Many of these were ordered to the men of the fleet, who were numerous on the occasion, as the largest canoes carry at least 100 men. Thanks were repeatedly given to those who had the fatiguing part of the work—specially to the Kava makers, the food bakers, the chewers, the carriers, and the cup bearers. Returned on board as soon as the tide was high enough to carry us over the outer reef.

27th. “Before eight o’clock, A. M., James Watkin came on board, bringing with him five natives, to accompany us in an attempt to procure an interview with a body of the heathen, residing at the settlement of Mua, in a fortified position. We left the vessel forthwith, and proceeded towards the Lagoon, at the entrance of which a bay of islands in miniature is formed. At eleven o’clock, we were abreast of the settlement, but the boat grounding upon a sand-bank, at a considerable distance from the shore, one



of the natives, Isaackee, waded to the landing-place, where a number of the people were collected on seeing the boat approach their territory. Upon being informed by Isaackee who we were, and the object of our visit, they denied that the chief was at home. Our man returned to us, and said, the chief was not at home, but that Charles and myself might land, but not the missionary. The appearance upon the shore was not very inviting, as the war clubs were seen plainly in the hands of some of the natives. James Watkin advised us not to land. I was not satisfied, however, without making some further attempt to get among them, and Isaackee was despatched again, to say, that our coming on shore would be useless, without the missionary to interpret. He did not at all hesitate to go, but, apprehending some mischief might arise, said, on leaving us, 'if they kill me, it will be nothing.' After a considerable parley had taken place, our man returned again, and said, that 'we might all come on shore;' but now James Watkin refused to accompany us, as the objection had appeared to be against him only. I felt a little disappointed at hearing this, but concluded to land, at all events, without further debate. Charles and myself were then conveyed to the shore by our native boats' crew, and although a considerable number of these people immediately flocked about us, I had not the least apprehension of danger, for the fear of man was cast out. We ascertained afterwards that at least twenty muskets were pointed upon us, from behind a strong wooden fence, in readiness, had any affray taken place. We had in our hands only an umbrella each. We proceeded towards the settlement, under an escort of the people, until we had passed through the gates of the strong hold, and at length reached the habitation of the chief. We found him at home, and with a number of his people squatted ready upon the floor, waiting our arrival. The chief, perceiving me at a loss to distinguish him from the rest, moved aside to the log of an old tree, upon which we both sat down together. This, I thought, was correct on my part, from the signs that he made to me. He could talk a few words of English, but could not understand any thing that I said. I made him understand that they had a shipwrecked sailor among them, (of whom I had heard previously) and made signs for him to be fetched, but he did not make his appearance, and was probably ashamed of being seen by his countrymen. The chief was evidently desirous to ask questions, but I signified that without the missionary we could do nothing. Some people then had orders to go for James Watkin, who arrived in less than half an hour. During this interval the number of people increased, and a root of the Kava plant was laid at my feet, as a token of good-will towards me. An offer of some of the liquor was then tendered, which I accepted, to show that I had nothing but good-will towards them in return. Some persons were then appointed to chew the root, and prepare this odious drink, which, in due time, was handed to me. I drank

some of it before them, and handed the remainder to one of the people, which I had learned was a usual practice in such cases. James Watkin now entered into conversation with the chief, and believing that things were going on smoothly, I proposed that the translation of my certificate from the morning meeting should be read. It was patiently and attentively heard to the end, with ample explanation to elucidate the cause of my coming among them. I had then to tell them, that the God whom I served is a God of love and mercy, and willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all men every where should repent, return unto Him and live; and that such is the love of God to his creature man, that he gave his only begotten Son to save them from their sins, 'that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.' That I was not satisfied to leave their island, without telling them of the good things which God hath prepared for those that love him: I declared that salvation was come nigh unto them—yea, placed within their reach, and that by Jesus Christ, he is Lord of all; through the shedding of whose precious blood the gift of the Holy Spirit was received for every mortal, whether son or daughter,—for the whole human race—even for the rebellious. I told them, that I did not come among them to persuade them to turn to this way of life or that way of life, but to turn them from the darkness they were in to the light of Christ, 'from the power of Satan unto God.' To this Holy Spirit, the love of God in Christ Jesus our head, I desired that their hearts might be directed, and to the patient waiting for Christ, that they might know Him to be in them 'who liveth and abideth for ever.' The above is the substance of what I had to express among them; and though some individuals mocked and behaved rudely, saying aloud, 'I wish he had done;' so that James Watkin stopped, and reproved them for their behaviour; yet through all it made no difference with me, because the Divine Power was over others, and I believe that its influence was felt by the chief, as I observed, when I had finished and sat down, that his countenance was entirely changed, and he said that 'I had done well in coming.'

"Afterwards, by way of accounting for their not setting food before us, as is their usual custom with strangers, (which I firmly believe would have been done, had it been in his power,) he said, that they had very little to eat, and that it would be about five months before they could have plenty again; looking forward to the rainy season setting in. This I knew to be the case, as the famine in all the Friendly Isles was grievous, but more so at Tongataboo, than at Lifuka, as the bread fruit, banana, yam, sweet potatoes, &c., were almost wholly destroyed by a hurricane: they were now eating the roots of the banana and tea tree. It has been painful to observe how many have complained to us of hunger: some would put their hands on their stomachs, and exclaim, 'dead, dead.' It is, however, a certain fact, that in those places

where the people are under the control of the missionaries, they are much better off for food (although suffering much,) than the heathen part of the community. Some of these, called heathen, declare, particularly the chief just alluded to, and the other that came on board our vessel, that they perfectly understand the nature of Christianity, and the blessing that it bestows, but say, 'if we were to follow it we should have to give up all our present delights—put away all our wives but one, and all our bad habits,' &c. They seem sensible of the sinful condition in which they live; for they say, in effect, 'it is impossible that we should be saved—it cannot be.' Their poor bodies very generally bear the marks of violence, from the habit they are in of lacerating and burning themselves, as an indication of mourning for the dead, &c.: this was strikingly apparent. The little fingers on both hands had been in many cases cut off, and offered as sacrifices to avert the evils they most dreaded. This we found to be very general among those who are called Christians, but more particularly remarked it to be the case with those that are grown up; the rising generation of these now retain them. This circumstance we discovered on shaking hands with them, from their kings and chiefs down to the humblest individuals of their tribes, both male and female. We parted from this heathen chief in a friendly manner: his name is Fatu. It gave me much pain, to hear from his own mouth, through James Watkin, that, amidst all the wretchedness of a heathen life, the miseries of his people were greatly increased by an intercourse with the shipping: disease was fast sweeping them away.

"It is a lamentable fact, that most of the vessels which touch at Tongataboo, come to anchor on the heathen shores, because where the missionaries reside at Nukualofa, there is not the same opportunity for the crew to indulge in their diabolical practices, and promote the sale of rum, &c. While we were at Tongataboo, two vessels under the English flag, and one under the American, anchored near the heathen settlement—where there is much better shelter from the sea, it is true, than at Nukualofa; at the latter station, however, the 'Henry Freeling,' rode sufficiently secure. Such as do anchor at Nukualofa, are uniformly respectable, and the crews under proper restraint: it was quite the reverse with those which went to the other place, during our stay at the island. It was late in the afternoon before we got back from the heathen settlement of Mua.

28th. "To-day, Josiah Toobow, and Mary, the king and queen of the island, with their two sons dined on board, they brought with them James Watkin, as interpreter. A prodigiously large fat turtle, and a quantity of fine yams, were brought as a present by our guests. These yams we understood to have come from Vavau; that island being hilly, the crops in the vallies, were more sheltered from the late storm, but as Lifuka, and Tongataboo,



are flat, level islands, no part escaped the fury of this sweeping blast.

"No opening presented, during the stay of our royal visiters, for anything like edifying conversation, but I believe the heat and the motion of the vessel, made some of them a little sea-sick, as the wind was strong and a swell of the sea tumbled in upon us. The king, however, expressed his satisfaction with the visit, and they were all much pleased with the inside of the 'Henry Freeling.' The tide being low, our boat could only approach the edge of the reef, but the queen, being barefooted, had no difficulty in paddling over the coral bottom, a few inches under water. The king preferred taking a passage in a small canoe, with a single native to manage it.

29th. "The morning proved boisterous, but we landed for an hour about the time of high water, being desirous to speak with James Watkin, not feeling easy to let an opportunity pass away without improvement, of attending the native meeting to-morrow, if it should rest with me to do so. The fleet from Harbai, having arrived since last first-day, has increased the number of people greatly, who are here, from other islands. I found James Watkin ready as usual, to render me every assistance in his power, and the morning was mentioned, if it was concluded to come, and the weather did not prevent our landing. It may be the last opportunity that I shall have to see such a body of the Friendly Islanders together, and such an one as could scarcely have been expected to occur while at Tongataboo, and indeed is of rare occurrence at any time, if it ever took place before this season. No other motive, I trust, prompts in me a desire to avail myself of the opportunity thus placed within my reach so unexpectedly, than what is induced by that love which embraces the whole human family, and would bind all the children of men in the Lord's bundle of life everlasting. May the shout of a king be heard among these people, and the glorious majesty of the spiritual kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, be unfolded to their understanding, by the same Almighty power which opened the heart of Lydia, in days that are over and gone, to His own praise and glory.

30th. (*First-day*.) "The state of the weather combined with other circumstances to weigh down my mind, when looking towards attending the native meeting; and the secret prayer of my heart last evening was, 'Help, O Lord, for thy great name's sake, and for the sake of Him who died, the just, for the unjust, that He might bring all mankind unto Thee.'

"The morning was rough and boisterous, and there not being water enough for the boat to pass over the reef into a sheltered landing-place, seemed to throw difficulties in the way of our getting on shore. This being the position of affairs, I determined to take an arm-chair from the vessel to render the fatigue of trans-

porting us more tolerable to the willing natives, and divide the weight more equally between several men: two of these who had been watching our movements, were seen wading towards the edge of the outer reef, as our boat approached. We were, however, at last placed safely upon the beach, without any material inconvenience to ourselves, though the task was laborious for our burden bearers. I felt much discouraged soon after day break, and could almost have reasoned myself into a fancied liberty to remain quietly on board, and yet it did not appear that I should stand acquitted, unless a firm attempt to get through was first made on my part, and proved to be altogether futile and unavailing; but before leaving the vessel this gloom was measurably dispelled, and I was strengthened to press forward, and with humble resignation to bind the sacrifice as to the horns of the altar.

“We had some spare time at the mission-house before the people were collected:—on account of the inadequate dimensions of the building to accommodate the thousands assembled, several hundreds were left outside, but they endeavoured to keep as near as they could to the place where the speaker is best heard. James Watkin occupied a short space of time in speaking to the people, and then left them in expectation of something from my mouth, when a general silence prevailed.—It was not long before I stood up in great weakness and fear, and told them that I felt myself to be indeed a feeble instrument in a cause so great and dignified; but they might remember, that the Lord’s servants formerly, as now, had nothing of their own with which to satisfy the cravings of a hungry multitude. But when the Great Master was pleased to command a blessing, the few loaves and fishes were so multiplied, that there was much more left, after the people were fed to the full, than there had been before they began to eat. It is only, as He is pleased to qualify any one to speak in his name, and to open the understandings of them that hear, that any can be availingly benefitted,—‘Without me ye can do nothing,’ said Christ; and though some may feel desirous to follow Him, in the way of self-denial and the cross, yet when an hour of trial comes, such is the weakness of the flesh, that we are ready to shrink for fear of man, for fear of persecution, and are ready to deny Him, who suffered for us—who died that we might live for ever. But, although, without Christ we can do nothing, yet through His strength we can do all things—through the strength of His Holy Spirit, in our inner man, we can do all things to the praise and glory of God. It is in the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus, that we must believe, and wait to hear his voice, and obey him in all things.—This is that heavenly Prophet, of whom Moses spake to the children of Israel, whom the Lord their God should raise up unto them from amongst their brethren:—‘A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, from amongst your brethren, like unto me, (said Moses) Him shall ye hear in all things; and the soul that will not hear this

Prophet shall be cut off from amongst the people.' In due time this was fulfilled;—this Prophet of the Lord was raised up amongst the people—born at Bethlehem, in Judea, in whom the fulness of the God-head dwelt bodily, and of whom the Holy Father testified and said, 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, hear ye him.' This is the Prophet whom we must hear in all things, as the children of Israel in that day heard Moses in all things, but with this difference, Moses was only heard while in the flesh upon the earth, and this Prophet speaketh from heaven, by His Holy Spirit in the heart of man. 'Him shall ye hear in all things, and the soul that will not hear this Prophet shall be cut off from among the people.' How needful then for us to wait, and to watch, and to pray, that we may hearken, and hear, and obey Him that speaketh unto us from heaven in righteousness, mighty to save the soul from sin. It is by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, that our hearts must be cleansed and purified from every defilement; it is this that searcheth all things—our secret thoughts and imaginations are all laid open before it, and nothing that is unclean or impure, that worketh abomination, or that maketh a lie, can stand before this heart-searching power of the Lord, which, as a fire, consumeth all that cannot bear His righteous judgments. But if this heavenly Teacher is heard and obeyed in all things, with meekness and resignation, fearing to offend or grieve the Holy Spirit of the Lord, it will purify us even as He is pure, and prepare us for the reception into our hearts of the spiritual kingdom of Christ Jesus. This is the kingdom that men are commanded, above all things, first to seek for, with a sure promise of our Lord, that 'all things needful should be added' unto them.

"What then remains to prevent mankind from receiving the kingdom of Christ Jesus, which will never have an end, but hardness of heart and unbelief in his spiritual appearance in man. We can scarcely suppose that any one will earnestly seek for that which they do not believe can be found. Hopeless and forlorn indeed is the situation of such as these. In vain do they say that they believe in Jesus Christ as the Saviour of the world, and that there is no salvation but by Him—and yet remain strangers to His heavenly power, to cleanse their hearts from sin, for want of believing that He is come in Spirit, therefore they know him not. It is a consideration as affectingly awful, as it is true, that although he is the Saviour of them that believe, yet without we know and witness the power of His Holy Spirit to save us from our sins, he is no Saviour of ours; our belief is vanity, and will end in vexation of spirit: we are not among them that believe to the saving of the soul, notwithstanding all our profession of religion before men.

"This is the substance of the testimony I had to bear amongst these people, though but a part of what I had to say; inviting and encouraging them, above all things, to seek first, and in earnest,



the kingdom of heaven, and the righteousness thereof;—and with desires for their present and eternal welfare, I sat down.

“The place was exceedingly crowded, and the people were very solid and attentive. A number of English persons were present, probably in part from the shipping.

“Spent the afternoon on board with our own people.

1st of Eleventh month. “Yesterday the weather was so boisterous as to prevent our having any communication with the people on shore. This afternoon got on shore for exercise. Believing that it would be best for me to leave here a copy of the address presented to those in authority at the Sandwich Islands, to be translated into the Tonguese language, for the kings and rulers of the Friendly Islands; the subject was this afternoon mentioned to James Watkin, who concurred in the apprehension that it would be useful to them. Under these considerations a fair copy was drawn up by Charles, and put into the hands of James Watkin, accompanied by the following letter, which was addressed to the missionaries at the Friendly Islands.

“Dear Friends,

“The annexed, as will be seen on perusal, was addressed to those highest in authority upon the Sandwich Islands, and was presented when the king, and Kinau, (the female in whom the executive power is invested,) with several of the principal chiefs, were assembled together to receive it. It was translated at the time by the senior American missionary, Hiram Bingham, and they afterwards expressed a desire that it should be printed. Although its contents may be peculiarly adapted to the present state of those for whom it was originally intended, yet as the same interest dwells in my heart towards the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands, I thought no harm could arise from presenting a copy of it to Josiah Toobow and Taufaahau, the kings of Tongataboo and Harbai, as it is possible that some hints may be found applicable, if not at the present day, in a day that is to come, to themselves, or to those who may succeed them in authority; at any rate it exhibits a Christian principle, a standard, round which all nations may rally with safety, at all times, and at every period of their existence.

“I am your affectionate friend, in the bonds of the Gospel, the soul’s truest liberty,

“DANIEL WHEELER.

“‘*Henry Freeling, off Nukualofa, Tongataboo,*  
1st of 11th mo., 1836.

“To the missionaries at the Friendly Islands.”

## CHAPTER XVIII.

Tongataboo—condition of the heathen natives—meeting with the foreigners—visit to a heathen chief—parting interviews with the natives and missionaries—sail from the Friendly Islands—New Zealand—anchor in the Bay of Islands—natives on board—visit the mission family—native meeting at Koua-Koua—an aged missionary—desolating effects of intercourse with the shipping.

3d. “While on shore yesterday afternoon, for the needful exercise, we saw many fine healthy yam plantations coming forward, but the poor natives are suffering grievously for want of food at present, and yet they do not seem to exert themselves to procure an extra quantity of fish, which we find no difficulty in taking.

“To-day, sent a quantity of tracts on board the ‘Chieftain,’ a London whaling vessel, having become acquainted with her captain. Got on shore in the afternoon, but the state of the tides just now renders these excursions both tedious and difficult.

“Taufaahau, having accomplished his object of escorting Josiah Toobow, back in safety to his own islands, sailed again with his numerous fleet very early this morning, but towards evening was compelled to return by opposing winds and rough weather; and to be ready to put to sea again, on the first appearance of a change in the weather, he anchored his canoes in the neighbourhood of the heathen settlements, to the very great alarm of those miserable people, who now fully concluded he had returned to chastise them for the provoking and insulting conduct of which they had been guilty in the morning, when he was about to take his departure. The missionary, however, assured us that Taufaahau, had no intention whatever of meddling with them. From what we saw, it is very evident that a trifling cause would at once set them all in a flame: both parties carry warlike weapons about with them. There are at present seventeen garrisons upon this island; such are the fear and suspicion on both sides, that they durst not live out of their strong holds. The heathen party in Tongataboo, although much superior in number to those who call themselves Christians, are the weaker body, in consequence of their own internal and perpetual broils, and the dreadful ravages of disease brought amongst them by the shipping, which is indeed as the ‘noisome pestilence that walketh in darkness, and as the destruction that wasteth at noon-day.’

“These remarks have reference to Tongataboo only: at Vavau, and the other islands which compose the Hafulauhau group, and those of the Harbai—the people almost, if not altogether, are subject to missionary control, with their king at the head of religious affairs, nominally at any rate. It is from these islands that the heathen of Tongataboo, have every thing to fear, while Taufaahau lives: they know that he is a desperate warrior, and never fails to carry all before him, when once roused up. Josiah Toobow is a

very different character, and though leaning to the missionary party, is more despised by the heathen, than feared; while his power is much greater than that of Taufaa-hau, being a much older man, the latter is very submissive and subservient to him. If Too-bow inclined to go to war, the other would probably unite with him at once; and furnish strength and skill not to be resisted, which the heathen are well aware of. It seems that a number of these poor people have now gone on board the canoes of Taufaa-hau, that they may get to Vavau, and Lifuka, and become *Christians*, without risking the loss of life from their own kindred; and we are told that many of them would be glad to lead peaceable lives, but dare not join the missionaries here, for fear of their neighbours: at the same time the different tribes are imperceptibly mingling together by marriages. All these circumstances serve to diminish the strength of these unhappy people, and like a little leaven, gradually to prepare them to renounce their abominable practices.

4th. "The swell of the sea setting directly upon the landing-place for boats, we remained on board all day; and Josiah Too-bow, with his brother Abraham, spent the afternoon on board with us. I feel comfort when looking back, that the opportunity of speaking to the people last first-day, was not suffered to pass over unembraced, on my part. It is plain now, that if the return of another first-day had been waited for, or an excuse from the state of the weather been listened to, the precious moment would have been lost for ever; and instead of a peaceful retrospect, now at seasons vouchsafed in mercy, to a poor unworthy creature, an accusing blot of anguish would have rested upon my mind, which the few yet remaining days of my pilgrimage would have been too short to obliterate. It was a remarkable circumstance, that so many hundreds of the natives should be brought together at Lifuka, and again at Tongataboo, with many of whom we had become acquainted, first at Vavau and its neighbourhood, and at Tongataboo. I recognised, with heartfelt pleasure, Lazarus the chief, at the island of Otea—David Afu, the chief at Haalaufulu, and others, as people dear to my best feelings.

"We have now been here more than a fortnight, and I do not yet see a way open for leaving the island, an event anxiously desired by some on board, on account of the exposed situation of the anchorage, when some particular winds set in. Two English vessels, and one American, have anchored off the heathen settlements, while we have been here; there the sailors can indulge their licentious habits unrestrained; but as a striking proof of the utility of establishments for civilization, it is not so at Nukualofa.

"I desire to stand in humble resignation as to any further proceeding here, or to leaving the place and bending our course towards New Zealand, and I trust to be enabled to decide with clearness before we sail.



5th. "The weather being more favourable for landing after a sultry night of lightning and rain, we went on shore at four o'clock, P. M., and having found my mind drawn towards the remnant of English and other white people here, I told James Watkin on his inquiring about the arrangements for to-morrow, that I had nothing in view towards the natives, but to sit with the English, seemed to be my present business, if that could be brought to bear. To this, no difficulty appeared; he said, there would be some part of the crew of the whaler, 'Christopher Mitchel,' of Nantucket, (from information he had received from Captain Wilbur, who had been on shore,) at the meeting for the English to-morrow. I have felt a poor creature indeed, for the last day or two, owing perhaps to the increased heat of our vessel under deck; but the Lord can deliver, raise up, and strengthen him that hath no might, either in body or mind, and can at his pleasure make quick of understanding in his fear, those that trust and hope in his mercy. May he be graciously pleased to cause the opportunity to-morrow, to be a time of visitation to some; cause the earth to tremble at his power and presence, as in days of old, when the sea saw it and fled, and Jordan was driven back; so may every thing in us, comparable to the unstable element, flee before him, and the ever blessed truth reign over all to his glory.

6th. (*First-day night*.) "Landed about ten o'clock in the forenoon: the natives were coming from their meeting as we approached the shore; soon after this the white people assembled together. On going into the place appointed for us to meet in, I observed that James Watkin had taken a side seat, to show the people that he had no part to take in that meeting, and as no hymn book appeared in the hands of any one, it seemed as if some pains must have been taken to inform them that it would be held after the manner of the Society of Friends. I sat down near a table, and as those who attended came in, they joined in the silent sitting of the rest. We had not remained long in this exercise, before I was made sensible of that power being nigh, which alone can soften the rocky heart, and cause the earthly nature in man to bow before it; and abiding under it, I had in due time to revive amongst them the language of the patriarch Jacob, when wrestling with the angel, 'I will not let thee go except thou bless me,' desiring that we might individually imitate this noble example, this morning, and like him prevail and receive that blessing of the Lord which maketh truly rich, and satisfieth the hungry wrestling soul with favour. It was then with me to state the true intent and meaning of our sitting together in silence before the Lord, and the excellency of waiting upon God, as established by the religious Society of Friends, from the time of our being gathered as a people, as a testimony to the surrounding world of our belief in the promise of the Most High God, in the new covenant of life and power, that he would write his law in the heart, and put it in

the inward parts of man, and that he would be their God, and they should be his people; and they shall no more teach every man his brother, and every man his neighbour, saying, 'Know the Lord, for they shall all know me from the least of them, unto the greatest of them,' saith the Lord, 'for I will forgive their iniquity, and remember their sin no more.' We, therefore, desire to know the Lord for ourselves, and the only way to come to this blessed knowledge, is to obey his commands and be still. 'Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen: I will be exalted on the earth.' Here is the great and glorious privilege of the Gospel dispensation, whereby, 'the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus,' is written in every heart to make free from the law of sin and death. None are left without a manifestation of the spirit of Christ Jesus, by which all have access unto God the Father, who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth. We, therefore, in our religious meetings, have no confidence in the flesh; we do not look to man as our teacher, whose breath is in his nostrils, to assist us in the worship of Almighty God—but we wait for the influence of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, to prepare our hearts to perform this worship aright. A manifestation of this heavenly spirit of grace is mercifully given unto all men—it is 'the grace of God which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men,' teaching all men that believe in it and obey it, to deny ungodliness; even the heathen have a measure of this heavenly gift dwelling in their hearts, by which, and through which, they can worship God in spirit and in truth; 'for I will be exalted among the heathen,' saith the Lord, 'I will be exalted on the earth.' Before sitting down, I told them that I did not feel at liberty to leave the island without seeing those of my own colour, to set before them the responsible station they held, and how much depended upon them and laid at their door, as examples to the surrounding nations: the superior advantages they possessed over these would be heavy in the scale of condemnation, if corresponding fruit was not brought forth: they professed to be Christians; had been brought up in Christian lands; had long had in their possession the Holy Scriptures, a blessing invaluable, for which we cannot be thankful enough: but they are a sealed book, until our understanding is opened by the same Holy Spirit, which inspired those holy men who gave them forth: even the followers of the Lord, when He was upon the earth, could not understand them, until their understandings were opened by Him. Without Him, we can do nothing. The Jews had the Scriptures, and yet they were the enemies of Him, of whom they so faithfully testify. They felt themselves secure, and thought they had in them eternal life; but what said the Prince of life; 'Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life; and they are they which testify of me, but ye will not come unto me that ye might have life.' So that although they are an inestimable gift out of the

divine treasury, bestowed upon man by the Holy Ghost, for his greatest outward heavenly comfort, to strengthen his hope in the promises of God, of life eternal through that Saviour, who is Christ the Lord, and are profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be made perfect, thoroughly furnished unto every good work: and although they are able to make wise unto salvation, it is only through faith, which is in Christ Jesus, of whom they so abundantly testify from their earliest pages. And yet, if we could repeat them from the beginning of Genesis to the end of the Revelation, they cannot save one soul, nor blot out one sin. But they direct us unto Him, unto whom all power in heaven and earth is given: Who only hath the words of eternal life: Who is himself that eternal life. To Him, then, we must go to be saved—in Him we must believe; to His Holy Spirit in our hearts we must turn, whose light shineth in all: His long-suffering, and goodness, will lead us to repentance; when we look on him, whom we have so grievously pierced, and from whose reproofs, in love and mercy, we have so long revolted, and which we have disregarded, with hardness of heart and unbelief in his power to save. This light in us, will not only set all our sins in order before us, that we may repent of them, and forsake them, but as we abide under the righteous judgments of the Lord's redeeming love, they will, though they may have been as scarlet and crimson, be made white as snow and wool, by the blood of the Lamb, and be remembered no more by Him who redeemeth our life from destruction, and crowneth us with loving-kindness and tender mercy, for his great name's sake. Behold the blessedness of those who 'know the Lord' for themselves, who have come to the knowledge of the only true God and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent, by believing in the power of the Holy Spirit, and sitting under its heavenly teachings 'this is life eternal.'

"The foregoing are the principal heads of what came before me at the time; although but a part, it contains, I believe, the substance of the whole I had to say to them. We remained on shore until sunset, by which time the water had risen high enough to allow our boat to come close to the shore.

7th. "Fixed with James Watkin, this evening, to go to Maofanga to-morrow, to visit the chief of the heathen fortress, Fakafonua.

8th. "Landed early and called upon James Watkin, who with Thomas Wellard, accompanied Charles and myself to Maofanga, the sun was very hot, and having little or no shelter, the walk was very fatiguing, though the distance is comparatively short. On reaching the fortress, we found the entrance closely blocked up, and the keeper inside could not be prevailed upon to open to us, declaring that Fakafonua was on board the American ship, which we afterwards found to be correct. James Watkin returned with



us on board, and on canvassing the subject over, he advised me not to attempt another visit. I did not, however, feel satisfied, or as if I had done all that might be done, without making further trial; and proposed to James Watkin our endeavouring to fix a time with the chief for my coming, if that could be accomplished, by sending a confidential person over for the special purpose of doing it. We landed in the evening, and after some inquiry, Nathan, a nephew of the king, was fixed upon, to settle and arrange the business altogether.

9th. "Nathan having fulfilled his engagement, came off to us at an early hour, to say, that he had been to Maofanga, and succeeded in getting into the fortress from a bush entrance, but could obtain no tidings whatever of Fakafonua. On considering the matter I concluded to land after breakfast, and inquire whether there were any other places that we could go to, which was done accordingly. James Watkin said that the natives residing to the westward, came to the meeting at Nukualofa, and that the few heathens towards the other side of the island, were scattered at distances too considerable for us to attempt to go in search of them. With me, however, there yet remained something to be done, and I believed it safest for me to tell James Watkin, that notwithstanding the trouble already incurred, and the disappointment we had witnessed, I should like to go again to Moafanga, and if our object again failed, as regarded seeing Fakafonua, I believed that I should then have done what I could. It was not a pleasant task to tell James Watkin this, as I knew he was very averse to having any thing further to do with this man; I believe, however, he saw that I was bent upon going again to Maofanga, and kindly agreed to make another trial to accomplish what I had in view.

"On reaching the fortress we found the entrance blocked up as before, but James Watkin proposed that we should try another passage, more private, which he had got a hint of; this, we at last got to, and found open, but so narrow that only one person could pass through at a time. We soon met with a native who said that the chief was there, and having obtained directions to his house, a short walk brought us to the place; where we found seven or eight American sailors hanging about. It was not long before Fakafonua himself made his appearance. Having seen him on board the 'Henry Freeling,' we were not altogether strangers to each other. I took a seat on a log at his right hand, and the natives took up their stations upon the floor, with the American sailors, and some others. James Watkin entered into conversation with the chief, while I endeavoured to keep my mind retired, in a waiting frame. At length, I requested that Fakafonua might be told that I had been among many of the islands in the Pacific Ocean with glad tidings of great joy to their inhabitants, and I was not satisfied to leave Tongataboo, without giving him a like opportunity with others to repent and believe the Gospel. Believing that it was not

too late for him to be saved, if the terms of offered mercy were accepted on his part: for the Almighty Creator of man, would have all to be saved, and that He had provided the means, that all might repent and live, by his Son Jesus Christ, the light of whose Holy Spirit shineth in every heart. I was fully persuaded, that at times he had known something of this light in himself, which had shined upon and shown him his sinful state and condition, and which had reproved him, and convinced him of his evil deeds; and though in his wickedness and hardness of heart he had rejected and resisted the strivings of the Holy Spirit, grieved it, and wounded it, yet a day would overtake him at last when its convictions would be too heavy for him to bear. 'The spirit of a man may sustain his infirmities, but a wounded spirit who can bear?' exhorting, and entreating him for some time, to repent, believe, and obey the Gospel; to turn to the light of Christ Jesus in his own heart, follow it, and live; he would then no longer walk in darkness, but in the light of life. Fakafonua interrupted me once or twice to express his thanks, and when I stopped, he told James Watkin again to thank me, and said, 'I know very well, it is true. I have thought of these things, and understand, and am convinced that is better to be a Christian, but I can never be one, I am too great a sinner to be saved: I must remain as I am.' I told James Watkin to tell him, that as he knew and understood these things, his condemnation would be greater on that account; and certainly his destruction would be of himself.

"James Watkin then said that he thought I had better speak to the sailors, (who sat and listened with great attention,) I replied, 'there is no occasion for that, they know very well.' James Watkin said, 'he thought they did not.' 'Yes,' said I, 'there is not one of them, but knows very well, that he ought to fear God, that knows when he commits sin, and that he ought not to do it, for that which may be known of God, is manifest in man; He hath showed it unto him.' Afterwards I found my mind drawn towards them, and was strengthened to declare the truth among them as it is in Jesus. We then took leave of this poor benighted heathen chief, who with his people thanked me and shook hands very kindly, and I believe we parted better friends, than we were when we met. We were offered the juice of the cocoa-nut, and the stupefying kava, both which were declined. Although nothing may come of this visit, yet it is not for me to calculate upon results, but to leave them. I felt relieved, and rejoiced that I had made this effort, and I believe that James Watkin was not sorry at having accompanied me on this errand, now that it was well over. On looking round, my way seemed now clear for leaving the island, and before reaching the mission-house, I told James Watkin and Charles, that I knew of nothing to prevent our sailing on the following day. We called upon Thomas Wellard and his wife, and found their luggage could be embarked in the afternoon, and

that they had kept themselves in readiness to leave their habitation at a short notice.

"We returned on board before dinner, and informed Captain Keen, that all things would be ready with us, for leaving the roads of Nukualofa, to-morrow. In the afternoon we collected our linen, &c., from the shore, and took leave of James Watkin's family, he himself intending to be on board at the time of our departure. Isaackee, the pilot, was agreed with to conduct us into open water, and we bade a last farewell to a mass of the poor natives, men, women and children, who had crowded to the spot of embarkation, having learned, probably, from the pilot, that we were about to leave their shores finally.

10th. "Our decks were crowded at an early hour, with the natives, bringing whatever disposable articles they could spare to barter, some few vegetables and fowls, and a collection of their war clubs, and other implements of destruction which we rejoiced to take out of their hands. The morning was for the first time since arriving at Tongataboo, calm and cloudy. It afforded, however, an opportunity for the natives to dispose of what they had, which the usual trade-wind would wholly have prevented, as they must have hurried out of the vessel on our beginning to move. James Watkin, and Thomas Wellard and his wife, came on board before eight o'clock, but the forenoon proving showery, and windless, there seemed no probability of our getting off to sea. James Watkin returned to the shore, intending to come off again to-morrow morning, to see us under weigh; but at three o'clock, P. M., the clouds began to disperse: a signal was made forthwith for the pilot, and a nimble native was despatched to the mission-house to state that we were about to sail. By the time the last anchor was up the parties were on board, and leaving the last of the Friendly Islands, (though not the least of them, as objects of our tender solicitude and regard,) we steered through the wide spreading reefs towards the open ocean. James Watkin accompanied us a considerable distance, until the shore of Nukualofa could be but dimly seen; but however painful the task of having to separate, the moment was come for it to be done. We waved to each other, while our movements could be seen in the twilight; and I believe parted with sincere regret on both sides. If I mistake not, we can mutually acknowledge—'though lost to sight, to memory dear.'

"The day beginning to close upon us, and the wind continuing light, though favourable, rendered it impracticable for the 'Henry Freeling' to get completely through the passage before dark, but as it was fully in sight, bearing north of the vessel, our faithful compass, as heretofore, became the only guide remaining to us. When the sun went down, our pilot, Isaackee, who had been at the mast-head for three hours looking out for the reefs, now left his post and came down, wishing to be set at liberty from his



charge, as he would have to take up his lodging upon a small island, at no great distance from us, as he could not get back before morning to his own island of Tongataboo; and if he had been compelled to continue on board until we had got completely out to sea, which is the common usage, it would have been too dark for him to find the way to the small island, and he might have perished in his canoe, if the wind had got up strong. He told us in broken English, but very intelligible, 'Me no like go dead in canoe.' This is the same man who ran no trifling risk to gain us admittance into the heathen settlement at Mua. He was of course well paid for all his useful services, and his request to leave us immediately granted.

"Towards ten o'clock, P. M., the breeze freshening up we got nicely clear of the island of Tongataboo, and its many lurking snares; and before midnight hauled round its most western point.

11th. "Stood to the south-west, close to the wind. I stood resigned as to our destination, whether it should be New Holland or New Zealand, and endeavoured to leave it to my heavenly Father to dispose of us according to his own good pleasure, believing if it was right for us to go to New Zealand, we should be enabled to fetch it, though the wind was opposed to it at that time.

12th. "My mind is much weighed down this morning, with a load of exercise, which none about me know of; and this is not a little aggravated, by an open avowal, that nearly every one on board was in hopes we should not go to New Zealand. It was suggested to my mind by the grand adversary, 'that as the wind was unfavourable for New Zealand, we might safely keep away for Sidney, in New South Wales, for which it blew sufficiently free.' But I was preserved from listening to this, and strengthened to conclude, that it would be time enough for me to bear up when the distance was accomplished, and no prospect remained of fetching the Bay of Islands. Thus strengthened and supported, we held on our way. Soon after this the wind became more favourable, but the current and lee-way together had set us so far to the westward, that it was deemed advisable to run still further to leeward to make sure of escaping the Pilstant's and Nicholson's shoals. This circumstance, to appearance, would almost set aside the New Zealand question altogether. When night came, our captain was so fearful of the shoals that the sails were reduced, and the head of the vessel turned again towards Tongataboo: this was mortifying, though, perhaps, the safest policy, notwithstanding the wind had now become much more favourable. We plied backwards and forwards over the same ground until towards the break of day, and then made sail to the south south-west, with a strong easterly breeze.

13th. (*First-day*.) "A fresh wind from the old trade quarter, at noon, the latitude  $23^{\circ}, 37'$  south, by observation. Our sailors were collected twice in the day for devotional purposes. To-day

is the third anniversary of our leaving London. We reached the 'Henry Freeling,' soon after nine o'clock, P. M., at the Lower Hope. Many have been the trials and conflicts permitted to overtake us, but abundantly more have been the mercies of the Lord since that time, overshadowing us by night and by day; and truly our strength has been proportioned according to the necessity in the darkest hour of dismay. There hath been no lack of any needful thing; all our wants have been abundantly supplied: and that loving-kindness which is better than life, hath at seasons been eminently displayed, for our comfort and consolation; causing the Lord's own work to praise Him, and enabling us to give thanks at the remembrance of his holiness; and I trust, in humble resignation and devotedness to renew our covenant, and say, 'Not my will, O Lord, but thine be done:' if thou wilt be with me in the way that I go, here am I a poor unworthy creature.

14th. "Beautiful weather, with the wind free. This day completed  $180^{\circ}$  of west longitude. At noon we were in  $179^{\circ} 54'$  east longitude, latitude  $25^{\circ} 8'$  south, Cape Breton, New Zealand distant 640 miles.

16th. "Yesterday, the latitude at noon  $26^{\circ} 59'$  south. To-day the wind baffling: a heavy squall and the threatening appearance of the atmosphere, with a heavy swell of the sea from the southward, brought us under double-reefed canvass, but the wind did not materially increase.

19th. "Since fifth-day evening the weather has been rugged, and the wind so scant, that there seemed considerable doubt whether we should fetch the north Cape of New Zealand, but we still persevered in keeping close to the wind. To-day the weather is more moderate, with less sea, and the wind in a slight degree, more favourable. Not having felt well for the last twenty-four hours, perhaps has a tendency to make things about us appear in a darker shade than they really are. We sensibly feel the cold since coming a few degrees to the southward of the tropic, but trust that we shall not be forgotten by Him, who careth for the sparrows, and causeth the day spring of the morning to know his place.

21st. "Yesterday, assembled the crew for devotional purposes, both fore and afternoon. The weather clear and the wind gentle, from south-east, to east south-east. To-day several birds have been seen, of kinds that indicate that land is not very far off; and in the afternoon it was rumoured to be in sight, but this could be nothing more than a fog-bank.

22nd. "In the afternoon land was actually discovered from the mast-head, but too distant to determine, with certainty, whether the North Cape, or not.

23d. "The wind being light and scant for our purpose, it was noon before we got close in with the coast, a few miles to windward of the North Cape. Towards evening the wind beame more favourable, but so little of it, that we could not approach the entrance of the Bay of Islands, before the breeze died away altogether.



A full moon made it sufficiently light to see our way, but was un-availing for want of wind.

24th. "Becalmed until nearly noon, when a breeze sprung up from the north westward, which soon freshened, and enabled us to push for the Bay. Before six o'clock, anchored in little more than three fathoms water, on a muddy bottom, near the entrance towards Koua-Koua, after a passage of fourteen days from Tongataboo; that goodness which continually endureth, through the love and mercy of Him who upholdeth all things by the word of his power, having still followed us, and brought us in safety, to the desired haven. The Lord of Hosts is his name. Several ships under English colours are near our vessel, belonging to London, and Sidney, and one American whaler. Before dark, some of the principal store-keepers came on board; it appears from every statement we have yet received, that an internal war is raging amongst the natives, and that some of the missionary stations have been totally destroyed, in the neighbourhood of the Bay of Plenty; and the country around laid waste, within the sphere of its baneful and destructive influence. I find that James Stack, a missionary with whom I was acquainted in England, had been compelled to fly, (with his wife, who was then on a bed of weakness,) from the scene of blood and carnage, to this neighbourhood. We learnt that our dear friends James Backhouse, and George W. Walker, were in the neighbourhood of Sidney a few weeks ago, from a person lately arrived from that place. A few of the natives have been on board, but their barbarous and filthy appearance is enough to discourage any stranger; perhaps, these may not be a fair specimen, because of their intercourse with civilized nations, and their acquaintance with rum.

25th. "In the morning five or six natives came off, but with the exception of a hog, they had nothing to sell worth purchasing. Two of these appeared to be much out of health with the prevalent influenza, which, it is said, has been very general. We intended to give each of them a dose of salts, and the first who tried them, drank nearly the contents of a tumbler glass, but the other would taste what his comrade had been drinking, before venturing, and was quite satisfied with what was remaining at the bottom of the glass, without wanting a further quantity mixed on his account. They seemed desirous to possess an iron pen, and one was given to each, with which they seemed pleased. They appear to suffer very sensibly from the cold, as if a large dirty Witney blanket, worn loosely about the shoulders and body was insufficient for them. Before noon, the Post-master, Gilbert Maer, came on board, who very kindly offered to conduct us to the resident missionary at the station of Paihia, and engaged to call for us in his own boat, which he did accordingly, and after dinner, accompanied by Thomas Wellard and his wife, we set out and landed opposite to the missionary establishment, consisting of several good houses, occupied by its members, and one place of worship. This belongs to



the Church Mission, and the senior, and only ordained minister at this place, Henry Williams, being from home, endeavouring to restore peace among the contending tribes to the southward, we were conducted to the habitation of the lay minister, Charles Baker, who had previously crossed the Bay, before we reached Paihia; we were, however, kindly received by his wife, who was engaged amidst a large family, one member of which was not more than a year old. Before tea was finished, our host arrived, and confirmed the kind treatment of his wife, towards us, in a friendly manner: when the repast was over, Charles Baker took me into his study, when the object of my visit was fully entered into, and an offer made me of all the assistance in his power. After attentively reading my certificates, he said—he hailed me as a minister of the Gospel, and a father, &c. Before leaving Paihia, we visited for a short interval the wife of the absent missionary, Henry Williams, formerly a lieutenant in the British navy; they have ten children. We were much gratified with this family. It proved a very dark and rainy night, but we got well on board.

26th. "In the forenoon Charles Baker came on board, and while with us proposed our calling upon the British resident, James Busby; and having known his father when at Sidney, this offer was gladly accepted. James Busby is the only person legally authorised to act for the British government here; but as he is wholly destitute of power, instead of being recognised as consul, he is styled the British resident; as such, a visit was due to him, as well as on account of his being our countryman. We were kindly received and remained several hours under his roof, before he would permit us to leave him. His wife and children are now on a visit at Sidney. My Charles having a serious pain in the side, owing perhaps to the wetness of the preceding evening, remained on board through the day; but on my return to him in the evening I found him much recruited. Finding, while with Charles Baker, that there was a good opportunity to visit one of the native congregations, and that a young man, who is a competent interpreter, would be furnished with a well-manned roomy boat, I did not feel satisfied to let the opportunity pass away without availing myself of it. The prospect of moving as it were upon new and untried ground, was not lessened in weight by a considerable pain in my head, which has hung about me for a day or two past, but I was enabled to cast my burden upon the Lord, for truly he hath hitherto sustained me, and borne up my head amidst the floods of many waters.

27th. (*First-day.*) "Soon after rising, the pain in my head returned, but did not materially increase. We left the 'Henry Freeling,' about six o'clock, A. M., in a boat belonging to the mission; which had arrived with our interpreter. It had lightened and rained most of the night, and the morning had every appearance of wet weather. It would have been a relief to me, if my Charles could have been satisfied to remain on board of his own

accord, but I did not like to urge it upon him, being aware that he was desirous of attending the meeting: though I rather dreaded the consequences if he got wet, and thought if the rain kept off until after the meeting, and we had dry weather to return to our seats in the boat again, it was all I could desire. After rowing about two hours and a half, we reached the point of destination at Koua-Koua, and found on our arrival at the building, that the customary service was going forward, conducted by a native teacher: he was at the moment, as were informed, reading the nineteenth chapter of Matthew. We went quietly in, and sat down near a table. This was a rough building, lately erected, with a few seats for the females only. When the native preacher had finished, William Colonzo explained to the people the cause of our visit, which we could ascertain by the names of the different islands in the Pacific, that he mentioned, to enable them the better to understand its real object. We had not agreed on any particular mode of proceeding, but when a suitable time arrived, I stood up by his side, leaving the event to my never-failing heavenly Helper. After a solemn pause, I warned the people of the necessity of our humbling ourselves under the mighty hand of God, the judge of the whole earth, whom they had professedly met together to worship. 'God is a spirit,' and without the aid of his Holy Spirit, we cannot approach or draw nigh unto Him. How can we worship Him in spirit and in truth, without the help and assistance of the Holy Spirit of truth, when we cannot of ourselves think a good thought, or restrain an evil one. After enlarging on the nature of true spiritual worship, I had to turn them to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus—the light of truth which shineth in every heart. My heart was greatly enlarged on this occasion, though a very poor empty creature on going into the meeting.

"When the meeting was over, most, if not all the people, came about us to shake hands, which though somewhat irksome to my exhausted frame, is much to be preferred to the practice common among the New Zealanders—that of rubbing noses together, of which we only witnessed a few specimens among themselves. I felt unwell in the morning, before leaving the vessel, and much cast down, but was now greatly relieved, though the pain still continued in my head. The rain kept off until we had got through the coarse herbage and rushy plants on our way back from the meeting, but we had no sooner resumed our seats in the boat than it began to drop, and soon fell smartly. We were, however, well prepared for it, so as to keep ourselves comfortably dry over head, and about the seats of the boat. The Lord sustained me through all this day, and magnified his own name among the people at the meeting. It was indeed, the day which the Lord had made memorable to myself, for divine favour, and on which I completed my sixty-fifth year. Thus is the thread of my life lengthened out, and O, saith my soul, that it may be to the praise and glory of



Him who hath so marvellously redeemed it from destruction, and crowned me with loving-kindness and tender mercies. How can I sufficiently declare unto others, what hath been done for myself; that they also may come to taste and see for themselves His goodness and His love; and be able to say from heart-felt living experience, 'Mercy and truth have met together, righteousness and peace have kissed each other!'

28th. "The weather rough, and to us cold. Some of the natives came on board, in the afternoon. Being desirous of purchasing a canoe paddle as a specimen, I was very soon offered one for a shilling. Having no money about me I went below, and found some quarter dollars, of rather more value than a shilling each. One of these quarter dollars was given, and a paddle received in return; but the man perceiving that I had still a quarter dollar left, made signs that he wished to have that also—I supposed for another of his paddles, which he held in his hand; but on giving him the money, and taking hold of the paddle at the same time, the man with a stern countenance refused to let me have it—keeping both the quarter dollars for one paddle only. I thought it would not be well to suffer this imposition, and demanded one of my quarter dollars back again; but he persisted in retaining both the pieces of money. The other paddle was then returned to him, which he took into his hand, and I then insisted by signs to have my money back again, and the bargain made altogether void. He hesitated for some time, but seeing that I was determined to carry it through, at last returned me the money, and we parted without any further trafficking together. I have no doubt but he will behave in a more reasonable manner when he comes again. Upon inquiry, I found that nothing will do with these people, but firm decided measures—they are daring, ferocious, and insulting if they think that a stranger is afraid of them, and are sometimes prompted to commit outrages, but calmness, and steady firmness generally prevail with them.

29th. "Breakfasted early, and proceeded to the missionary station at Paihia, where taking in Charles Baker, we pursued our route to Tepuna, where the first missionary station was originally established. The morning proved rough and stormy, and the cold very piercing: the wind being contrary, it was more than two hours and a half before we reached our destination. Here we saw John King, one of the first missionaries that trod the shores of New Zealand, but now so far advanced in years, as to be considered at liberty from the general work. He has a family of ten children; the two oldest sons are cultivating land on their own account. The natives now surviving, are so few, and widely scattered, that Tepuna is now scarcely considered one of the stations. Our visit did not seem to amount to much more than just seeing the family, by whom we were kindly received and entertained. This family appear to have taken up their residence here for life. At one time, a considerable congregation used to assemble, but the



whole is now laid waste, and the natives, owing to war and other circumstances, seem swept off the soil. By the wreck of the establishment now remaining, it is obvious that this station, at one period, must have been an important one. We returned on board by six o'clock, P.M. Before parting with this ancient missionary, he asked me, if I had with me 'No Cross, No Crown,' of which I thought we had a copy: as he seemed desirous to see this book, from a former knowledge of it, care was taken to forward the volume, the receipt of which, was afterwards gratefully acknowledged before we left the Bay of Islands. In the evening, James Busby came on board, and kindly invited us to spend whatever spare time we had at his house, while we remained in the harbour.

"To-morrow, we expect to go to Korarareka, but are a little apprehensive from every appearance at present, that this will turn to small account. To-day, sent a parcel of tracts, &c., on board the 'Nimrod' whaler, of Sidney; and the American ship 'Martha,' of Nantucket, also a whaling vessel. Arrived, the 'Diana,' from London, in sixteen weeks, a British South Sea whaler.

30th. "The day being cold and showery, and there being no prospect of any opportunity of speaking to the people, and having a stiffness in my right side, I seem unwilling to run any risk by going to Korarareka, merely to look at the place, which is all that the journey holds out.

"This afternoon a large ship beat into the bay; her name not yet ascertained. The pleasure formerly arising, on the first glance of a vessel, more especially when under the flag of our own nation, is now superseded by feelings bordering upon disgust, connected with regret and fear, from a knowledge of the accumulated weight of sin, iniquity, and wretchedness, they are introducing amongst these already sufficiently depraved, and degraded race of barbarous natives, who, like those of the isles we have heretofore visited, with one solitary exception, are rapidly wasting from the face of the earth, by the loathsome disease brought amongst them, and renewed again and again, by these circulating mediums of evil. In this dreadful picture, the noble natives of the Friendly Islands, are not included, except at some of the heathen settlements at Tongataboo. At the other places the intercourse with shipping has been but small hitherto, but it is greatly to be feared that at these, this evil is on the increase. We have an instance now before us of this awful depravity, in a ship that arrived one afternoon, and the very next day her deck was swarming with the wretched daughters of New Zealand, furnished by their brutal chiefs, and in some instances, by their own fathers and husbands, principally for rum, muskets, and gun-powder, with other commodities for barter, to gratify the sensual appetites of their still more brutal fellow-men, but of a whiter skin. Circumstances of this infamous nature cannot be made too public. The majority of the people of England, and that of the most virtuous part of the com-

munity, little know at home, the ravages their own countrymen are making abroad; nor can they possibly contemplate the depth of the misery, suffering, and aggravated distress, they are inflicting upon these unhappy and helpless islanders. I have no doubt, but there are many who, if they could see what we have seen, would wash their hands of the guilt of partaking of luxuries, and supposed necessary supplies for the comfort of life, furnished from distant and foreign climes through such a channel, much less be found deriving a profit through the exertions of these agents of Satan, who are thus so extensively and destructively contributing to afflict the human race wherever they go. I would say to all, individually, who love the Lord Jesus in sincerity, and are openly professing to follow him before men; 'cry aloud, spare not,' lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and make known the transgression of the people, and the magnitude of their sin. Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity, for the Lord himself will assuredly plead the cause of the afflicted and helpless. He will hear the voice of their weeping. He will regard their supplication. He will receive their prayer. When going last first-day to the meeting at Koua-Koua, we met a native taking his wife and daughter in his canoe, to one of the ships. Our young friend and interpreter, remonstrated earnestly with him, and endeavoured to dissuade him from his dreadful purpose, but it was all in vain, the man pursued his wretched and miserable errand to the bay. The chiefs are the principal contractors between the parties, and reap the reward of this iniquity, which, though comparatively small, is sufficient to induce these miserable people to continue this infamous and abhorrent traffic, which is regularly systematised through the bay; and a few hours only elapse, after the arrival of a vessel, before she is amply furnished with these poor devoted victims.

1st of Twelfth month. "In the forenoon, we sat together as usual, and were favoured to feel a degree of strength sufficient to turn the battle to the gate, and check the torrent of dissipating thought, which prevents the sacrifice from arising which only is acceptable when offered in spiritual purity. In the afternoon, went to the mission-house at Paihia. While there, a missionary arrived, (an ordained minister of the Church of England,) his name Henry Bobart, sent apparently on purpose to conduct us to the Waimate settlement. The fatigue and exposure in accomplishing this journey, though considerable, would shrink into nothingness, if anything bordering upon certainty might be looked for, of an opportunity being realised for the exaltation of the dear Redeemer's kingdom among the people; but from what we have already witnessed, this place is more an establishment of missionaries and their families, than consisting of a body of seriously disposed natives; it will be the cause of rejoicing if it proves otherwise: but without going over the ground, the retrospect at a future day may be darkened with gloom from a consciousness of not having done all in my power to serve the best of masters, in the

best of causes, by losing an opportunity which can never be regained of declaring Christ, in man, by His Holy Spirit, the hope of glory, to these affectingly benighted islanders, alike with others, the objects of the love of God, and part of that inheritance purchased by the Saviour's precious blood. Seventh-day morning, is at present fixed for setting out towards the Waimate, by boat to Keri-Keri, an intervening missionary station.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

New Zealand—visit to the mission station at Waimate—wars among the natives—a fatiguing journey—meeting with the mission families—native meeting—meeting with the children—return to the 'Henry Freeling'—distribution of tracts—native meetings at Korarareka—meeting with the missionaries at Paihia—cannibals—address to the missionaries—sail from the Bay of Islands—remarks on the character of the New Zealanders—Lord Howe's Island—anchor off Sidney—religious engagements there—return to England.

2nd. "Spent the forenoon on board, and the afternoon at James Busby's with Charles Baker, and three others of the missionary establishment. James Busby, is an amiable man, and upright in all his dealings with the people, and decidedly desirous of promoting in others that which he conceives to be the duty of man. His general character is such, that it would be well if more, with as clean hands, abounded among the isles of the Pacific ocean: such are greatly needed to contribute to improve the present state of things as regards the best interests of the natives, while the bad example of licentious and worthless foreigners would be checked, and to a considerable extent diminished.

3d. "At eight o'clock, A. M., reached the station at Paihia and found that the absent missionary, and senior of the establishment, Henry Williams, had returned to his family. He had been to the southward to use every endeavour to persuade the hostile tribes, who are butchering and devouring one another in a dreadful manner, to desist and listen to terms of peace. He reports that they are determined to persevere in the contest, and though he has heretofore been successful in restoring peace among them, they now turned a deaf ear to every proposition which he made to them. More than six hundred of these poor creatures have been slaughtered, and some of the missionary stations in those parts are entirely broken up for the present. One of their houses had been destroyed, some of the families stripped of every thing, and others had taken refuge in flight. Henry Williams brought with him a boy, whose sister had been murdered in a recent struggle of the contending parties. On leaving Henry Williams and his family, we proceeded towards Keri-Keri, in a boat well manned by natives belonging to the mission, having sent our own boat and crew back to the vessel from Paihia. We reached the station of Keri-



Keri about noon, and were kindly received by James Kemp and his wife, the principal resident missionary there. This family, came originally from Wymondham, in Norfolk. Just after our arrival, a messenger appeared with a note to Henry Bobart, our conductor, from Waimate, the object of which was to prevent our coming forward, until second-day, on account of indisposition in one of the families, as the invalid would, no doubt, be then recruited. We consequently remained at Keri-Keri and were invited to attend their place of worship, next morning, the fourth instant, which I did not like to shrink from, however painful and mortifying—although there was nothing before the view of my mind, beyond the testimony, which we, as a Society, have to bear against form without life and power, in the will of man. I think there were not ten natives both male and female, and not as many children present, and these belong to the household department of the missionaries: the Europeans, who were on a raised platform, at the other end of the building, were probably twice as numerous as the natives.

“On second-day morning, the 5th inst., a note arrived from Waimate, saying, that if the weather cleared up, a cart should meet us on the way, but the road was so slippery, the soil being clay, and the horses wholly without shoes, that with the present rain, the steep hills would be difficult and dangerous to travel over. I preferred going on foot to horseback, under all the attending circumstances, but Henry Bobart and Charles rode part of the way, and then gave up the horses to native boys, and travelled on foot with me. The rain commenced again before we had proceeded far, and increased after the noon-tide of the day; and having to pass through much fern, and high coarse grass, procured us a larger share of wet than from the rain which actually descended. We were five hours performing the journey, as from the state of the roads and lameness, I could only proceed at a crawling pace. When beginning to rise the last long hill my strength was nearly exhausted, and breathing difficult, when we met the principal missionary, William Williams, who having been formerly a medical man in Nottingham, and anticipating my situation from what he had heard of my age, brought with him a sandwich, &c. I told him that a friend in need was a friend indeed. Upon the strength of this, and with frequent stops to rest and recover my breath, I was enabled to reach the summit of the hill, and enter Waimate. Every accommodation within the reach of William Williams and his wife, was cheerfully afforded us, but the greater part of our damp clothes we were forced to keep on. In this place we found a well-conducted family, and a peaceful and quiet abode. When invited to the family devotion in the evening, we entered a large room, where thirty boys were assembled, the children of the missionaries, but such was the quiet order of the establishment, I did not know they were in the house till that time, nor that the house was a school, although we had then been three hours under its roof.

6th. "Rested but little during the night, but rose early to join the family before breakfast, and remained in the house most of the day, on account of my lameness and the weather continuing so wet, that the garden walks served only as channels to carry off the superfluous water from the surface of the neighbourhood. Drank tea at George Clark's.

7th. "The weather still showery, but fine at intervals. Had an opportunity afforded of seeing the manner in which the natives prepare the fern root, at present the principal article of their food. This root has a remarkably astringent property, and is admirably calculated to counterbalance the effects of fish and bad potatoes. Although well beaten after being roasted, it still retains a strong fibre, which is separated from the more pulpy substance in the chewing, and thrown away by the eater. It requires good teeth to obtain a sufficient support from it.

9th. "Yesterday, my lameness but little gone off, and no opening presenting for religious service, my situation altogether required renewed and continued exercise of faith and patience, the weather too unsettled to undertake the journey back to Keri-Keri. This morning, the state of the weather more promising. Before breakfast, it crossed my mind, that a proposal might be held out, that if we would stay over next first-day, an opportunity would be afforded for seeing the people collected: after breakfast, I mentioned to our host, that as the weather appeared more favourable, we should be thinking about returning to the Bay of Islands. The anticipated proposal was immediately drawn forth, for us to remain over first-day, to see the natives collected. I then stated, that we left the vessel unprepared for so lengthened a visit, but as this offer was now made, I did not dare to run away from it, acknowledging at the same time, that our clean linen was exhausted. This difficulty was soon surmounted by our hostess, who insisted upon getting every thing we had immediately washed. At nine o'clock, being informed that a considerable number of the natives would be collected from a distance, who would not be present on first-day, it seemed safest for me to attend on the occasion. We repaired to the building pointed out, and a goodly number soon collected in the place. Finding that the manner of conducting the meeting was wholly left to my disposal, we settled down into silence, until I was strengthened to declare amongst them, in an encouraging manner, the truths of the everlasting Gospel, turning them inward to the true minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord hath pitched and not man, who teacheth as never man taught, and speaketh as never man spake, by the Holy Spirit, in the hearts of the children of men the world over. There were some tender people present, the Lord's power was over us, and my heart rejoiced.

10th. "The weather being much improved, we were enabled to take what exercise I could bear without retarding the cure of my lameness. Late in the afternoon, William Williams informed

me that the usual meeting of the whole establishment of missionaries and their families would be held in the evening, querying whether I could not join them. I said but little in return, but in a while found that I must avail myself of this opportunity, and at a suitable interval told William Williams, that on considering the subject, I should like to have a little time afforded me at that meeting; and knowing their mode of conducting these meetings, I mentioned as the best time, the interval after the chapter in the Testament was read. He directly asked, if I wished that any chapter in particular should be selected or read, I replied in the negative, saying, it would make no difference with me. In due time the meeting commenced, when individuals were fixed upon and named to lead the first and second prayer; when these were gone through, a hymn was sung as usual, and then the twentieth chapter of the Revelation was read by William Williams himself. When this was concluded, we dropped into silence, to the surprise, no doubt, of many, as but few could have come to the knowledge of the request which I had made, from the shortness of the intervening space of time, between that being done, and the meeting assembling. After a solemn pause, I stood up with the words of the beloved disciple, when on the Isle of Patmos in the day of the Lord's power and presence in spirit, for the Word of God and the Testimony of the Lord Jesus; 'Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever, Amen; declaring that this language was what I desired they might be all enabled to adopt from their own blessed experience; and proclaiming amongst them the glory of the Gospel day, 'When the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea,'—showing the indispensable necessity of our possessing the true faith of the Gospel, once delivered to the saints, and still delivered to all true believers in the spiritual appearance of its only Author and Finisher in the heart of man, at this day; which faith worketh by love, purifieth the heart, and giveth the victory over sin, and the evil propensities of human nature. This is the faith of the Son of God, who loved us and gave himself for us; and is only bestowed on the simple, humble, child-like, and obedient followers of the lowly Jesus, in the way of self-denial and the daily cross; these henceforth live not unto themselves, but unto Him who died for them and rose again. The dear children were directed to hearken to that voice which saith, 'I love them that love me, and they that seek me early shall find me.' It was a solid opportunity—the goodness of man was laid low, as in dust and ashes, before the power of an endless life.

11th. (*First-day*.) "Since last sixth-day morning, way has opened in the minds of those about us, in a remarkable manner to my humble admiration, as if the ever-blessed Master had directed our steps to a place, where He himself intended to come, in his own appointed time; in condescending mercy to a poor way-worn,



unprofitable servant. It was now proposed by William Williams, that I should attend their place of public worship, and that after the customary service was gone through in the New Zealand language, according to their prescribed forms; he said, 'if you have a word for the people, I will interpret for you.' This was more than I had looked for, or dared to hope, but a few days ago: and although not exactly accordant with my own views, or if I might have chosen for myself, what I should have proposed; yet I have of late, I think, learned to be willing almost to become all things, and to submit to all things, however humiliating to the creaturely part, that would lead to an opening for me to proclaim to others the glad tidings of salvation, through a Saviour's love. At the proper time, we accompanied William Williams and family to the place of worship. That I might not be at a loss, he said, when they had gone through their part, he would come and conduct me to the proper place in front of the people, which was raised higher than the platform to assist the speaker's voice.

"We sat on one side of the congregation, on a low form, attracting the attention of many, by retaining our seats, while all, but ourselves, stood, or knelt, as occasion required. When all was gone through, William Williams threw aside his surplice, and fetched me to the appointed spot, where we stood together in silence, until I reminded the people that, we were in the presence of Him, without whose knowledge a sparrow cannot fall to the ground: but, though heaven is his throne, and the earth his footstool, yet to this man will he look, even unto him that is poor, and of a contrite spirit, and who trembleth at the word of his power. I had then largely to testify of the love of God, as it is in Christ Jesus, and to turn the attention of the people to the light of this unspeakable Gift, which shineth in every heart, who, once in a body of flesh, spoke to man upon the earth, but now speaketh from heaven, by the Holy Spirit, and to all that believe in it, and obey it, it is the power of God unto salvation. The countenances of some of these dear people, spoke louder than words, that they had fallen upon the stone of Israel—their brokenness could not be hid; to such, the message of everlasting love flowed freely, and I humbly trust, was as a shower upon the thirsty soil. It was an open and relieving season. It was the Lord's doing, and I believe, marvellous in the eyes of some present. There were several European families, besides those of artisans, attached one way or other to the mission, which, with the boys' school and the natives of the surrounding neighbourhood, formed a considerable body of people; but the praise was His alone, who wrought the work, and surely some of these were constrained to render unto Him his due. In the afternoon we attended the meeting again, but my lips were closed up. It afterwards appeared, that some were looking after words, and were disappointed.

12th. "Before getting up, I found there was something gathering upon my mind, towards the children in the school; and know-

ing that the whole family would be collected together at seven o'clock, I thought it best to speak with William Williams, without loss of time. Meeting him soon after, I told him that I wished to have a little time in the course of their usual family devotion that morning, mentioning the time after the chapter had been read, as most likely to answer my purpose, and not interfere with them;—for this, he readily made way. As the whole company are accustomed to kneel down at the conclusion of the chapter, I thought there might be a little unsettlement on this account, particularly as the boys knew not of the alteration, but with a simple motion of the master's hand, all remained in stillness. After sitting silent awhile, I revived our Lord's expressions, 'Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples,' spoken to his immediate followers, when comparing himself and them to the vine and its branches, so beautifully illustrative and instructive: 'As a branch cannot bear fruit, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, for without me ye can do nothing.' How then can we glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, or exhibit in the sight of others that heavenly badge, which designates his true disciples, without him. I had, also, to remind the younger branches present, of their privileges and advantages, far above the lot of many, in their being placed under such care, in a situation so guarded, where every thing is conducted for the promotion of their best welfare, governed by the law of love and kindness: beside having the Holy Scriptures read to them daily, which point to the Saviour, from their earliest pages, by holy promises and prophecies, fulfilled in the fullness of time, to every jot and tittle, that after ages, through patience and comfort of them might have hope, and which are also able to make wise unto salvation, through faith, which is in Christ Jesus; and yet they cannot be understood without the assistance of the same Holy Spirit, which inspired the holy men that gave them forth. The disciples of our blessed Lord could not comprehend them, even when he himself was with them, until he condescended to open their understanding; neither can we understand them aright, but by him, for 'without him we can do nothing.' And we can know nothing of the things which belong unto God the Father, but through the Holy Spirit of his Son. And, although all are not called to be apostles, or prophets, or teachers, or workers of miracles, yet we are called to glory and to virtue, with a high and holy calling, to show forth the praises of him, who hath called us out of darkness into his marvellous light, by bringing forth the fruits of love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, wrought by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, in our hearts. After bidding them an affectionate farewell, in the Lord, I sat down. After breakfast, preparation was made for our departure, but from one cause or other, this was delayed until near noon. During this in-



terval, I called to see the wife of one of the ministers of the mission, who has long been an invalid, but is now considered in a state of convalescence. It arose in my mind to tell her, that, it is by these things we live, and by this, is the life of the spirit, that inherits the kingdom, and retains it in meekness and lowliness, praying always with all prayer and supplication, watching thereunto. Henry Hobart and W. R. Wade, accompanied my son Charles on horseback, but a cart being provided, on account of my lameness, I was conveyed in it a large part of the journey. We reached Keri-Keri, by five o'clock, and having nothing to detain us there, concluded to proceed towards the Bay of Islands, as soon as a boat could be got ready, and were subsequently favoured to reach the vessel soon after ten o'clock, P. M., and to find all well on board, which was cause of thankfulness on my part, as the neighbourhood of the bay is a very dissipated and wicked place.—We had been absent ten days.

17th. "Since returning from Waimate, and getting well rested, I have nearly got rid of my lameness. In the day time we have been engaged selecting school materials, for the use of the native children, from the stock presented to us by the British and Foreign School Society, in England; also a variety of religious and temperance tracts, with clothing for the native children, to considerable extent, conveying them to the station at Paihia, in the evening. On fifth-day, we sat down together in our usual way, and were favoured to get into the quiet. For some days I have been waiting to see what was likely to open for me, in the line of duty, and now find that the minds of some in this neighbourhood have been turned towards me, who have it in their power to lend a hand of help, to forward the work in which I am engaged.

"This morning, Charles Baker came off to say, that there would be an opening for my going to Korarareka to-morrow, to attend the native meeting—and that afterwards there would be a meeting held for service among the English residents in this neighbourhood, &c. He also said that Henry Williams and himself had concluded to prepare a notice, stating that a member of the Society of Friends would be there, (perhaps mentioning my name,) and would give them an address. To avail myself of the opportunity of attending these meetings was a duty from which I was not satisfied to shrink, but I could not agree to the notice without its being worded in such a manner, as that none would be disappointed, if I should have nothing to say to them. He said, the notice was so qualified, that that would be fully understood, by all the parties.

18th. (*First-day.*) "Charles Baker came on board in the forenoon, and we proceeded with him up the bay, and landed at Korarareka. A considerable time was then occupied in going round to the different native huts, to rouse them up and persuade them to attend the meeting. I could perceive that Charles Baker availed himself of the circumstance of my having been among the islands



in the South Seas, with the glad tidings of the Gospel, when one of the chiefs immediately asked, 'if the people of those islands had listened.' I am not aware of the reply of our interpreter to this question, though we fully understood the sort of conversation going forward, by the names of the different islands that were mentioned, but the chief who was then lying upon the ground, wrapped in a large Witney blanket, seemed determined to attend the meeting, though not in the habit of so doing, and quickly starting up retired into his hut, but soon made his appearance again, dressed in European clothing, and was about the first man to go into the meeting, when the bell rang. Charles Baker occupied a short time with them in the native language, but they came in, in such a straggling, careless manner, that they had scarcely all assembled before he had finished; and I took it for granted that he had explained to them the cause of my coming among them. The number was very small, altogether, but the love of the Gospel flowed towards them, as numbered among those, for whom the Saviour died, and rose again, that they might live. The truths of the Gospel were sounded among them; they were invited to accept the terms of salvation, then proclaimed—'Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and be saved.' They were directed to turn inward to the true light, 'that lighteth every man that cometh into the world;' for this light is Christ, the light of the world, and the Saviour of the world, who by his Holy Spirit, shineth in every heart. In this light they must be willing to believe, which would not only show them their sins, but if these were forsaken and repented of, would save them from their sins. With more words they were exhorted and entreated to repent, believe, and obey. The people were very attentive and solid; may the Lord soften their hearts, and incline them to ponder the things which they heard spoken. The interval was short, after this meeting concluded before the next was to begin. We dined, upon the contents of our pockets, and distributed what we could spare, to the boat's crew of natives; but we were not in a neighbourhood where a drink of water could be readily procured, before the people began to gather, who now appeared in numbers far more than had been contemplated. The families which had attended the missionary establishment at Pailia in the forenoon, now crossed the bay in their boats to this meeting, who, with some well-disposed persons from the shipping, and others, perhaps, prompted by curiosity, amounted to about seventy persons. I sat more than half an hour, while Charles Baker went through what he considered himself bound to perform, but never under a feeling more destitute and more sensible of weakness and inability, and yet the present appeared as an opportunity afforded almost in spite of myself to declare that the Son of God is come into the hearts of all true believers, and in boundless love and mercy is still standing and knocking at the door of the hearts of all; and to those who are willing to hear his voice, open unto Him, and receive his Holy Spirit, he will come in unto them, and if his purifying and

cleansing operations are patiently submitted to and abode under, with full belief in his power to save, their sins, though many, if repented of, will be purged away through his blood, and remembered no more. Of this, I had largely to testify, (after a short interval of silence, when Charles Baker had sat down,) as no new doctrine, but an incontrovertible established truth, having holy writ for its author without us, and an evidence which liveth and abideth for ever, within us, even in our own hearts, for 'He that hath the Son of God, hath the witness in himself,' his law is written in the heart: the law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus, which makes free from the law of sin and death. The necessity of a serious examination being entered into individually was urged, to ascertain whether we are in possession, and what we really know, of the law written in our hearts—the law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus—the faithful witness against sin and transgression, which keep the soul of man in darkness and in death, but he that hath the Son of God hath life, and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life, but the wrath of God abideth on him. After this manner I was led amongst them, and we were favoured with a solemn season together, though the opportunity was brought about in an unusual manner, and agreed upon in the first place without my knowledge, or any suggestion of mine.

25th. (*First-day*.) "Our time much occupied during the past week in preparing despatches for our dear friends in England, and taking occasional journeys to the shore for exercise, &c. On fifth-day last, we had a visit from Nathaniel Turner, the senior Wesleyan Missionary at Hokianga, with whom I became acquainted at Hobart Town in 1834. From all we have seen, New Zealand is at present a barren soil, where religion does not thrive. Without any previous knowledge of the real state of things at Hokianga, I never saw my way to make an attempt to visit its neighbourhood, either by sea or land, both of which routes from the Bay of Islands are considered to abound with difficulties at this season of the year. Nathaniel Turner said, that the state of the road is so bad at this time, that he believed I could not, at my age, accomplish a journey thither, but that they should be glad to welcome us, if it could be done. I am fully aware that the undertaking would be attended with many difficulties and much fatigue; but if I felt the same inducement to go there, which has hitherto enabled me, as it were 'to run through a troop' of difficulties 'and leap over a wall' of opposition, all the statements we have had of the difficulties by land, and the danger by sea, should not deter me from endeavouring to reach it.

"Having been invited to attend a meeting to be held this evening, by the whole of the members of the mission at Paihia, at the house of Henry Williams, and believing it best for me to be there, we landed in time to take tea with the family. When the meeting was gathering, Henry Williams asked me if I would like to



read a chapter in the Bible. I told him my eye-sight was failing, and declined the offer, at the same time requesting that a little time might be afforded me when the reading was over; adding, that if I had any thing to say to them, they should have it. The chapter had not been long finished before I stood up, which produced a general silence. And after referring to the affecting example of the dear Son of God, as set forth in the language of inspiration, 'Lo, I come to do thy will, O God,' I told them that I was among them in the bonds of the Gospel, and was desirous of being found in the counsel of this will, which is ever excellent, and stood resigned to minister in the ability which might be afforded, and hoped to be faithful thereunto on the present occasion; declaring, that it is only those that do the will of the Father, that shall know of the doctrine of the Son. His doctrine shall descend as the dew, and as the small rain upon the tender herb, upon those that do the Father's will: they shall inherit substance, eternal substance; the living and substantial truth, pure and undefiled, 'as it is in Jesus:' truth in the inward parts, which the Lord desireth. Such are the Lord's children, and compose his church on earth; they are all taught of Him, in righteousness shall they be established, and great shall be their peace. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord. There is no way of becoming of this blessed number, but by a knowledge of the doctrine of the Son, our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear him.' This is the will of God the Father, and those who are faithful in doing this, shall assuredly be taught of the Son; they shall know of his doctrine; in righteousness shall they be established, and great shall be their peace. In this way I was engaged to turn the minds of all present, to the teaching of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, which would lead them safely along through time, and sustain them in a boundless eternity. This appeared to be well received: a solemn feeling spread over us, under which we separated.

31st. "Remained on board with our own people last first-day. Most of the week has been employed in preparing documents for England, a vessel being nearly ready to sail from hence. On fifth-day, our little meeting was held as usual. On sixth-day, a proposition was made to pay another visit to Koua-Koua, next first-day; but not feeling any thing towards it, I declined going. When on shore yesterday, I met with a missionary, by name — Wilson, just arrived from the seat of war, having been driven with his family from the station occupied by him. The account he gives of their vindictive barbarism and cannibalism is truly horrifying. On his way, he had to pass by a piece of raised ground, upon which the heads of the vanquished were placed, with their faces to the sun, as they are seen to most advantage in this position. A human heart was stuck upon a spear as a token of victory. He saw one



tribe returning from the battle-field, loaded with human flesh to feast themselves and their friends upon. Miserable women and children followed these in train, after the mangled remains of their husbands, sons, brothers, and fathers; themselves captives, and doomed to slavery the rest of their days. He saw a child with a man's head, which had been given him to play with, amusing himself by putting his fingers into the eyes, nostrils, &c. Who can wonder at their hardness of heart, when thus trained from infancy to habits of savage and unfeeling cruelty and barbarism, by their own parents and friends! At one place which they were destroying with fire, their conduct was really fiend-like. In one instance, a missionary family had been plundered by their own congregation: the reason assigned by these people for this shameful conduct was, that they expected the missionary was about to leave the neighbourhood, (probably taking for granted that the property would fall into the hands of their enemies.)

1st of First month, 1837. (*First-day*.) "Remained on board all the day low and stripped, like her who had lost her Lord, and knew not where to find him. Assembled the crew both in the forenoon and afternoon as usual. It seems as if something was gathering upon my mind towards all the members of the mission, in a collective capacity, and standing in resignation, I felt somewhat relieved. Closed our letters intended to go by the 'Vestal' to England—this vessel being on the eve of sailing.

6th. "Much of our time has been spent on board this week, owing to different persons coming from the shore on second, third, and fourth-days. Nearly the whole of fifth-day was occupied by the removal of Thomas Wellard's luggage. The boat which he brought to fetch it away in, having broken loose from the natives, was detained away several hours from our vessel before she could be regained. To-day I learned that the missionaries from Waimate, who had been generally over at Paihia during the time called Christmas, with those from Keri-Keri, had all returned to their own stations, which at once set aside my seeing them in a collective capacity, which I had a little thought of, but had apparently been prevented from moving in; and now the time was gone past, this brought me under a painful exercise of mind at the time. To-day the wind is so strong as to prevent our getting on shore, our vessel tumbling about, almost as if she was not in a harbour. In the forenoon we held our little meeting, which had been set aside yesterday by the confused state of things on board. My state was similar to that of the heath in the desert, which knoweth not when good cometh; and as the barren mountain top, where there is neither dew, nor rain, nor fields of offering. The accuser of the brethren seemed to have prevailed against me. I was smitten and wounded within—and a wounded spirit who can bear? The strength of the wind continued through the night, and some rain fell.

7th. "Early this morning the wind lessened, and the rain fell without intermission through the day, which not a little contributed

to darken the gloom already spread over my mind. My Charles at the same time was unwell, with a sore throat and other symptoms of a violent cold.

8th. (*First-day*.) "To-day, the rain fell at intervals, in light showers, our sailors were assembled as usual, and in the afternoon two strangers joined us from the shore. I had to testify that the Almighty has not left himself without a witness in every heart, which shineth as a light in a dark place—which is no other than the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, 'the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world,' &c. My mind has since felt more peaceful than before this circumstance. This afternoon the 'Chieftain,' a British whaling vessel, which was at Tongataboo at the same time as the 'Henry Freeling,' arrived in the Bay of Islands.

9th. "This morning got on shore, and took measures for discharging the debt contracted by the vessel.

11th. "Yesterday, employed in disposing of articles of hardware, &c. The way seemed now to open with clearness, before leaving New Zealand, to draw up an address to the missionaries, stationed at Paihia, Keri-Keri, Waimate, Tepuna, &c., and all the members belonging to the 'Church Missionary Society,' (as it is denominated by themselves,) employed at New Zealand; and as I endeavoured to keep close to this prospect, it more and more brightened before me.

12th. "We held our usual meeting, and although a low time, felt comforted and peaceful. In the afternoon, took exercise on shore, after having been detained on board, by one circumstance or other, nearly a fortnight. As the way opened, I began to commit to paper, from time to time, the matter which arose towards the members of the mission.

15th. (*First-day*.) "Believed it my place to remain with our people on board, feeling nothing towards the shore, and being well aware that the whole neighbourhood of the bay, except where missionary interest prevails, answers nearly, if not altogether, the description of the place, where Satan's seat is.

16th. "Engaged in writing a fair copy of an address to the members of the mission.—In the evening, went on shore for exercise, and thinking that those at the station at Paihia, might suppose I shunned calling upon them of late, I told Charles Baker, that seeing their members could not be collected together, as had been the case at the Sandwich and Friendly Islands, I was preparing a written address to them; at the same time informed him that the time of our departure from the bay was drawing near. This evening, the 'Ganges,' of Bristol, Rhode Island, an American whaler, arrived from the neighbourhood of Madagascar, not far distant from New Zealand; her boats were engaged in pursuit of whales, and affecting to relate, when night came on, one boat was missing altogether. There was no trace whatever of this disastrous event: whether the boat had been dashed in pieces by a



whale, or towed under water when fastened to one by a harpoon, or had lost sight of the ship, and could not find her again before night overtook them—no one can give the least information whatever. The captain, fourth mate, carpenter, and three others, were in this boat when she left the 'Ganges.' The 'Ploughboy,' of Nantucket, and the 'Hansel,' Gibbs, of Fair Haven, with another American whaler, have also arrived—and the 'Bolina,' of London, merchant ship, from Cloudy Bay, in the South part of New Zealand.

17th. "Yesterday and to-day, employed in getting ready for sea. Having parted with considerable weight of iron goods out of the hold, and our general stock of stores and provisions being greatly lessened, I thought it needful to procure a quantity of stone, lest the vessel might be endangered by being too light in the water, and thus rendered unable to carry sail in a comfortable manner. James Busby, the British resident, very kindly supplied our wants, from the margin of his estate, which is washed by the sea. In the morning called upon Charles Baker, and afterwards took leave of James Busby, by whom we had been treated with much kindness and hospitality.

18th. "The vessel being ready at day-break this morning, the 'Henry Freeling' got under weigh and dropped down the bay opposite the station at Paihia, and anchored again. We landed in the forenoon on the north side—settled our accounts, and bade farewell to the parties as we went along. My address being copied fairly, revised, and corrected where needful; and various articles put together to remunerate the natives, for various services in boats, &c., we landed in the evening for the last time at Paihia, and delivered them with the address to the care of Charles Baker, at whose house we drank tea. As a reward of industry, and as an encouragement to persevere, we presented to a native farmer of promise, who goes by the name of industrious David, a spade, ship axe, drawing knife, small saw, and a bunch of gimblets. We also gave a Bible to a Sheffield woman, the wife of a blacksmith residing in the bay, and numerous articles of clothing to the native children. Two Dutch hoes and a spade for Charles Baker, with sundry drugs and glass bottles for James Stack were also landed. We called upon all the resident families, and saw those who had been forced from their stations to the southward by the war, before we returned on board. On leaving the shore it was quite calm, but before reaching the vessel a light land breeze sprung up. The night being moonlight we weighed and steered towards the entrance of the bay with a fine breeze in our favour. At half-past nine o'clock, Gilbert Mair, the Port-master, with whom we had had some considerable traffic, who had very kindly brought us off some milk, and accompanied us until clear of all danger, left us in his own boat, with a crew of natives, and I believe, sincerely desired for us a prosperous voyage. At midnight, we were clear of the



islands which form the entrance to the bay, and from which, it is probable, the appellation of the Bay of Islands was originally taken. Through the night steered N. W. by W. by compass, in order to keep well off the North Cape.

“ Though I may long have to mourn over these poor miserable natives of New Zealand, on account of the lamentable state of things by which they are surrounded, and bound down as with chains in the service of Satan, and the dupes of his agents who are mingled among them, of a lighter coloured skin, but in many instances, it is greatly to be feared, the very scum and offscouring of the nations which gave them birth, and not a few of these mine own countrymen—yet under all these unhappy circumstances, the New Zealanders are a noble race of men, and though far behind-hand in that gentleness and docility which characterize the swarthy multitudes who inhabit the more sultry climates in which the Georgian, Society, Hervey, and other Isles of the Pacific ocean are placed, certainly possess great energy and firmness of character. This though unhappily in their present, lost, and undone, and I may add, betrayed condition, is only devoted to the most horrid and barbarous purposes, for the destruction of their fellow-men; but if the day should ever come, when the benign principles of the everlasting Gospel take root and spread among them, soften their hearts, and prepare them for that wisdom from above, which is pure, and peaceable, and profitable in all things to direct their native zeal (now dreadfully misapplied) into the love of God, and love to man, they would then far outstrip those who have long since made a profession of the Christian religion, but who have only a ‘ name to live,’ in exalting and promoting the spiritual kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, in the heart of man, to the praise and glory of God, and the welfare of their own species. With this view of a deeply injured race of my fellow-creatures, constituting a part of the innumerable inheritance of the Lord Jesus, I leave their shores with a peaceful and easy mind—at the same time, comforted under a belief that the address to the missionary establishment will now circulate to every member, many of whom could not possibly have been present at a transitory interview, however regularly convened and appointed. On looking at this subject, I have thought that the conflict of mind I have lately had to pass through, might be the means graciously vouchsafed, to beget in me a willingness to prepare the address. My desire is, that by it, and through it, the great name may be exalted, and the kingdom of Christ Jesus in the heart better understood and believed in, than heretofore has been the case, in the minds of many. May the Lord on high prepare the ground, in which it may, as seed, be sown, and bless it with fertility to bring forth fruit that will lastingly remain, that He may be glorified thereby.

“ The following is a copy of a letter from the missionaries at Paihia.

*“ Church Missionary Society’s Station, Paihia, Bay of Islands,*

*“ New Zealand, 18th January, 1837.*

“ Reverend and dear Sir,

“ Before you bid adieu to New Zealand, we take this opportunity of expressing the pleasure, and we hope, the edification we have derived by your unexpected coming to this country.

“ We had heard of your benevolent mission to other islands of these seas, but we now have to record the higher gratification of having seen you and your affectionate son amongst us.

“ We regret, that circumstances of war and tumult have not made it desirable for you to visit the more extensive field of our labour, south of the Bay of Islands. But we do hope, that the places favoured by your Christian example and addresses, may have seen and heard to profit, and that ‘at the last day’ it may be found that your sojourn here has not been in vain.

“ One effect of your visit to New Zealand has been to remind us, that though ‘there are differences of administrations, it is the same spirit’ which actuates the whole of Christ’s mystical body, ‘the Church of the first-born, whose names are written in heaven.’ With gratitude, also, we have to acknowledge your liberal bestowment of school-books, tracts, clothing for natives, medicines, &c., which will remain behind you as a memorial of your Christian kindness.

“ The pleasure of our meeting together, is, alas! now embittered by the painfulness of separation;—but our high calling entitles us to the privilege of a friendship which is not interrupted by distance or time. We cannot, however, at your advanced age, and the immense distance which will ere long separate between us, but be solemnly reminded of the affecting words of the venerable Apostle to the elders of Ephesus, ‘And now I know that ye all among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more!’

“ It is our earnest prayer to God for you, that if consistent with his will, you may be spared to return to our beloved native land—and to the bosom of your family, to tell all your eyes have seen of ‘what God hath wrought among the Gentiles by the ministry of reconciliation.’

“ Pray for us that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified in New Zealand, and that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men.

“ Finally, Reverend and dear sir, we bid you farewell, and remain in the bonds of Christian friendship,

“ Yours, very affectionately,

“ CHARLES BAKER.

“ JAMES STACK.

“ WILLIAM COLENS.

“ WILLIAM THOMAS FAIRBURN.

“ P. S. A difference of location of several of our brethren, and the absence of some from home, will not allow of their signing their names, but we can confidently say, they fully agree with us in this expression of our sentiments.”

20th. "Yesterday, the weather fine and wind fair. In the evening, the island of New Zealand scarcely distinguishable from the deck. We are now steering a course for New South Wales, I trust, in the right line of things, to reach the port of Sidney, having nothing on my mind towards any other place. One whaling ship in sight this morning, under easy canvass, looking out for whales. Not having sat down yesterday, my Charles being a little sea-sick, or inclining towards it, we held our little meeting this forenoon, the forepart more lively than sometimes, but the latter, as regards myself, unusually heavy. At sun-down, three whaling vessels in company together. As night approached, a heavy swell from the north-east, and a still heavier from the southward, increased upon us after having fairly passed the three Kings of New Zealand, about fifty miles. The vessel lurched with such violence and suddenness, owing to these cross and heavy swells of the sea, that, about ten o'clock, P. M., the topmast was carried away. By midnight, the fragments of the mast, and the shattered rigging and sail were rescued and properly secured.

21st. "Strong breezes with a heavy rising sea still running crossly; the vessel laboured hard through the night and to-day, but did not ship any serious weight of water, though enough to search through the crevices into the cabin, and bed places, but the wind was fair all the day.

24th. "On first-day, the weather being too rough for us to admit much light into the cabin, and the heat being oppressive in the vessel below deck, our crew were not assembled as at other times. Fair wind and heavy sea through the day. Our captain ascertained that seventy miles had been lost in forty-eight hours, by an opposing current, to which cause the cross swell and agitated state of the sea might fairly be attributed. To-day, our people were employed substituting our flying jib-boom, for a topmast, which, as a jury mast, will help to drive us along, but, in point of strength, much inferior to the old top-mast, which came from England with us, and has stood ever since; happily no one was hurt when the accident of losing it occurred, which ought to be remembered with thankfulness of heart.

26th. "On third-day afternoon, the wind began to be scant and blew fresh in squalls, occasioning a cross and troubled sea, which, with the old easterly swell, gave us a very restless and uneasy night. Yesterday, though rough and tossing, we made some progress in a right direction: after dark, the wind became more moderate, and the swelling of the water materially subsided. To-day, the weather is more favourable with less wind; made but little headway. We sat down in the forenoon in much poverty and strippedness, and yet under a peaceful covering. My Charles complains to-day of much pain in his side, owing, I believe, to the great damp in the cabin, produced by our having been closely shut up, to prevent the sea from getting down in a wholesale manner,



but the water makes its way through so many places in the decks, as to make every article of clothing and bedding too damp for use: we have, however, no alternative, and hope, in a few days, again to see better times; at present Charles's health is evidently affected by surrounding difficulties, which it is not in our power to remove. A sight of New Holland, will, I trust, revive and animate us.

27th. "Gentle breezes and fair all night. At three o'clock, A. M., Lord Howe's Island was discovered upon the lee-bow, and at day-break, Ball's pyramid on the weather-bow. At ten o'clock, passed between them with breeze from N.N.E. Upon Lord Howe's Island, there are three Englishmen residing, who have women from New Zealand as wives. It appears that they have raised hogs, potatoes and cabbages, sufficient for the supply of fourteen whaling vessels in a year. We are, this day at noon, 400 miles from the shores of New Holland. Charles seems better this morning. One sail in sight to the N. W. In the afternoon, a steady breeze from the northward, which freshened gradually through the night.

28th. "Early this morning a strong wind from the N. N. W., which continued through the day, with a heavy sea ranging in several directions, owing to the different sets of currents. The heat of the atmosphere quite oppressive, and below deck almost insupportable. After midnight the lightning was extremely vivid all round us, with thunder at times awfully loud and near the vessel, the rain falling in torrents, and the wind flying about, first on one side, and then on the other. At five o'clock, A. M., the breeze became strong and steady from the S. S. E., which enabled us to make sail to the W. S. W.

29th. (*First-day.*) "A portion of the Scriptures was read to the crew, only three of whom attended. Between three and four o'clock, the sea very cross and high, but afterwards much more settled and leading fair with the wind; towards evening the water became suddenly smooth, compared with what it had previously been, from the current taking the course of the wind. At noon our latitude,  $32^{\circ} 43'$  south—the heads which form the entrance into Port Jackson, distant 125 miles, or thereabout. The air much cooler since the thunder, lightning and rain.

"The state of feeling, both as to mind and body, for the last two days, cannot be easily described; the latter, as if it had never known good; and yet the loss could not be felt, if it had never been known and possessed. It is, however, to myself a relieving proof or evidence that a spark of life still remains, for that which is dead cannot feel: but outward circumstances which affect the body, also bear upon the mind, though imperceptibly, and at the moment unthought of as having any share in the mental conflict. Below deck the water filters through upon us in many places: the deck above us drenched again and again by the breaking tops of the sea; the motion of the vessel so violent and inces-

sant, as to admit no rest to be taken either sitting or lying, and walking is altogether impracticable. Perhaps, the motto of 'Brighter hours will come;' is particularly appropriate in our case, and we may yet be permitted to realize the fact itself, and the language of David exultingly to be ours; 'God hath spoken in his holiness, I will rejoice.'

30th. "A fresh gale all night, and the moon rising about midnight, enabled us to run towards the land without fear. At daylight, several parts of the coast could be seen, from Port Stephen to the eastward. At eight o'clock, A. M., the light-house upon the South Head appeared. Strong breezes with considerable sea from the southward and eastward. Soon after getting sight of the Heads, which form the entrance into Sidney, a bark was seen standing into the offing, that had just come out of the harbour. Not knowing but that she was one of the homeward bound for England, and thinking this might possibly be an opportunity of letting our dear friends know of our return to New South Wales, from the isles of the Pacific, the 'Henry Freeling's' flag was hoisted immediately, but, on getting nearer to her, she was found to be a whaling vessel, by the number of boats which she carried.

"At nine o'clock, the signal for a pilot was made, and we were favoured to fetch into the entrance towards the port, but with very few fathoms to spare. At ten o'clock, took in the pilot and bore up for the harbour, and before two o'clock, were safely anchored in the cove. In the evening, moored close under the government domain, about thirty yards from the shore, by the side of the 'Jessie,' of Liverpool.

"Here we found several ships preparing to take in cargoes for London, and the 'Rattlesnake' and 'Victor' men-of-war. Our arrival was soon known in the neighbourhood. Abraham Davy was shortly on board, and our dear friends James Backhouse and George Washington Walker were not long before they reached us: our joy was mutual at seeing each other's faces again, and I trust that our hearts were filled with gratitude and thankfulness to Him who had sustained us through all, and brought it about for His great name's sake. It was afterwards ascertained, that a number of letters from England and home were lying in store for us. Accounts of the welfare of our beloved family at Shoosharry, beyond my most sanguine expectations, were received up to within seven months of the present date, and not having heard of them for nearly two years, they seemed now restored to us again, as a treasure enhanced in value an hundred fold indeed, but still far beyond the reach of grasping in full possession. Humbled under a sense of the Lord's everlasting love and faithfulness, my heart rejoiced before Him."

Our friend Daniel Wheeler, and his son, remained at Sidney, until the 30th of Seventh month, when they sailed for Hobart Town. Much public service did not devolve upon Daniel Wheeler whilst at Sidney; he regularly, when health permitted, attended the meetings for worship on first and fifth-days, kept up by a few individuals professing with Friends in that town, which were not unfrequently resorted to by others. Soon after their arrival at Sidney, agreeably with arrangements made on leaving England, they sold the "Henry Freeling," and discharged the ship's company, and had likewise to dispose of numerous surplus stores belonging to the ship; these engagements undertaken in an exhausted state of health occupied much time. It was whilst at this place also, that Daniel Wheeler received the deeply affecting intelligence of the death of his eldest son, William Wheeler, who had been appointed to succeed him in his extensive concerns in Russia. This valuable young man died at the Sand Rock Hotel, near Niton, on the Isle of Wight, on the 24th of Eleventh month, 1836, to which place he had resorted for a more genial climate—his illness was a consumption, which rapidly terminated his life. The intelligence of this event seems by the Journal of our friend, Daniel Wheeler, to have proven a keen stroke, but was borne with much Christian resignation. The life of William Wheeler had been marked by watchfulness and prayer; and a conscientious regard to the pointing of Divine wisdom in the discharge of his religious duties, as well as by an active, and diligent attention to his important concerns in business;—his end was eminently crowned with peace, and an humble and confiding trust in Redeeming mercy.

After a voyage of twelve days, they reached Hobart Town, where they rejoined our friends, James Backhouse and George W. Walker. Here again the ministerial labours of Daniel Wheeler, appear to have been pretty much confined to the meetings for divine worship, kept up in this town by persons professing with Friends, and regularly held on first and fifth-days. At this place they met a more numerous company than at Sidney. Shortly before leaving Hobart Town, our dear friend received intelligence of a further domestic affliction in the death of his youngest daughter, who died at Shoosharry, near Petersburg, on the 15th of Seventh month, 1837. In this bereavement also, he was consoled in the comforting intelligence, that through Divine mercy, she had made a triumphant end.

Daniel Wheeler and his son embarked on board the "Lloyds," bound for London, on the 9th of Twelfth month, 1837, and reached that port on the 1st of Fifth month, 1838—sailing by way of Cape Horn, and touching at the Island of Ascension.

---



The following are the closing extracts from his Journal,—“ After a voyage of four months and twenty days from Van Diemen’s Land, and the changes from heat to cold twice experienced during that time, my own health seemed scarcely to have been impaired; but from the weakly state of my dear Charles, whose constitution had been much shaken by a lengthened illness previous to our leaving Europe, he was less able to bear a total want of vegetables for many weeks, to which we had been exposed, and the small quantity of fresh water, and that of a quality scarcely wholesome, to which we had been subjected the latter part of the passage. With these disadvantages, which there is reason to believe had contributed to reduce his already diminished strength, he landed in a very feeble and languid condition, but I humbly trust, he is under the immediate and protecting care of the great and heavenly Physician who alone hath power to heal, and to bless every endeavour to restore.

“ I should not be satisfied to conclude this unconnected and imperfect narrative, without saying, how greatly I have been aided in the course of this religious engagement by the missionaries from different societies in Europe and North America, who very kindly acted as interpreters on my behalf to the native congregations upon the islands where my lot was cast, and opened their meeting-houses for our accommodation in the most brotherly manner; to whom, for this assistance and Christian kindness many ways exhibited, we feel gratefully and highly indebted.

“ I may also be allowed to add at the same time, that having been encouraged by my dear friends at home to accept the company of my son, Charles Wheeler, I have found him very useful and strengthening to me, during our long sojourn in foreign parts, in a variety of instances, and on many important occasions.

“ For the best welfare of the dear and interesting people, who inhabit those isles afar off, which, in the love of the Gospel, I have thus been drawn forth, and enabled to visit, a petition, however feeble, must ever dwell in my heart; and I would earnestly and affectionately crave the fervent aspirations of all my dear brethren and sisters, when it is well with them, on their behalf: while they unite with me in commemorating the mercy, loving-kindness and faithfulness of Him, who for His great name’s sake, and for his beloved Son’s sake, wrought the work; hath so marvellously sustained us through every season of trial and conflict, and delivered us out of every distress, that the thanksgiving of many may resound to his praise, to whom the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, belong for ever.”

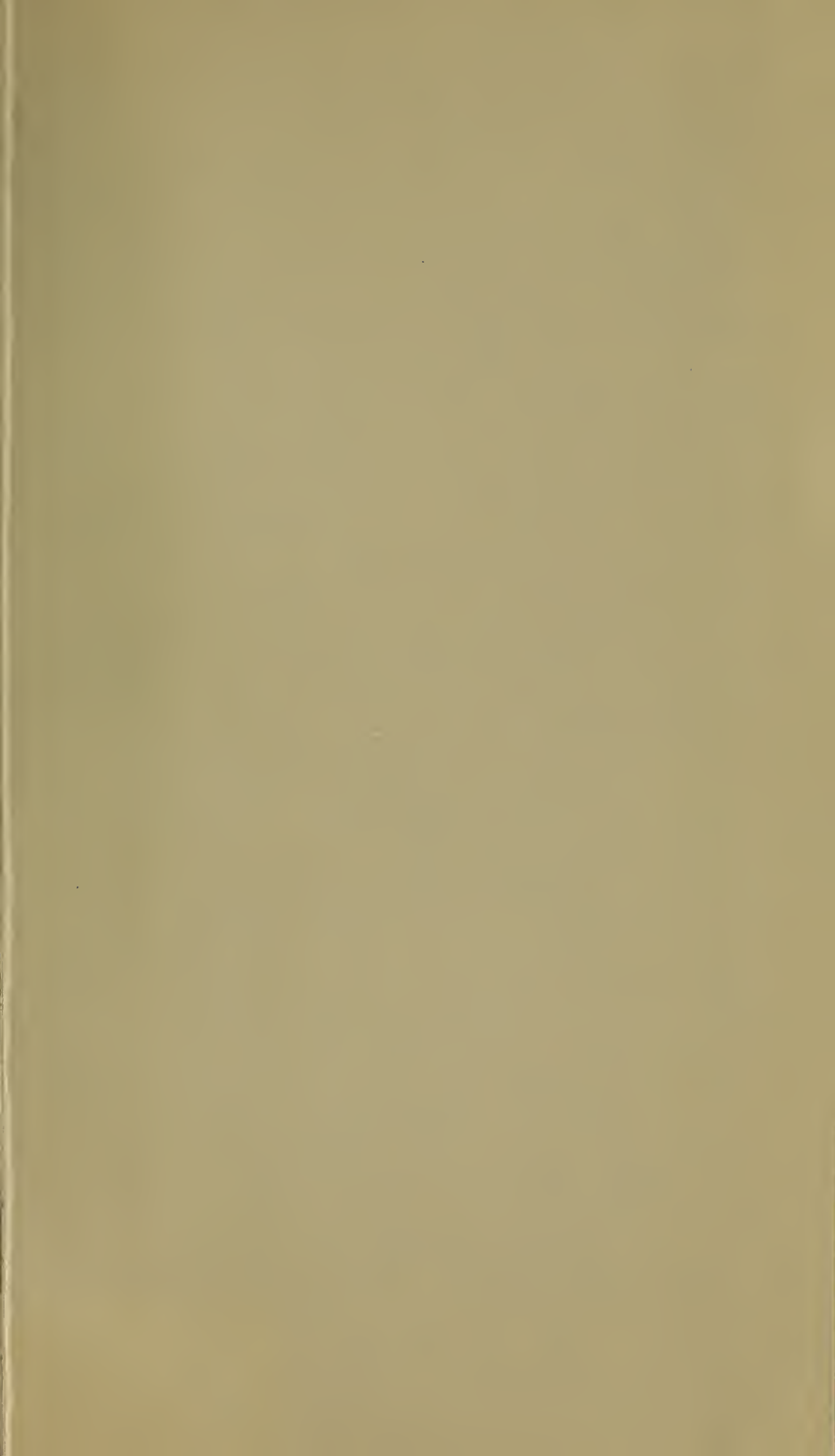
THE END.

79









Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: June 2003

**Preservation Technologies**

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION  
111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 16066  
(724) 779-2111





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 010 745 544 9

